



PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 25

Jing Wu Hen

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

Synopsis

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 2401: Incomprehensible Test

Lin Feng looked at the old ox and said, “Master, what is the last exam?”

“A test created by the old ox, it’s impossible to pass,” said the supreme cultivator next to Lin Feng.

“You’re just incompetent, so don’t blame the exam for your lack of skills. I did create all the tests myself; however, the rules of the last part of the exam have been determined by my master, I can’t change them. If you can’t pass the last part, then you can’t go inside the palace,” the old ox said to the supreme cultivators detachedly.

“Old friends, together?” asked the strong cultivator to the three other cultivators.

Their eyes glittered, but the old ox just grunted coldly. “I suggest you think carefully before violating the rules.”

“I don’t think you alone can fight against the four of us,” said the supreme cultivator.

Lin Feng’s forehead was covered with sweat. These supreme cultivators’ tempers were incredible. Since they couldn’t pass the exam, they wanted to attack the ox and go into the palace... Lin Feng was startled, but he could understand them. These people were peerless Saints, they were at the top of the cultivation world, and they had lived for a very long time. They wanted to become gods, and now an old ox was preventing them from passing so they couldn’t complete the exam. Of course they lost patience!

“Try and you’ll see,” said the old ox calmly. He had everything under control, he was extremely composed. The supreme cultivators could only wonder how strong the ox was. He had traveled with the god, after all. They really wanted to know how strong he was...

“Little boy, come here, see if you can pass the exam. If you do, it’ll piss them off. But I don’t think you can pass,” said the old, ox glancing at Lin Feng.

“Is it really possible to pass the exam, or not?” asked a supreme cultivator next to Lin Feng. Lin Feng was even more curious.

“So many years have passed and nobody has ever passed the exam,” sighed the old ox. He felt hopeless. He couldn’t wait to see someone pass the exam and enter the palace, either.

Since the ancient times, many people had come here, but nobody had passed the exam.

“I’ll try, Master,” said Lin Feng, “I’m not as strong as those supreme cultivators though, so the difficulty of the exam probably depends on the cultivator’s strength, right?”

“You’re wrong. The reason why everybody arrives here in the end is that the last part of the exam doesn’t depend on strength. The end of the exam is the same for everybody.”

“Alright,” said Lin Feng nodding.

“Sit down!”

Lin Feng sat down.

“From now, you’re not allowed to talk. You’re not allowed to move. If you talk or move, you fail,” said the old ox. Lin Feng’s face stiffened. He couldn’t talk or move? How was he supposed to pass the exam?

The old ox also stopped talking, he was just standing there facing Lin Feng and looking at him. Lin Feng remained silent, too.

One hour passed, two hours passed... Lin Feng frowned. The old ox was still facing him.

“That’s the test?” Lin Feng realized something. The test was so strange, though, he could neither talk nor move?

However, even though Lin Feng was perplexed, he remained

determined. One day, two days... the old ox didn't move either, he didn't even blink. Lin Feng was losing patience, though.

“How boring. So boring!” The four supreme cultivators were speechless, they had also taken the exam in the past. Like Lin Feng, they couldn't talk or move, but in the end they had failed.

“Old woodcutter, the four of us are very patient, we waited for a year, we didn't move, we said nothing, and in the end we failed. What kind of exam is that?” said the Earth area's supreme cultivator, looking at the man on the right, who looked like a woodcutter.

He shook his head and said, “I'm too stupid. I didn't understand it, either.”

“The exam is extremely annoying. Little boy, you're determined too, I think that old ox is making fun of us.”

Lin Feng ignored them, and remained motionless. This place was extraordinary, a godly place, Lin Feng didn't think the ox would be making fun of them. The exam had to be real. They just had to understand something.

Time passed. A month passed. The four supreme cultivators looked at him in a strange way.

“How calm. That little boy has already been more patient than you the first time,” said the Earth area's supreme cultivator to a man in black clothes. He was wearing a black robe, his face pale as a corpse. He looked calm and aloof.

“You did about as good as me the first time,” replied that cultivator indifferently.

“Let's see how long that little boy will wait, he's funny,” one of them smiled. He sat down and looked at Lin Feng.

“Old buddy, it's funny when you watch someone do it.”

The four supreme cultivators were chatting, Lin Feng heard

them. He finally smiled wryly and said, “Master, let’s say I lost this time. But could you tell me more about the exam? If I just sit, remain motionless and remain silent, I...” he trailed off.

He didn’t know what to say. He was speechless. That was the exam?

“You have to understand yourself, you can sit the exam again anytime, one person, or several at the same time, anything works,” replied the old ox indifferently.

Lin Feng smiled wryly and stood up. He walked over to the four supreme cultivators and said, “Do you have any ideas?”

“Nothing at all,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator, shaking his head.

“Don’t look at me, I don’t understand this exam,” said another one, shaking his head. They just stood there.

“That old woodcutter is more patient than me. I remember hundreds of thousands of years ago, I was fishing in Tian Mu Mountain, I fished for a hundred years, but it wasn’t as boring as here,” said the old woodcutter, who was also a fisherman. He didn’t understand the exam at all.

“If it were a battle, it’d be great, but this exam is boring,” said another one. Apart from Lin Feng, only the four supreme cultivators were there. They had probably broken through during a different part of the exam. They were now supreme cultivators who had sat different exams.

“We should fight him,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator. He was bored and talked a lot. Lin Feng didn’t imagine a supreme cultivator like that. They looked absolutely ordinary, were calm and polite, not arrogant at all. Only people who had gone through all this in life could be like that.

“Go and fight him. I will support you,” said another one to the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator.

“Piss off!” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator.

“We should take the exam together again and see who the most patient one is,” said the woodcutter.

“Good. Maybe we’ll be even more patient. I’m sure I can be more patient than him,” said another one, looking at the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator.

“Is that so? Let’s try then.” The four supreme cultivators then sat down cross-legged in front of the old ox, the old ox split apart into five cultivators, each one of them sitting down in front of the five.

“Small trick,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator, twitching his mouth.

I wonder what kind of original strengths these four supreme cultivators know, thought Lin Feng. Peerless Saints understood several sorts of original strengths, and there were special combinations.

“Start,” said the old ox indifferently. They couldn’t move and couldn’t talk.

——

Time passed. Those people were incredible. The other four cultivators had lived for over five hundred thousand years, and perceived time differently. The problem was that they were bored.

One year passed and Lin Feng heard someone talk to him telepathically, “Little boy, you’re probably bored to death, you should stop.”

“Eh...” Lin Feng was surprised, as the old ox in front of the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator moved and said, “You failed.”

“I didn’t say anything, I didn’t even move,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator, extremely annoyed.

“Hmph!” the old ox grunted coldly and glanced at Lin Feng. “You just talked to him!”

The Earth Area's supreme cultivator was stunned. He thought, No wonder he was a god's beast, he even knows what I say when I use telepathy... I wonder what the exam is about. How to pass?

He was convinced the exam was real, but he didn't want to fail, he wanted to pass. But he understood nothing at all. How humiliating! He kept saying the old ox was making fun of him because he felt ashamed.

That boring exam continued for ten years, Lin Feng and the others didn't understand anything, and Lin Feng had already spent nine years in that world before the beginning of the last exam, so he had been in there for nineteen years already. During those nineteen years, the Continent of the Nine Clouds had already started changing, and it had started changing because of Lin Feng. The Fire Shrine and the Fortune Shrine had started fighting. The whole Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was affected, and the Continent of the Nine Clouds was also affected.

Chapter 2402: Understanding

In the Fire Shrine...

Deep inside a tower, someone was seated cross-legged and meditating as if the outside world had nothing to do with them.

At that moment, a ray of light entered the tower, and a woman came in. She looked elegant and noble, and looked at Lin Feng coldly as she said, “When will your real body come out of the forbidden territory?”

“I have no idea,” replied Lin Feng’s clone indifferently. His eyes were closed.

“You don’t know or your real body actually died?” said the woman icily, staring at Lin Feng. “The situation is chaotic in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell went chaotic, the Godly Grave is closed, you probably died,” said the woman coldly.

“If my real body dies, I will definitely kill Qiong Yu. So don’t hope I die,” said Lin Feng, opening his eyes and looking back at the woman coldly.

She looked at him and remained silent. Then, she laughed and said, “Lin Feng, you don’t know how to differentiate good from bad. Because of you, two Shrines started fighting. The situation in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds has become chaotic. The Continent of the Nine Clouds was affected, too, and you don’t seem to care.

“You think I don’t know much about you? You started rising in the Vast Celestial Ancient City, then you went to the Holy City and you joined Champion University. Then, you created Tiantai. You have two teachers, two emperors of the Huang Qi layer: Mu Chen and Emperor Yu. You have many friends, including Lang Ye, Jun Mo Xi, Hou Qing Lin, and so on, they’re quite talented.”

When Lin Feng heard her, he was furious, fury invaded his eyes.

“Hmph! You’re angry! You’re a Half-Saint, even if you can defeat my son with a Saint’s Weapon, you think you’re qualified to be angry in front of me? I came to tell you that I can easily crush those people,” said the woman icily. She threatened him, then rolled up her sleeves and left.

“If the Fire Shrine does anything to them, I will torture Qiong Yu, he will die in atrocious conditions,” said Lin Feng icily.

“If you do anything to my son, you cannot imagine what I will do to your close ones,” replied the woman, before she disappeared.

Lin Feng was furious. Nineteen years had passed, and he was still in the starry world. So many things had changed during those nineteen years in the outside world. Even though his clone was stuck inside, they kept his clone until he released Qiong Yu. Even though he was imprisoned, he knew some things about the outside world.

The battles between the Fire Shrine and the Fortune Shrine were fierce and violent. Surprisingly, the Ice and Snow Shrine had also decided to get involved, and helped the Fire Shrine. The other Shrines watched, benefiting from those Shrines’ disputes. Everybody was surprised that the Ice and Snow Shrine had gotten involved. After they did, the Dazzling Gold Shrine decided to seize an opportunity to get involved too, and so the atmosphere in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds became chaotic.

The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was in an uproar. The lower world, the Continent of the Nine Clouds, was also affected. The battles brought people misery and suffering. Many strong cultivators had died. Mara-Deva was even surrounded by some cultivators, but he escaped with injuries.

Three Shrines surrounded the Fortune Shrine, the balance of power was changing. When the situation looked really bad for the

Fortune Shrine, the Buddha Shrine got involved. More and more Shrines joined hands with the Fortune Shrine. Just like in the ancient days, the situation was in flux.

A rumor spread in the Fortune Shrine and outside, that millions of small worlds had been destroyed. The situation had rarely been like that in the world, many groups vying for supremacy.

The situation was getting wilder and worse, like the ancient times. Most groups were in danger now...

Lin Feng was in the Godly Grave. He was focused. He had to pass the last exam.

Among the five cultivators, nobody had said anything for six years, nobody moved, they were all focused. But nothing happened. They understood nothing. How to pass the exam?

“Time is not very important to me but I hate wasting time,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator, opening his eyes and looking at the old ox.

“You failed again,” said the old ox indifferently, as if it were normal for the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator to fail.

“We’ve been through so much in life. Thirty years, fifty years, and we can’t pass?!” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator coldly.

“Thirty years, fifty years?” the old ox shook his head, “One more year and this place will disappear. You won’t be able to try again. The next time might be in more than a hundred thousand years, or even longer. Then I will come back and everything will start again, until someone finally passes the exam and enters the palace behind me.”

“Last year?” The Earth Area’s supreme cultivator looked astonished. He had the impression he had wasted his time.

“Dear friends, did you hear that? It’s the last year, are we going to be stuck in here without being able to leave?” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator. He was a supreme cultivator, a peerless Saint. There weren’t that many peerless Saints in the Godly Grave. Even if he could kill all the peerless Saints in the Godly Grave, there weren’t enough peerless Saints to kill to get enough points to leave. How horrible! He shouldn’t have come in at all. How horrible, this place wasn’t good for peerless Saints.

Their only chance was to pass the old ox’s exam.

“One more year? Staying here like that for one more year won’t change anything,” said another supreme cultivator. He gave up, too. They felt so sad, they had the impression they were going to be stuck in there forever. It was a great tragedy for a saint.

That supreme cultivator sighed.

“Don’t sigh. We made it here, not like the five others who were teleported away. And apart from this little boy and us, nobody else made it here, that’s not bad already,” said the old woodcutter.

“Old woodcutter, imagine that in one year, we’ll be stuck here for a very, very long time. I want to see my disciples, descendants... maybe some of them have become Saints,” said one of the supreme cultivators.

“So what? We’re alone in life, especially at our cultivation levels, we live much longer than other people.”

“Hmph! You’re ignorant like a frog in a well,” said the old ox. He grunted icily, “You four haven’t been here for as long as me, you think I don’t want to find someone who will be able to go into the palace behind me? You think I like being here alone? I feel lonely too!”

The four supreme cultivators were surprised that old ox was alone.

“Why don’t you make the exam easier? Why don’t you give us

hints?” asked the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator.

“My master created the exam, I can’t change the rules, even if I have to stay here forever,” said the old ox calmly.

Lin Feng shivered, as if something had happened.

Why did they have to remain motionless and silent?

Lonely, lonely for a very long time, forever...

Forever, immortal!

Suddenly, Lin Feng opened his eyes. He looked at the ox in front of him, who was motionless too. They could stay that way one year, two years, or forever...

“I understand, immortality,” said Lin Feng. Then, he released intent which filled the air, and the old ox’s eyes twinkled. Then, his eyes opened wide.

“Little boy, you failed. You lost patience and you talked. You understood nothing,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator.

“No...” said Lin Feng, shaking his head. He smiled and said, “Master, I understand.”

“Eh?” The Earth Area’s supreme cultivator was astonished. “You really understood?”

Lin Feng nodded.

The five oxen merged into one again. He looked at Lin Feng nervously, “You understood?”

“Yes, it’s immortality!”

Lin Feng’s hand streaked across the sky, he drew a bird in the sky, it looked extremely lifelike.

“Life!” said Lin Feng. The bird started moving. It was very weak, but it existed.

“It didn’t disappear?” The supreme cultivators were stunned as they stared at the bird; they weren’t able to do what Lin Feng had

done.

“Haha, finally, I’m done waiting!” The old ox looked excited and was staring at Lin Feng.

“He guessed right?” The Earth Area’s supreme cultivator’s heart was pounding. That little boy had guessed right?

“He didn’t guess, he understood,” said the old ox. “You don’t understand.”

“Eh...” A supreme cultivator, a peerless Saint, didn’t understand?

“Good little boy, he surprisingly understood,” said the woodcutter. He was stupefied, “I thought of it, but I didn’t understand. I’m too old, maybe.”

“Maybe I was just lucky,” said Lin Feng smiling.

“You will always remain peerless Saints if you can’t understand,” said the old ox indifferently.

“What?” An old supreme cultivator looked at him.

“That’s all I have to say,” said the old ox. Then, he looked at Lin Feng, “Don’t be too satisfied, you already have immortality, but it won’t bring you anything in terms of strength.”

“I understand, Master,” Lin Feng nodded. Understanding something was incredible, it was so strange, so mysterious!

Chapter 2403: New Era in the Continent of the Nine Clouds

“Immortality,” the old woodcutter whispered, “We want to become gods, and gods can create world which are immortal. Since we can’t understand what immortality is, we will never become gods, is that what you meant, old ox?”

The other three supreme cultivators were astonished. They were all incredible, peerless Saints, and extremely talented. They all stared at the old ox.

“I’ve already told you. I won’t repeat myself,” replied the old ox.

“Brother Ox, I offended you in the past, but thank you for your teachings,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator, smiling at the old ox.

The old ox glanced at him indifferently, not surprised. Then, he turned to Lin Feng.

“I never thought he’d understand, and we wouldn’t,” sighed the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator, shaking his head. He said to Lin Feng, “Little boy, what’s your name?”

“Lin Feng, Master,” said Lin Feng respectfully. His real face reappeared.

“Haha, awesome, I knew you were using an incredible technique to hide your real face, but you probably have your reasons, so I didn’t ask,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator.

Lin Feng was surprised, “How did you know, Master?”

“Even if you change your face, nothing can hide ice-cold eyes,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator with a smile. “But you’re honest, and you showed us your real face now. You have incredible comprehensive abilities, we should be friends.”

“How could I refuse?” Lin Feng smiled. These people were

supreme cultivators!

“Don’t say Master anymore, call me Ordinary, and you know the three others: Sa Leng, Old Ghost, and Woodcutter. You’re much, much younger than us, so consider us older brothers,” said the Earth Area’s supreme cultivator. When smiling naturally, he looked extraordinary.

“Brother Ordinary,” Lin Feng smiled. He liked to adhere strictly to formalities, too.

“By the way, Lin Feng, how long have you been practicing cultivation?” asked Old Ghost.

“Less than a hundred years,” Lin Feng replied with a grin. The supreme cultivators were astonished, and gasped with amazement. Lin Feng was already a low-level Saint, how impressive! He really was an incredible genius!

“The younger generations will surpass us in time,” Woodcutter sighed. “I’ve never heard of such a terrifying cultivator.”

“Master, there are two cultivators in here whose cultivation speed was faster than mine,” said Lin Feng. The cultivators were stupefied. One was already incredible, but several was even more unbelievable.

“We’ve been stuck inside for so long, the world changes,” said Old Ghost. The others sighed.

“There are new geniuses all the time. Everything changes, of course. When there are many strong cultivators in the world, everything becomes chaotic,” whispered Woodcutter.

“You’re right, the outside world has already become chaotic,” said the old ox indifferently. Lin Feng was startled. These people were really strong, they knew all the details, was something terrible really going to happen in the Continent of the Nine Clouds?

“Lin Feng has been here for twenty years and has passed all the

exams. He's very lucky. From now on, the Starlit Area will never return," said the old ox indifferently. Lin Feng was stunned: the Starlit Area of the Godly Grave was going to disappear forever?

Many years had passed, and the Starlit Area had always existed in the Godly Grave. Was it truly going to disappear forever? It was one of the nine areas, wasn't that place a god's grave?

"Lin Feng, go in," the old ox told Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked at the palace; what was he going to find inside?

The supreme cultivators were excited for Lin Feng, but unfortunately, they had failed so they couldn't follow him.

"Brother Ox, can't you show us a little bit?" asked the Earth Area's supreme cultivator with a smile.

"Impossible," said the old ox firmly.

Lin Feng looked at them and said, "I'm off, brothers."

"Go. The old ox is not nice to us," said Ordinary, somewhat annoyed.

Lin Feng walked towards the palace. Suddenly, stars emerged and turned into an ancient path. The ancient path was brilliant and shone over everybody.

"Everyone, you can take that path to leave the Godly Grave. If you don't leave, you'll be teleported back to the place where you were in the Godly Grave. You have three days. Think carefully," said a voice in the sky. Everybody was astonished: we can leave this place?

I'm not done with the exam, how could there only be three days left?, thought someone who was taking the exam in the distance.

"Hahaha, finally, we'll be able to leave!" Someone burst into frantic laughter. Finally, they were going to be able to leave!

"I'm finally going to leave the Godly Grave in which I've spent so much time." Someone started walking on the starry path, and

disappeared.

Everybody could see the path. Some people frowned and looked at the starry path, “I came from there, I recognize that road.”

They quickly left

It was the first time in a hundred thousand years that people had seen a path to leave. There were different roads, actually, leading to different worlds.

The four supreme cultivators had mixed feelings.

“We’re all going to leave this time,” said Ordinary indifferently. They had been stuck in the Godly Grave for such a long time, and now they were finally going to leave. However, they felt a bit sad to leave too.

“Now we can all leave, even if we didn’t have enough points. People who are not Saints usually want to leave as soon as they’re in the Godly Grave. When Saints come, they want to take the exam, but now everybody is probably going to leave.”

“Of course. And after having spent such a long time in the Godly Grave, seeing the outside world must be incredible, it will be incredible outside,” said Ordinary with a grin.

“Ordinary, you and me, as well as Old Ghost all come from the Continent of the Nine Clouds, where all twelve Shrines are, right?” asked Woodcutter. One of the roads seemed familiar, it was the one which led to the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“Yes, Sa Leng comes from somewhere else,” said Old Ghost nodding. They all looked at Sa Leng.

“The nine of us have fought a lot in this world, but we had no serious battles. Do you remember what we guessed?” Sa Leng asked the crowd, “I think we were right.”

“Yes, gods create worlds. They haven’t created only one world, every god must have their own world. The worlds are not

connected, they're independent, just like small and great worlds. I think that there must be ways to travel between them, but that we just don't know about them, or where the passages are," said Woodcutter.

"The Continent of the Nine Clouds is the most complete world and the vastest. Maybe it's the main world. I'll come to the Continent of the Nine Clouds to see this time," said Sa Leng.

The other cultivators were surprised and asked, "You want to come with us to the Continent of the Nine Clouds?"

"Yes," replied Sa Leng.

"Haha, awesome, we won't be lonely with you. So many years have passed, nobody must remember us in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Let's go," said Ordinary, flying up.

"Let's go." The cultivators rose up in the air, one after another.

"Old friends, how come you're not waiting for us?" asked someone, as six more people appeared.

"Are you going to the Continent of the Nine Clouds?" asked Ordinary. He was surprised.

"Yes, the Continent of the Nine Clouds."

"Hahaha, if we all go, it's going to be the beginning of a new great era in the Continent of the Nine Clouds!" said Ordinary, laughing loudly. Then, they all started walking on the path which led to the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and disappeared.

Everybody had heard them clearly. Many people from other worlds were stupefied, was the Continent of the Nine Clouds really the main world? Many people wanted to go and explore the Continent of the Nine Clouds now.

At their cultivation level, going back to their own world was pointless, they wanted to explore!

Chapter 2404: Celestial Dao Destiny Technique

Lin Feng entered the starry palace, but he could still see everything which was happening outside. He could see all the stars.

The old ox entered the palace too, and was standing next to Lin Feng.

“Master, those roads lead to different worlds, right?” said Lin Feng. He realized that the Continent of the Nine Clouds wasn’t the only great world.

“Yes, do you remember the Giant Gods Clan?” asked the old ox.

“Of course, Ju Shen Yan must be stuck at the previous exam,” said Lin Feng. “Master, why did you suddenly talk about the Giant Gods Clan?”

“My master went to many small worlds, and he also created some great worlds. The members of the Giant Gods Clan really are my master’s descendants. Of course, he doesn’t have only one bloodline. But the Giant Gods Clan evolved quite nicely. Ju Shen Kui Shan is extremely strong, for example,” replied the old ox.

“So what is the Continent of the Nine Clouds’ position in comparison with all the other worlds?” asked Lin Feng. Who had created the Continent of the Nine Clouds?

“My master created the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” said the old ox indifferently, “Go. For someone who passed all the exams within twenty years, you look indifferent and even talk about the outside world. You know those four supreme cultivators would have done anything to come here. They even tried to attack me to come here.”

Lin Feng was astonished, “They didn’t try anything like that, did they?”

“You’re too naive!” said the old ox indifferently, “You think peerless Saints would respect rules? At their cultivation level, they are ready to do anything to do what they want. They tried a few times, but they failed over and over again. So they gave up.”

Lin Feng was stupefied. He didn’t think they had tried to attack. He hadn’t seen it because he was too weak in comparison to them.

But as the old ox had said, peerless Saints were stubborn.

“Regarding what they told you, they said they wanted to be friends with you, don’t be too naive either. Your friend today could be your enemy tomorrow. If you hadn’t passed all the exams, you think they would have wanted to be friends with you? You passed all the exams within twenty years and they know what it implies. Their friends, some other supreme cultivators, didn’t even manage to reach the last exam, so don’t think that what you did wasn’t incredible,” said the ox to Lin Feng.

“I understand.” Lin Feng laughed. Even though he was much younger than those supreme cultivators, he had seen a lot in life. Peerless Saints weren’t friends with anyone, peerless Saints chose their friends depending on what they had to offer, and they also had to find someone strong enough to be friends with them. Lin Feng passed all the exams, so they acknowledged him. Lin Feng didn’t think it was strange. He didn’t think what he hadn’t done was incredible, either. He just felt indifferent.

Lin Feng continued walking through the palace. He saw a praying mat, in front of it was a statue. The statue didn’t depict someone incredibly aggressive, it just looked prosaic.

“Lin Feng, sit down. My master will manifest himself,” said the old ox to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded and sat down cross-legged. He looked at the statue, and a beam of light shone down on Lin Feng. A strange strength surrounded him.

A god, a supreme, a paramount, a most lofty being, thought Lin Feng. He was a bit nervous. The statue glowed brightly, and suddenly, life strength appeared around it.

“Master,” said the old, ox trembling.

“Little Ox, you finally found an heir for me,” said the statue. The old ox was trembling, his eyes wide. They became wet with tears.

“Master, how many years, how long has it been since we have seen each other? I missed you,” said the old ox, crying now. He had now become peerless, but he would never forget the old times when he was weak and his master used to play with him. His master leaned against him on the grass and took naps.

Lin Feng’s mouth twitched. If that terrifying old ox was “Little Ox”, what was he? Tiny?

“I know you’re sad, but we were doomed to be separated. Don’t be sad, since you found an heir for me, teach him a lot,” said the silhouetted figure. He looked at Lin Feng on the praying mat and smiled.

“I don’t know what your cultivation level is, I don’t know how talented you are, but since you made it here, it proves many things, and that’s enough. You must already be terrifyingly strong. I hope you’re not too strong, so that you can get rid of your previous abilities, so that you can use my strength. It would be perfect. But I won’t force you, either. After all, when you’re a Saint, you have even more aspirations than when you’re not.”

The figure smiled. Lin Feng had doubts. Maybe it wasn’t real, maybe that it was just a kind of hologram; otherwise, how wouldn’t he be able to tell what his cultivation level was?

Maybe the praying mat activated it, thought Lin Feng.

“The Star Temple is also the Star World. It’s my world. There are 100,008 stars here. In the palace, there are many Saint’s techniques, weapons, and so forth. They’re all yours. You can have

a look at the techniques; some of them don't require a specific type of original strength, which is better because it's always better to use a technique with your own original strength.

“Regarding Saint's Weapons, I don't want you to rely on them too much, but you can use some of them to study Celestial Dao and all sorts of strength. Little Ox will tell you more about them, then you can study them on your own,” said the figure to Lin Feng. “You can also study other abilities if you wish, but there's one kind of strength you must pass on. I hope that someday you'll master it: Celestial Dao Fortune.”

“Celestial Dao Fortune Technique.” Lin Feng's heart twitched. That sounded amazing; was it similar to the Fortune Shrine's Great Destiny Technique? Besides, this god was a star cultivator, he represented the Starlit Area, and the Fortune Shrine used to be the Starlit Sky Shrine in the past. What kind of relationship did this god have with the Fortune Shrine?

Was this god the creator of the Fortune Shrine?

Dazzling lights illuminated the atmosphere and turned into a beautiful star-studded sky.

“Master!” The ox trembled, taking a few steps forwards. So many years had passed; he hadn't seen his master for such a long time, and now he had the opportunity to see him again. When would he see him again?

“Little Ox, don't be sad. Remember to be a good teacher to him. If he agrees to study my abilities, teach him. If he doesn't, don't force him,” said a dignified and majestic voice.

The old ox was surprised and nodded, “I understand, Master.”

Millions of stars moved towards Lin Feng's head and penetrated into his brain. Saint's techniques could only be taught directly, studying them from books wasn't as efficient, clear, or precise. Gods' abilities couldn't be studied from books at all, they could

only be transmitted directly!

Lin Feng had the impression his brain was going to explode. His mind didn't have enough space for all that knowledge. Thunder began to roll around him. The Celestial Dao Destiny Technique was terrifying.

Lin Feng grit his teeth. However, it was so powerful, he lost consciousness. At the same time, the billions of stars of the star world condensed and moved towards him. They surrounded him, bathing him in starlight.

The old ox watched Lin Feng's figure disappear, then sighed and whispered, "Little boy, if you aren't able to travel through the Continent of the Nine Clouds unhindered, how will you honor my Master's transmissions?"

Chapter 2405: Treasure House

Lin Feng was sleeping. However, he also practiced cultivation while sleeping.

In his dream, there were billions of stars he could communicate with. They illuminated him and a strange strength surrounded him. He didn't know what kind of strength it was.

“Celestial Dao Fortune Technique.” Lin Feng sensed the power of the stars. He could easily study the Saint's techniques. He couldn't bring them to the highest level, but it was still great, just like the Ancient Holy Technique back in the days. But this time, Lin Feng had the impression the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique was incredible and mysterious. It was also very complex, and he found it difficult to learn. It also made him understand that it was extremely powerful.

There was less and less spiritual energy in the star-studded sky. The crowd gradually left that place. Most people went to the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Therefore, many strong cultivators suddenly started appearing in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The majority of them were cultivators of the Sheng Di Layer, and were really strong. They went to all sorts of places in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. They couldn't go to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Of course, there were Saints, too. Some of them had been in the Godly Grave for a very, very long time.

Many strong groups were destroyed, some others appeared and started rising.

In the tower of the Fire Shrine, Lin Feng's clone was still

imprisoned. The woman came back and looked at Lin Feng sinisterly.

“The Godly Grave is open now. Many strong cultivators have come out. From what I know, anyone can leave now. Where is your real body?” the woman asked Lin Feng icily. Why hadn’t Lin Feng come out yet? He still had her son, Qiong Yu!

Lin Feng’s clone slowly opened his eyes, and smiled at the woman indifferently. “I’m not in a rush even though I’m stuck here, why are you worried?”

The woman was surprised, and said icily, “Don’t forget what I told you last time.”

“Don’t forget Qiong Yu, either. His life is still in my hands,” replied Lin Feng evenly.

“I’ll give you three more years to bring Qiong Yu back, and I’ll release your clone. After that, I won’t be patient anymore,” said the woman as she left.

Lin Feng was angry. She was threatening him again!

“The world is now chaotic. The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds is in chaos, but the lower world is too,” said the woman and then she disappeared from Lin Feng’s field of vision.

“Is it chaotic already?” whispered Lin Feng. The Continent of the Nine Clouds was becoming more and more unstable.

“Real body, when will you wake up?”

Lin Feng’s clone gazed into the distance. His real body was still studying the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique, it was very difficult to comprehend.

——

Time never stopped to wait for anyone, and Lin Feng couldn’t make time stop, either. Time passed quickly, another seven years went by. On that day, Lin Feng’s real body finally stopped

practicing cultivation. He opened his eyes.

He realized he was still on the praying mat. However, he wasn't in the Star Temple, he was in a vast and desolate area, out in the wild. He raised his head and looked at the sky. "Where am I?"

"I took you out of the Godly Grave. We're in the lower world, in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Godly Grave hasn't changed much, the Starlit Area is now missing, that's all," a voice said to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was startled and looked at the praying mat, "That's..."

Lin Feng disappeared into the praying mat. He arrived in the Star Temple. He was still on the praying mat, the old ox was there.

"That praying mat is the Star World?" said Lin Feng.

"Yes, my master modified it for you. He modified the whole world. You didn't sense it?" asked the old ox. Lin Feng was thoughtful. As expected, he could sense that many things had appeared in his mind. He disappeared from there and appeared where he had taken the exam. The nine beasts were still stuck there.

The old ox also appeared at Lin Feng's side. Lin Feng didn't know how he could do that.

The Star World's master helped me modify the whole Star World, so I can move around freely, surprisingly, the old ox even follows me, thought Lin Feng. He was surprised. The beasts there looked at Lin Feng, and their eyes glittered.

"Saint Ox, that little boy is the one who passed the exam?" asked the beast who Lin Feng had attacked with his Saint's Weapon, his eyes icy.

"You should call him Master," said the Ox firmly. The beasts were stunned. That despicable little boy was the one who had passed their master's exam back then?!

How lucky. He's the Master's heir!, thought that beast. He was jealous. He knew that their Master's world was a powerful world. Obtaining it was his dream, but now Lin Feng had it.

"Eh?" Lin Feng looked at him, he could sense that that beast wasn't happy. It was a strange sensation because his perceptions seemed more real.

That's the power of the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique?, thought Lin Feng suddenly. It was as if he could see people's luck, their destiny. It was a very strange feeling.

Lin Feng didn't do anything to the beast. Even though he now controlled that world, he didn't need to be petty. Lin Feng disappeared again, this time, he saw the nine other beasts. Their Qi was even more powerful.

"High-level Bestial Saints, nine of them." Lin Feng was impressed; those nine beasts were mighty. There were peerless bestial Saints, too?

Lin Feng disappeared again, this time, he saw three figures, with human forms. There was a mountain in a constellation, the three people were at the top of it, meditating. When Lin Feng arrived, they looked at him.

One of them was surprised. A terrifying black vortex appeared in his eyes. Lin Feng had the impression he could drown in those eyes.

What a terrifying gaze!, thought Lin Feng, closing his eyes. The beast also closed his eyes again.

"You," said the ox, landing next to Lin Feng.

"What?" said You indifferently. His eyes were still closed.

"This is our Master's heir, Lin Feng," the Ox said to the three people, but those three people ignored him.

"When he's as strong as our Master, he can come back and we'll

call him Master,” said You indifferently. He looked calm and composed.

The old ox said to Lin Feng telepathically, “Lin Feng, those three beasts are peerless Saints. They’re proud. They despise me, too. If you’re strong enough someday, they’ll submit and acknowledge allegiance to you.”

“I understand,” he replied. Even the nine high-level Saints had ignored him. Even though he was their Master’s heir, strength was still the most important thing.

“Let’s leave,” said Lin Feng. He quickly appeared in front of the Star Temple.

“This place is where our Master used to practiced cultivation. There are all sorts of Celestial Dao inside. You can study some sorts of strength more easily inside. If you want to study our Master’s original strength, star strength, I’ll help you,” the old Ox said to him. He could easily follow Lin Feng anywhere.

“Alright, there are also Saint’s Weapons and Saint’s techniques. In the outside world, people would go insane because of those things,” whispered Lin Feng. They were in the star world, it was a gigantic world filled with treasures. The god had left many things here. How daunting...

Even if Lin Feng studied star strength, he would not keep it as his main kind of strength. He wanted to develop his god strength. It included every original strength in the world!

“Can you tell me about the gods?” asked Lin Feng.

“Gods? I don’t know how many lives my Master had. At such a cultivation level, people have many, many lives. When you become strong enough, you’ll be able to learn more about them, I guess,” said the old ox, shaking his head. “Are you going to practice cultivation and meditate in seclusion for a while?”

“I need to head to the outside world, some things are happening.”

replied Lin Feng.

The old ox nodded, “Good. I won’t help you in the outside world, though.”

“I know,” said Lin Feng. He disappeared, and reappeared in the outside world!

Chapter 2406: Holy City

Strife had started in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and then had spilled over to the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Dark Clouds was no exception.

These days, there was a terrifying vortex in Dark Clouds' sky. It was a passage, connecting the Imperial Court and Dark Clouds.

Dark Clouds wasn't the only region so afflicted; the other nine regions of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were in the same boat. They all had a passage in the sky which led to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. When the sky was broken, such passages appeared. However, according to legends, only great emperors could cross such passages without being destroyed by the destructive energies inside. Other people died instantly.

The Holy City was the center of Dark Clouds. After Lin Feng had destroyed some clans in the past, Champion University had become the First University of the city. They had many very talented students. At the same time, Tiantai had also been rising, and they also had incredibly talented disciples. Tiantai had many great emperors, which made many people sigh. What was going on in the world? In the past, great emperors were extremely rare, even in the biggest influential groups.

After all, people needed a very long time to become great emperors, and they had to be very talented. But in Tiantai, it was common. It was the case everywhere in the Holy City, actually.

The world was changing. After Champion University and Tiantai started rising, the Great Imperial Palace also continued rising. The Canaan Buddhist Clan also became stronger and stronger. Some people had managed to get to the top of the Supreme Buddhist mountain and had obtained the Buddhist Sutra. Buddhist cultivators became stronger and stronger. Some incredibly strong Buddhist monks had appeared.

The atmosphere in the Holy City became a bit wild. Many groups were competing, and the four universities also got involved.

However, things started and finished in the strongest group, the Celestial Martial Dynasty. The Celestial Martial Dynasty hadn't existed for a long time, but they were rising at a terrifying speed. They hadn't raised their cultivators, though, they had recruited them. In such a short time, they had become the strongest group in the Holy City, and could oppress the four universities. That was possible because of one single reason: the Celestial Martial Dynasty had Saints.

If the Buddhist clan hadn't been powerful and prosperous, the Celestial Martial Dynasty would have taken control over the entire Holy City. But the Buddhist clan had created the Canaan Dynasty. They were positioned in the south and north.

With time, the Holy City had completely changed. Two powerful groups controlled the Holy City: the Celestial Martial Dynasty, and the Canaan Dynasty.

In the lower world, Saints were usually hermits. People never saw them, there were just legends about them. However, these days, Saints had showed up in the Holy City. That's why the Celestial Martial Dynasty and the mysterious Canaan Dynasty rose so quickly.

The other groups weakened. People were well aware of that, but what could they do? The Celestial Martial Dynasty was unstoppable. Even the four universities thought so. They even made their students go to the Celestial Martial Dynasty. They hoped some of their students would become Saints' disciples.

The situation which was initially unstable in the Holy City calmed down thanks to those two groups when they took control of the city.

Tiantai was in the Holy City. They were also powerful, but these days, many of Tiantai's disciples left to join the Celestial Martial

Dynasty.

Lin Feng appeared outside of Tiantai. After realizing he was in Dark Clouds, he had decided to go to Tiantai. He had heard about the situation, he hadn't thought things would change so quickly in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Only a few dozens of years had passed, and so many things had changed.

Lin Feng was wearing a simple robe as he stood outside of Tiantai, it was a bit cold. "I wonder if my teachers and friends are in Tiantai."

Lin Feng released his godly awareness which surrounded Tiantai, he could see everything apart from a few mysterious places.

My friends are all gone, only my teachers are here. My friends must all be traveling the world, thought Lin Feng. He looked inside a temple, Mu Chen and Emperor Yu were there. Apart from them, there was also Yun Qing Yan and Qin Wu. They were talking about something.

Xiao Chen is there too, he's a great emperor now. I didn't fulfil my obligations as a teacher!, thought Lin Feng. He felt guilty.

In the palace, Mu Chen looked at Ye Chen and said, "Xiao Chen, this time, the Celestial Martial Dynasty is organizing this ceremony to prove how strong they are. It will be extremely dangerous. After all, you're Little Lin Feng's only disciple, and he's never here. We weren't able to teach you anything, either. You can only rely on yourself. We hope nothing will happen to you."

"Teacher, how can a cultivator fear anything? My teacher is busy, he's going to become a peerless cultivator someday, I have to honor him and his reputation. Everybody knows why the Celestial Martial Dynasty organized the great ceremony. However, nobody can avoid going, all the powerful groups of the Holy City will participate, including the four universities. How could I flinch? Let

me go,” said Ye Chen, bowing before Mu Chen.

Mu Chen and Emperor Yu glanced at each other and nodded. “Since you’re determined, we’re happy. If your enemy is too strong though, don’t take risks.”

“I understand,” replied Ye Chen with a smile.

“Little Chen, good luck!” said Yun Qing Yan before adding, “Now, all your teacher’s friends are traveling the world, otherwise, nobody would have dared act arrogantly in front of us. Your teacher, that bastard, hasn’t come back for so many years. I wonder if he’s a Saint now. If he’s a Saint, he’ll destroy the Celestial Martial Dynasty and make them shut up, those bastards always put on an air of extreme arrogance, now they’ll stop.”

“Saints are legendary cultivators. Little Lin Feng is talented and I am sure he is at the top of the Sheng Di layer, but becoming a Saint is extremely difficult,” said Mu Chen, smiling wryly. “But Little Lin Feng left some puppet with me back in the days, he’s quite strong. I’ve never used it, but he can protect Tiantai without any problem.”

“Alright, everybody can disperse. The grand ceremony is tomorrow. The competition between the Celestial Martial Dynasty and the Canaan Dynasty will be scary. Xiao Chen, you should get ready too. We’ll talk to Champion University, too,” said Emperor Yu. Everybody nodded and left.

After everybody left, Emperor Yu and Mu Chen sighed.

“Unfortunately, we’re powerless. Our disciples have to endure the pressure,” said Mu Chen, shaking his head.

Lin Feng saw and heard everything. He felt sad for his two teachers, they’d had to take care of everything because his fellow disciples were all traveling.

“I understand. I’ll go and see the grand ceremony tomorrow,” whispered Lin Feng. He closed his eyes and after that, a group of

strong cultivators appeared on the ground. Their Qi was terrifying and contained death intent. Some of them looked bestial.

“You guys go to Tiantai and become Tiantai’s disciples, no matter what they tell you, listen to them, and never betray them,” said Lin Feng to those people.

“Yes sir!” said the group of people automatically.

“Go. Don’t talk about me. I’ll show up tomorrow,” said Lin Feng. His figure flickered and he left. He didn’t gather with his teachers immediately, he went to honor his promise. He had to give back the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree within a hundred years. This time, he was in Dark Clouds, so it was a good time to give it back to the Godly Wood Valley!

Chapter 2407: Destruction

The Godly Wood Valley was situated in a forest in the mountains. It was a hidden land of peace and prosperity, an earthly paradise. Ordinary people couldn't go there easily to look around, and even less to practice cultivation.

However, many people were in the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree forest looking for trees. They were very excited, because the cosmic energies were thick and rich there.

"Who would have thought there would be such nice places in the lower world, too? I would have come a long time if I had known this before," said a young man, smiling when he sensed the cosmic energies. They were from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. After the passage between the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and the lower world had formed, they had decided to go and travel, and they had found this great place.

"The Continent of the Nine Clouds is so big. The Imperial Court is also boundless. There are nine regions in the lower world, so of course there are great places, too. Our clan, the Blood Sea Clan, found this place by accident in a lucky coincidence," replied another one, smiling. Indeed, they had been lucky to find this place, which was perfect for young people to practice cultivation.

"I think the effects on our blood vitality will be great," said another young man smiling. Then, he stretched his hand out and ate a full Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree, smiling.

"Stop." shouted someone furiously at that moment. Someone looked at him furiously and said, "Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees are extremely rare. Even if you invaded this place and now control it, what makes you think you can act like disrespectful bastards?"

The young man looked at that old man icily. His eyes were bloodshot.

“Stop farting here, old dude. How dare you talk to me that way? Your granddaughter is stunning, what would you say if I fucked her tonight?” said the young man icily. The old man’s face stiffened and he started shaking.

“Asshole, asshole!” shouted the old man on the inside, but he didn’t dare say it for real. The Blood Sea Clan was terrifyingly powerful. They had Saints. After finding the Godly Wood Valley, they had decided to invade it and make it their young people’s cultivation paradise. Even though they didn’t kill the inhabitants of the Godly Wood Valley, they treated them like slaves.

At that moment, in the Godly Wood Valley, a young man was walking slowly. When he arrived, he frowned. He released his godly awareness and realized there was something wrong. The Continent of the Nine Clouds had grown unstable and there were problems everywhere, including in the Godly Wood Valley.

Lin Feng rose up in the air looked at the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree’s area.

The guard of the area turned around and looked at Lin Feng.

“It’s him.” When the old man saw Lin Feng, he remembered him instantly because a special tree had chosen to follow him. He had even said, ‘In a hundred years, I’ll be a king in Dark Clouds.’

“Venerable old man!” shouted Lin Feng. The old man was stupefied. Lin Feng’s Qi was ordinary. He didn’t look like a cultivator at all. And he didn’t call him Mister, he called him Venerable old man.

“What’s going on?” asked Lin Feng.

“Who are you?” asked a young man on the ground, glancing at Lin Feng icily. Most of those young people were cultivators of the Huang Qi layer. The Forest was useful to cultivators of the Huang Qi layer after all.

Lin Feng ignored him and looked at the old man.

“Hm... the Continent of the Nine Clouds has become unstable. The Godly Wood Valley wasn’t lucky. They found our place and invaded it. People who go against them get killed. I want to protect the Heavenly Grace Ancient Trees, so I submitted to the Blood Sea Clan,” said the old man to Lin Feng telepathically, “You must be here to give the tree back. Keep that tree and leave.”

“Blood Sea Clan?” Lin Feng frowned. There were many, many groups in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and they all had Saints. No wonder the Godly Wood Valley couldn’t resist them.

“Everybody, piss off!” said someone aggressively at that moment, that voice made the ground shake violently.

People who were practicing using the strength of the Sky Blue Godly Wood raised their heads and gazed into the distance. Many people looked at Lin Feng icily. The old man was stupefied. This little boy was insane.

“You shouldn’t stay here! Leave, hurry!” said the old man to Lin Feng telepathically. Even though he thought highly of Lin Feng, Lin Feng hadn’t practiced long enough, he probably couldn’t compete with them.

“You want to die?!” a young man said to Lin Feng icily.

Lin Feng glanced at him and the young man’s body became golden, exploded and completely disappeared. All that happened instantly.

The crowd gulped when they saw that. How... strong!

“You all want to die!?” shouted Lin Feng icily. Death strength suddenly surrounded the whole area. If Lin Feng wanted, he could destroy everything there in the blink of an eye.

In the distance, the air shrieked furiously. A few great emperors arrived and looked at Lin Feng icily. Their eyes were filled with murder.

“It seems that you really want to die,” said Lin Feng. He turned around and looked at the people who had just arrived, and suddenly they were terrified. Their bodies turned grey, they instantly died, collapsed, and fell from the sky.

“That’s...” The crowd was stunned, the old man was stunned too. Lin Feng could kill great emperors instantly?

A few dozens of years have passed, I hadn’t thought things would change like this, thought Lin Feng sighing. His death strength surged out and surged over everything.

“Venerable old man, are there any people from your clan in the area?” Lin Feng asked the old man. The old man was stupefied.

“No,” said the old man shaking his head. He was trembling while looking at Lin Feng.

“Alright, good, die!” Lin Feng killed everyone in the area. They all turned grey and collapsed.

When the old man saw that, his heart pounded extremely violently, he could barely breathe. How strong had this young man become? What was his cultivation level?

“I can’t do that.” Lin Feng could do that, which meant he was far stronger than him. His heart pounded even faster.

“Are there people from your clan over there?” asked Lin Feng, pointing to the distance.

“There are.” replied the old man hastily, afraid that Lin Feng would kill them all instantly. He was too strong.

“Alright,” said Lin Feng nodding. Then, he shook his hand and a tree descended from the sky. It was the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood.

“I promised I’d bring the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree back,” said Lin Feng to the old man.

“You said you’d become the king of Dark Clouds a hundred years

later, but you did it in less than a hundred years. You're the first Saint I've seen in my life," said the old man, taking a deep breath, "But the Blood Sea Clan is very powerful, they have Saints, too. Last time, an ancient Saint came here and caused chaos, he immediately killed everybody who disagreed with him atrociously."

"In a chaotic world, the only solution is to slaughter your enemies," said Lin Feng calmly, but very aggressive. The old man shivered. No wonder this little boy had succeeded so fast, his temper was scary.

"Back then, you were kind to me and you gave me the Godly Wood. Now I'm back, and I'll help you, too. Come with me," said Lin Feng evenly. The old man and Lin Feng flew away.

When Lin Feng saw people attacking them, he instantly killed them. Nobody could compete with him.

Very quickly, Lin Feng finished killing all the members of the Blood Sea Clan. None of them were left. The strong cultivators of the Godly Wood Clan gathered and looked at Lin Feng in astonishment. Emperors and great emperors were all like tiny little insects in front of him, how incredible!

"Master Ox, I have things to do. Can you send some Saints here to help me kill the members of the Blood Sea Clan when they come?" Lin Feng asked the old ox of the Star World.

"Alright, they can do what you can do, anyway," replied the old ox. After a short time, nine Bestial Saints appeared there in the sky, all of them low-level Saints.

A terrifying Qi surrounded Lin Feng, it was the beast Lin Feng had injured.

Lin Feng glanced at him indifferently and smiled, "I know you don't want to submit. Just help me protect the area for some time. Then, someday, I'll release you."

The beasts shivered. Release them? Freedom?

“Really?” asked a beast.

“Of course, I am the new master. But I need you to help me with a few things first,” said Lin Feng. He said to the old man, “Venerable old man, they will protect the area. I’m off.”

Then, he left and disappeared. The old man was stunned. His heart kept racing!

Chapter 2408: Lin Feng Is Back

Many strong cultivators had gathered in the Holy City.

The Celestial Martial Dynasty organized a grand ceremony and invited everybody in the Holy City to compare their young cultivators' strength.

The Celestial Martial Dynasty made it look like it was a grand ceremony for the Holy City, but actually the crowd understood that the Celestial Martial Dynasty wanted to show everybody they had control over the whole town.

The Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint had said that if anyone stood out, they'd have the opportunity to become a Saint's disciple. That was something incredible and inconceivable for many people, a dream. Many clans wanted their young people to become members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, or to become Saint's disciples.

There was a gigantic battle stage set up. In the northern part of the battle stage were the strong cultivators of the Dynasty, sitting in bleachers. In the southern part, there was a group of Buddhist monks, they looked solemn and respectful. The Canaan Dynasty was the only group who could compete with the Celestial Martial Dynasty.

The other groups were still around. There were people from the Great Imperial Palace and the four universities, they still had some power in the Holy City. The four universities had weakened a lot, but they still had some strong cultivators.

Ancient Holy Clans had fewer and fewer people though. The Yin Clan still had some trump cards. Years past, after Lin Feng had destroyed some Ancient Holy Clans, some new ones had started rising, but they couldn't possibly have a position as high as the four universities in the Holy City.

At the foot of the bleachers, there were even more people. Many of them were ordinary people from the Holy City who had come to watch. In only a few dozens of years, so many things had changed. In the past, the four universities used to be the strongest, but now they weren't anymore.

The eight Ancestors of Champion University came personally. They rarely appeared other times. After the Continent of the Nine Clouds had become chaotic, they had come back from abroad. Things had changed, and now, the Celestial Martial Dynasty was the group who organized grand ceremonies. People had to give them face.

Tiantai's people were with the members of Champion University. Champion University and Tiantai were very close, thanks to Lin Feng.

Mu Chen and Emperor Yu were with the eight Ancestors of the university, on the very left of the group. Ancestor Xuan Tian and Ancestor Shi Tian, who were very close to Lin Feng, were next to them.

"Mu Chen, the direct disciples of Tiantai haven't come back?" Ancestor Shi Tian asked Mu Chen. Even though Mu Chen and Emperor Yu weren't very strong, they had raised incredible disciples. Lin Feng was terrifying, and Hou Qing Lin, Ruo Xie, Tian Chi were all strong.

"No. The Continent of the Nine Clouds is chaotic. I don't know how they are these days," replied Mu Chen. He missed them.

"Why didn't you contact them?" asked Ancestor Shi Tian, smiling wryly.

"I don't want to disturb them, they're busy," said Mu Chen shaking his head, "Ancestor, do you have news from Lin Feng?"

"No. He disappeared a long time ago," said Ancestor Shi Tian.

"I've heard that all the Shrines are looking for him, to kill him,"

said Ancestor Zhu Tian evenly. Emperor Yu and Mu Chen's hearts twitched nervously.

"Ancestor?" Mu Chen looked confused.

"You didn't know? All the Shrines are looking for him, they are ready to do anything to kill him. I'm afraid..." said Ancestor Zhu Tian patiently. Emperor Yu and Mu Chen grew even more nervous. Their stomachs burned.

All their direct disciples were like their children. They loved them. They didn't want anything to happen to them.

"I'm afraid he might be dead," admitted Ancestor Zhu Tian calmly.

"Enough!" said Ancestor Shi Tian angrily, "Lin Feng is protected by the Fortune Shrine. He's probably fine."

"Mu Chen, if your direct disciples are not here, who can participate today?" asked Ancestor Zhu Tian indifferently and disdainfully.

"One of them. I hope he won't disappoint me," said Mu Chen. Ancestor Zhu Tian's tone of speech was starting to irritate him. He knew that these people were Ancestors, and that they would never have sat at the same level as him if Lin Feng didn't exist.

"I've heard that many of Tiantai's disciples have abandoned Tiantai these days. Can you compete with other groups now?" asked Ancestor Zhu Tian.

"We still have many talented disciples," said Mu Chen. He didn't like arguing with people, but he was losing patience. He sounded angry.

"We'll see," said Ancestor Zhu Tian, smiling. He didn't say anything else after that. Ancestor Shi Tian was startled, he hadn't thought Ancestor Zhu Tian would be angry because of trivial matters which had happened in the past. Everybody had forgotten about those small things, but not him. When Lin Feng had become

famous, he hadn't shown his feelings, but now things had changed...

At that moment, members of the crowd looked at Ancestor Zhu Tian angrily. He was surprised. They were looking at him.

"Those people are so strong, are they from Tiantai?" thought Ancestor Zhu Tian. He asked, "Mu Chen, who are those people?"

"Tiantai's people," said Mu Chen icily. Ancestor Zhu Tian was startled, and smiled coldly. He said, "So you have friends."

At that moment, clouds rolled in the sky. A young man was flying above them. He looked furious. What was wrong with that Zhu Tian?

Lin Feng and those people belonged to a different world. He could see everything that was happening in the Holy City. He had also heard Ancestor Zhu Tian and Mu Chen's conversation.

I haven't seen my teachers for such a long time. I'll be happy to talk to him, thought Lin Feng with a smile. Then he disappeared from there.

Mu Chen and Emperor Yu didn't know that Lin Feng had arrived. They watched the members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty. A group of people wearing imperial robes were on a flight of stairs. They looked imposing and awe-inspiring. Behind them were some young people, some of them were from Tiantai before and had betrayed Tiantai.

That bunch of bastards, thought Mu Chen angrily. Nobody prevented their young people from joining the Celestial Martial Dynasty in the Holy City these days, but doing it without their elder's approval was a betrayal.

"Teacher, how come you get angry so easily?" asked a familiar voice. Mu Chen's face stiffened. What a familiar voice...

Mu Chen's heart twitched, he turned around and saw a young man smiling.

Mu Chen shivered. He was worried about Lin Feng just a moment before, and now he was there in front of him.

Emperor Yu also turned around and shivered. Lin Feng was back!

Lin Feng had a huge smile on his face and said, “Is there anything on my face, teachers?”

“Pfew...” Mu Chen and Emperor Yu took a deep breath. Mu Chen also smiled broadly. He looked much younger all of a sudden. His best disciple, his most talented disciple, was back!

He remembered when all his disciples had helped him and his wife Jing Xiao Yue. He would never forget that. He had the impression he had led a worthy life only because of that.

He remembered those enthusiastic disciples.

Mu Chen is my teacher!

Ancestor Shi Tian was stupefied, but smiled. Lin Feng was there, how could anything happen to him?

Ancestor Zhu Tian pulled a long face, shocked at this turn of events!

Chapter 2409: Ling

“You’re back, great!” said Mu Chen several times. It was difficult to calm down. Mu Chen and Emperor Yu moved aside and left a place between them, “Little Lin Feng, come here and sit.”

“Alright,” said Lin Feng smiling. Then, he sat down between them. He nodded at Ancestor Xuan Tian and Ancestor Shi Tian and said, “Hello Ancestors, how are you?”

“We’re alright. We’re happy to see you!” Ancestor Shi Tian smiled. “You left for a few dozens of years, such a long time!”

“Because some things require time... I just came back, sorted out a few things and immediately came here to see you,” replied Lin Feng.

“You came for your teachers, not for us old men,” said Ancestor Shi Tian laughed. Of course, Lin Feng had gone through so much with Emperor Yu and Mu Chen. It was incomparable.

“Little Lin Feng, how have you been?” Emperor Yu asked Lin Feng.

“I’ve been alright. No major problems. Don’t I look fine?” said Lin Feng breezily. “And you, teachers, you must be exhausted managing Tiantai.”

Lin Feng had seen that his teachers looked tired when arriving, especially because of Ancestor Zhu Tian. After he arrived, Ancestor Zhu Tian shut right up though.

“Father!” Lin Feng saw a teenage girl arrive in front of Mu Chen. She looked at Lin Feng in a strange way.

“That’s...?” Lin Feng was astonished, and looked at Mu Chen.

“Lin Feng, that’s Ling, our daughter,” said Mu Chen smiling proudly.

“Ling, that’s the Little Lin Feng I tell you about all the time. It’s

the first time you've seen him," said Mu Chen, caressing her head. When Lin Feng heard that, his eyes twinkled, and he smiled. His teacher finally had a daughter, he was very happy.

"Brother Lin Feng!" said Ling. She looked like her mother, she was very beautiful.

"Ling, come here," said Lin Feng smiling. Ling looked at her father, and then walked over to Lin Feng, then she stuck out her tongue teasingly and said, "My dad always says you're his most talented disciple. What's your cultivation level?"

"Probably stronger than you," said Lin Feng, caressing her head. Then he dragged her to him, pinched her cheeks, and said to Mu Chen, "Teacher, how come you didn't contact me? This is something very important."

"I didn't want to bother you while you were traveling," Mu Chen smiled.

"That's not something trivial, though. It's important!" said Lin Feng. He was speechless. He was annoyed and asked, "Ling, how old are you?"

Ling looked at him and said, "I'm fifteen. I have the impression you consider me a little child."

"Well, you are a little one, aren't you?" Lin Feng laughed.

"Everybody, silence," said someone in the distance. Instantly, everybody stopped talking and turned around. They all looked at the strong cultivators of the Celestial Martial Dynasty. Someone waved his hands to make everybody stop talking.

"Everybody, today, the Celestial Martial Dynasty has invited everyone for the grand ceremony. We want to make the city more powerful. Back in the days, people fought to be on the Imperial Ranking List and the Great Imperial Ranking List. From now on, they don't exist anymore. We'll organize the Celestial Martial Dynasty Grand Ceremony, it will replace the Pathfinder Day of the

Imperial Ranking List and Great Imperial Ranking List. People who do well will join the Celestial Martial Dynasty and some people will have the possibility to become Saint's disciples," said that person proudly. Many young people looked enthusiastic at his words.

Saints were legendary cultivators. Being a Saint's disciple would be amazing!

"Regarding the different levels, people have to be at least emperors to participate. They will be divided into low-level emperors, medium-level emperors, high-level emperors, and great emperors. Now, send your low-level emperors to the battle stage, all the groups must have participants," said that person.

After he said that, Lin Feng said to Emperor Yu, "Teacher, will Tiantai send six people as well?"

They had to send one person for each cultivation level, that was six people.

"Yes, no choice unless a group has absolutely nobody at that cultivation level. Tiantai must participate too," replied Emperor Yu.

"I understand," said Lin Feng nodding, "How strong is Tiantai now?"

Emperor Yu shook his head. He didn't seem satisfied as he said to Lin Feng, "Back then, when you left, Tiantai and Champion University were thriving. However, after that, things became chaotic. The Great Imperial Palace rose. The Celestial Martial Dynasty appeared, and then the Canaan Buddhist Clan appeared. Geniuses started leaving Tiantai to go to the Canaan Buddhist Clan and the Celestial Martial Dynasty. Champion University and Tiantai lost some incredibly talented disciples who betrayed us and went to the Celestial Martial Dynasty. Some of them will get on the battle stage, you'll see."

“When Tiantai was thriving, we could recruit talented people, but it didn’t mean they were good,” said Lin Feng to Emperor Yu.

“Yes, Mu Chen and I won’t be able to have great direct disciples like in the past,” Emperor Yu sighed. He would be proud of his direct disciples his entire life.

“Uncle Emperor Yu, you have a group of great direct disciples, that’s already great,” said Ling, smiling at Emperor Yu.

“Yes, that’s enough, and now we have Little Ling,” said Emperor Yu smiling at Ling, in Lin Feng’s arms.

“By the way, Little Lin Feng, you’re the one who sent those people yesterday, right?” said Emperor Yu suddenly.

Lin Feng nodded, “Indeed, they can fight with great emperors.”

“Alright, at least, Tiantai won’t lose face too much that way,” said Emperor Yu.

“Where are our fighters?” asked Lin Feng.

“They’re down there getting ready to fight, but it would be great if we could change some fighters,” said Emperor Yu, pointing at a group of people in the crowd. There was a low-level emperor, he looked up at Mu Chen and Emperor Yu.

“Ji Liao, do your best, if you can’t win, give up, but don’t take risks,” Emperor Yu said to the young man.

“Alright,” replied the young man. “I’ll use my full strength.”

“Ji Liao,” said Lin Feng at that moment. Ji Liao looked at Lin Feng. He looked perplexed. He didn’t recognize Lin Feng. He looked young, and was seated between Emperor Yu and Mu Chen, and Miss Ling was in his arms. He had an extraordinary position.

“Do your best,” said Lin Feng. Lights emerged from Lin Feng’s eyes and surrounded him.

Ji Liao was stupefied and asked, “Master, that’s...”

“Go. If you lose, you’ll understand,” Lin Feng smiled. Ji Liao bowed before Lin Feng and left.

“Little Lin Feng, did you do anything to him?” asked Emperor Yu.

“I gave him an extra layer of protection to prevent him from dying,” said Lin Feng. There were hundreds of fighters. Apart from strong cultivators from influential groups, there were also some individual cultivators. Those people belonged to no group, they were talented and wanted to become a Saint’s disciple.

The first round was a free-for-all. Everybody was on the battle stage and fought to death or surrender. Many young people died. In the end, only sixteen remained and were qualified.

“Ji Liao is quite strong. He’ll finish in the top sixteen,” said Lin Feng.

Emperor Yu nodded, “Even though our cultivators are not the most talented, Tiantai’s disciples are quite talented.”

“Yes, don’t hesitate and attach importance to these kids,” said Lin Feng indifferently. These days, what he said could change someone’s life. Back in the days, Lin Feng was down on the battle stage fighting for various groups, now he was at the top and watched the battles.

At that moment, some people from Celestial Godly University looked at the members of Tiantai. Someone frowned.

They didn’t pay much attention to Tiantai, so nobody had noticed Lin Feng at first, but at that moment someone recognized him.

“Lin Feng is back!” whispered that person. They were astonished. Back in the days, Lin Feng had shaken the Holy City. Was he really back?

Many people looked at Lin Feng, and were stunned. He was back for real!

“Now, the Holy City is chaotic, the Celestial Martial Dynasty and the Canaan Buddhist Dynasty control the town. Will he change things again?”

“I guess it’ll be difficult. The Celestial Martial Dynasty and the Canaan Buddhist Dynasty both have Saints. They don’t care about someone like Lin Feng.”

“Yes, you’re right, even Shi Jue can’t do much,” said several people. Lin Feng couldn’t change anything anymore, it seemed!

Chapter 2410: Lang Yan and Shi Xuan

The battles were fierce and tragic. Ji Liao finished seventh. He was quite strong.

Lin Feng and his teachers continued chatting while watching the battles. It reminded Lin Feng of when he was younger.

“Lin Feng, how do you feel?” asked Mu Chen.

“The members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty and the Canaan Buddhist Dynasty aren’t very talented, they just know more things. Ji Liao has a good understanding of cosmic energies,” Lin Feng replied calmly.

“Brother Lin Feng, how powerful are your cosmic energies?” Ling asked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng laughed and said, “So-so!”

“Is that so? I hope we’ll exchange views on cultivation, you’re my father’s disciple so you’re my fellow disciple,” said Ling, glancing at Mu Chen.

“But Lin Feng is much, much stronger than your daddy now. He’d be a much better teacher than me. When Lin Feng was an emperor, he had an advanced knowledge and deep understanding of cosmic energies already,” Mu Chen laughed.

“Alright, I’ll teach you whatever you want to learn,” Lin Feng smiled. It was Mu Chen’s daughter, she was like his child. She called Lin Feng brother but to him, she was a baby, and he wanted to take care of her.

“That’s a promise then!” Ling grinned.

“Of course!”

“Lin Feng, the second round is starting, I don’t think we’ll be as lucky. I told him to give up if he was in danger,” said Emperor Yu.

Ji Liao walked over and said to Lin Feng, “Master, thank you very

much.”

Lin Feng had told him to fight as hard as he could, he had done it fearlessly and had lost. But when that attack which should have been deadly reached him, a strange kind of strength protected him.

“No need to thank me. Continue practicing cultivation really hard. You have potential,” said Lin Feng encouragingly.

“Thank you very much, Master,” said Ji Liao. He could sense that Lin Feng was terrifyingly strong.

“Ji Liao, go and watch your big fellow disciple’s battle,” Emperor Yu told Ji Liao. He watched a young man battle. That young man was a high-level emperor. Such cultivators were strong enough to have a good ranking in town, a bit like those who were on the Imperial Ranking List back then.

“His Qi is stable. Not bad,” said Lin Feng, glancing at the young man.

“Lin Feng, he’s Ruo Xie’s disciple. His name is Lang Yan. He understands Speed Dao strength already. His Dao is already low-level. His comprehension abilities are not bad. He also understands Heaviness Dao. He could finish in the top five,” Emperor Yu told Lin Feng.

“Two sorts of Dao, low-level, how rare, indeed. He could be quite strong in the future,” agreed Lin Feng.

“But he can’t finish first, that’s for sure. Initially, he was the second most outstanding disciple, and the first one betrayed Tiantai back then to go to the Celestial Martial Dynasty. Back then, Qing Lin and the others taught him a lot. Nobody thought he’d betray Tiantai,” said Emperor Yu coldly, gazing into the distance.

“Eh?” Lin Feng was stupefied. Lang Yan controlled two sorts of Dao, and the other one was stronger than him back then? That traitor seemed extremely strong, indeed. Lin Feng’s fellow disciples had even taught him a lot. And still he had betrayed

Tiantai...

“His name is Shi Xuan. He also understands two sorts of Dao, very powerful sorts of Dao: dark light Dao and Speed Dao. His attacks are explosive. Back then, Qing Lin and the others thought they weren’t suitable teachers for him, only Jian Mang was. But Jian Mang doesn’t want disciples, so he only helped him a couple of times, but that’s all. Shi Xuan was left alone a little,” explained Emperor Yu.

At the same time, Lin Feng noticed a young man in the group of people of the Celestial Martial Dynasty. Many great emperors were sitting next to him. He didn’t look proud, he looked sly and violently, wildly ambitious.

No wonder my teachers are angry. If you’re good to someone and they betray you, that’s pretty bad, thought Lin Feng. How ungrateful.

But many people were wildly ambitious, and hoped to rise quickly.

“That Shi Xuan is good at pretending. He looked good in the past, now he looks quite sinister,” said Emperor Yu calmly. Shi Xuan looked at them calmly, then at Lin Feng in a sharp way.

“Hmph!” Lin Feng grunted icily. Shi Xuan looked at him aggressively, Lin Feng looked back at him, and instantly Shi Xuan’s eyes felt horribly painful and he closed them.

Shi Xuan reopened his eyes, and didn’t dare look at Lin Feng again. He thought, That guy is strong! He’s stronger than Emperor Yu. He’s even stronger than Hou Qing Lin! I wonder who he is? He didn’t injure me though, he’s too proud. He doesn’t want to fight against me because I’m a junior.

“Lang Yan.” shouted Lin Feng at that moment. Lang Yan raised his head. “Come here,” said Lin Feng.

Lang Yan looked at Emperor Yu and Mu Chen, they nodded. He

went over to Lin Feng.

“How may I call you, Master?” asked Lang Yan to Lin Feng. He was seated between the two teachers, so he was probably very strong. It was best to be very polite.

“Show me your Dao, attack me,” said Lin Feng, ignoring Lang Yan’s question. He was interested in Dao, and put Ling aside.

Lang Yan was surprised, but he nodded. He stretched out his hand, pointed at Lin Feng, and attacked. His attack was very quick.

“Slow!” said Lin Feng. Suddenly, Lang Yan had the impression he had become as slow as a snail. It felt like his hands were extremely far from Lin Feng.

“How strong!” Lang Yan was shaking. He saw Lin Feng’s finger point at him, and knew that if Lin Feng attacked him, he would be killed easily.

Lang Yan was being pushed backwards. He nearly fell down, covered with cold sweat. He looked at Lin Feng, Lin Feng was still seated and remained motionless.

His slow and fast strengths are extremely efficient, much better than mine, thought Lang Yan. He was astonished. He didn’t understand how strong Lin Feng was.

“Please teach me, Master,” said Lang Yan, bowing before Lin Feng. He knew Lin Feng was extraordinary.

“Study the details,” said Lin Feng calmly. Suddenly, Lang Yan sensed something and fell asleep. He started dreaming.

He saw a leaf move towards him extremely slowly. However, it also seemed fast at the same time. He moved back, but it was useless. The leaf flew past his head.

“Pfew...” Lang Yan took a deep breath. He had thought he was going to die.

“I’m still alive,” thought Lang Yan, shaking. “Where am I?”

Another leaf moved towards him but this time, it was fast, and contained a hidden slowing. How strong.

Lang Yan studied for a long while, the dream seemed to last forever.

When Lang Yan came out, the second round was over already. He bowed before Lin Feng and said, “Thank you very much for your lesson, Master.”

“He’s your teacher’s fellow disciple,” Emperor Yu said to Lang Yan.

“My teacher’s fellow disciple?” Lang Yan was astonished. One of Tiantai’s direct disciples, which one?

“How strong. Could it be...” Lang Yan was staring at Lin Feng, bowed deeply and said, “Thank you very much, Uncle Lin!”

“Haha, little boy, you’re smart!” said Emperor Yu.

“It wasn’t difficult, he’s so strong,” Lang Yan smiled.

“Alright, go and fight,” said Lin Feng, waving. Lights surrounded him and Lin Feng said, “Do your best. If you defeat Shi Xuan, you’ll be rewarded.”

“I’ll fight to the death!”

“Yes, if you can kill him, help yourself! No need to be polite,” Lin Feng said to Lang Yan.

Lang Yan was astonished. Then, Mu Chen and Emperor Yu looked at Lin Feng and said, “They can’t, Lin Feng. Shi Xuan’s social position is extraordinary.”

“So what? If he can kill him, then he should!” replied Lin Feng naturally. People around were shaking. Lang Yan’s heart was pounding. Uncle Lin Feng was really like in the legends, aggressive and strong!

Chapter 2411: You Want To Die

Lang Yan jumped onto the battle stage. This round was for high-level emperors. The strong cultivator of the Celestial Martial Dynasty had created a layer of protection around the battle stage to protect people outside.

“High-level emperors’ battles mainly consist of comparing themselves in terms of Dao strength. I wonder if Lang Yan understood anything a moment ago,” said Emperor Yu, looking at the fighters. They were already quite strong. Before the Holy City became unsettled, high-level emperors were already considered very strong.

“The Imperial Ranking List is really about Dao strength,” agreed Ancestor Shi Tian.

“He probably understood something,” said Lin Feng. He had created a dream for Lang Yan. He had realized the boy was very talented. In a dream, time passed differently than in the outside world. Even though Lang Yan hadn’t been able to spend much time in the dream, it had probably been very beneficial to him.

More than a hundred people were present, their Qi dashing to the skies. Shi Xuan was standing there, nobody dared offend him. People usually knew about the strongest cultivators of their generation. Back in the days, Lin Feng also knew how strong other famous people were. Shi Xuan was extremely strong, so nobody dared offend him. He was first on the Imperial Ranking List.

But at that moment, he frowned and then smiled indifferently, “Lang Yan, you think you’re strong enough to fight against me now?”

“Shi Xuan, you betrayed Tiantai. A battle is inevitable,” replied Lang Yan icily.

“Is that so?” said Shi Xuan, looking at him in a disdainful way

and adding, “A moment ago, that guy next to Emperor Yu taught you something? He looked familiar. But who do you think he is? You think he can teach you a few things quickly, and that you’re now strong enough to defeat me? Do you know who my teacher is? These days, my teacher taught many things. ”

“We’ll see when we fight,” said Lang Yan, closing his eyes. They didn’t start fighting immediately. After all, Lang Yan was a high-level emperor too, very strong, third on the Imperial Ranking List. Nobody wanted to offend him, either. They both remained motionless.

—

After that, Lang Yan won all his battles.

Lin Feng smiled when he saw that. Emperor Yu said, “Lang Yan didn’t use speed Dao? He only relied on Heaviness Dao? He wants to use his trump cards in the end then, I guess...”

“The battles at the top of the Imperial Ranking List are going to start. Lang Yan is lucky, he’s going to fight against fourth place,” said Mu Chen. Shi Xuan was going to fight against second place.

“How strong. Lang Yan easily defeated his opponent, even though he was extremely fast,” said Emperor Yu a moment later. They turned around and were startled; Shi Xuan instantly killed his opponent, sword lights streaking across the sky and cutting him apart.

“That guy is even slyer than Jian Mang,” said Lin Feng, looking at Shi Xuan. That guy harbored evil intentions. Tiantai had raised him, and he had betrayed them. He was even becoming a problem for Tiantai.

“Lang Yan, the next one to die will be you!” said Shi Xuan, pointing at Lang Yan. He slowly turned around and looked at Emperor Yu, smiling icily. “Emperor Yu and Emperor Shi, you’re weaker than me now. You’re not qualified to be leaders. If I

became the leader of Tiantai, maybe I'd manage to make it shine again."

"Bastard!" shouted Emperor Yu icily, "You shameless traitor!"

"Strength is the most important thing in the world. You're weaklings, and you couldn't teach me anything, I had to find someone else to teach me. Why would I waste my time with weaklings?" said Shi Xuan. He was wildly ambitious, and arrogant, too.

"Shut the hell up!" shouted Lang Yan explosively, "Today, one of us is going to die!"

"I will fight against you!" Shi Xuan's sword twinkled. He wasn't as strong as a Canaan Buddhist monk, but the battle was going to be dazzling.

A dazzling sword shone out, people couldn't open their eyes anymore.

"Intent." Lang Yan closed his eyes and remembered the dream Lin Feng had created for him.

"How ridiculous." When Shi Xuan saw that Lang Yan had closed his eyes, he looked at him icily.

"Slow!" said Lang Yan. Suddenly, everything became slower around him. It was his own intent, he had control over his surroundings.

"Eh?" Shi Xuan's sword suddenly slowed down. Shi Xuan frowned. Lang Yan seemed to have an advanced understanding of Dao, but so what?

"Die!" A dozen dark swords appeared, and streaked across the sky.

"Slow down!" shouted Lang Yan. His eyes were still firmly closed. At the same time, he struck out with his hand, and thunder rolled. A gigantic heavy hand appeared in the air and shot out. It

was faster than his opponent's dark swords.

One of Shi Xuan's swords pierced through the gigantic hand, startling everyone. Usually, Shi Xuan could kill people silently without anybody noticing, but this time he didn't manage to kill Lang Yan.

Shi Xuan turned into a beam of light and he flew past Lang Yan in the sky.

"Where are you going?" shouted Lang Yan explosively. He released more slow energy. When cultivators became stronger, slow and fast strength could be really terrifying.

"Heavy strength!" shouted Lang Yan furiously. Shi Xuan was stupefied when he sensed Lang Yan's Dao strength; it was already so powerful, and now it was high-level, not low-level anymore. How was that possible? How had Lang Yan done that?

Lang Yan disappeared, then reappeared close to Shi Xuan, pointing at Shi Xuan with his finger. At that moment, he remembered everything Lin Feng had shown him in the dream. He had seen one finger, it didn't contain strength, but it was extremely fast.

When Shi Xuan saw that, his expression changed drastically. His sword descended from the sky. Sword lights flashed, but at the same time Lang Yan kept slowing him down.

Blood splashed. Lang Yan had stabbed Shi Xuan in the chest.

"Explode!" shouted Lang Yan explosively. Shi Xuan's body crackled as he threw a sword at Lang Yan.

"Slow!" said Lang Yan when he saw that attack. He wanted to kill Shi Xuan, no matter what!

"Heavy strength." Lang Yan's Dao was now very powerful, his attacks brutal.

Shi Xuan was injured, and threw out his sword. The heavy

strength coupled with slow strength gave him a hard time. He was starting to feel danger.

Lang Yan dodged the sword. Everybody was astonished. This duel had already exceeded all their expectations, and it was a very beautiful fight. The most surprising thing was that the cultivators were competing in terms of speed. They were both as fast as lightning.

“Enough!” shouted someone loudly. An overwhelming strength oppressed Lang Yan. He had the impression he was going to collapse. Shi Xuan flew up in the air.

“This battle is over,” said one of the organizers, glancing at Lang Yan. “You’re talented. You can join the Celestial Martial Dynasty and become a Saint’s disciple. ”

“Bullshit!” said Lang Yan furiously, “The Celestial Martial Dynasty is despicable! You got involved in our battle. You are pitiful and ridiculous! I would never become a member of the Celestial Martial Dynasty!”

“You’re humiliating the Celestial Martial Dynasty!? Die!” said that person icily. The crowd was stunned at the quick escalation. It was how the Celestial Martial Dynasty handled things. Lang Yan had refused to join the Celestial Martial Dynasty and had humiliated them, that was an excuse for them to kill him. Only the Canaan Dynasty could compete with them. If anyone else dared offend them, they died, no reason was needed.

“He wants to die. Go and kill him,” ordered Lin Feng. A group of people jumped forwards and released a terrifying death Qi.

The referee was stunned. He turned on them and shouted, “Insolent! You dare cause trouble during the grand ceremony?!”

“Die!” shouted someone in return. The referee sensed some terrifying death energies surround him. A strong wind blew past him. A great roc streaked across the sky, and blood sprayed. The

referee was beheaded, his head flying away. His eyes were still open, and from the expression on his face, one could guess he couldn't believe it. He had just gotten killed? He had just gotten killed during the grand ceremony of the Celestial Martial Dynasty?

Everybody was astonished. People who weren't even members of the Canaan Dynasty dared cause trouble there? Even the members of the Canaan Dynasty wouldn't have dared do such a thing there, right?

Chapter 2412: Saint

Someone dared suddenly kill people ruthlessly. The crowd was astonished, took a deep breath, and continued watching. Three figures were floating in the air. One of them was a strong cultivator with dark wings and sharp eyes. It was a great roc. Bestial Qi kept emerging from his body.

“That’s a great imperial beast, a great roc! He controls wind and death strength! His speed was incredible. He killed the referee instantly!” thought the crowd. He was actually a Celestial Emperor!

“He’s from Tiantai” since when does Tiantai dare act recklessly and audaciously like that? How could they kill a member of the Celestial Martial Dynasty like that? They’re insane.” Many people were looking at the members of Tiantai. In the Holy City, most people who had lived there for a long time knew Lin Feng, and when they noticed Lin Feng between Emperor Yu and Mu Chen, they were stunned. They hadn’t paid attention to the members of Tiantai a moment before, so they hadn’t seen him!

“He’s back. No wonder!” Lin Feng had destroyed many Ancient Holy Clans in the past, there was nothing he didn’t dare do. Killing the Celestial Martial Dynasty’s referee wasn’t a problem for him, either. The crowd knew that Lin Feng was supported by some Saints.

“Lin Feng is back. The battles are going to be fun. The Celestial Martial Dynasty, the Canaan Dynasty, and now Lin Feng, will Lin Feng become the third pillar of the Holy City?” wondered many people. Lin Feng was supported by Saints behind the scenes, and by Champion University and Tiantai officially. He had power and influence!

“Lin Feng.” At that moment, on the side of the Canaan Dynasty, a Buddhist monk looked at Lin Feng and smiled. Lin Feng

remembered him, he had dazzled during the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List: it was Dou Zhan Seng. Decades had passed, and he had become a cultivator of the Sheng Di Layer. He was outstanding.

“Brother Lin Feng, they’re all staring at you,” whispered Ling. Lin Feng smiled indifferently. Even though he wasn’t on the battle stage today, people still paid attention to him, but he didn’t care. It wasn’t important to him.

On the side of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, a group of people rose up into the air. They all looked furious as they flew towards the battle stage.

“Those who dare cause trouble here must die!” shouted one of them icily. He released a wave of overwhelming energies. The Celestial Martial Dynasty had organized the grand ceremony, how could they let anyone ruin the event?

“The Celestial Martial Dynasty organized this event, but only to cause trouble. The referee dared commit all kinds of outrages. The grand ceremony is completely unfair. From now on, Tiantai is in charge of the grand ceremony, not the Celestial Martial Dynasty,” said someone next to Lin Feng.

Instantly, the atmosphere became silent.

“Besides, Shi Xuan and Lang Yan’s battle isn’t over. Nobody can get involved, it’s a battle to the death, which will end only when one of them wins,” said that person, as if Tiantai had already taken control of the grand ceremony.

Three people surrounded the battle stage. They didn’t kill Shi Xuan, they surrounded Shi Xuan and Lang Yan so that they could finish their battle.

What could the Celestial Martial Dynasty say about that?

Shi Xuan pulled a long face. He hadn’t thought he would lose against Lang Yan. He hadn’t thought Tiantai could oppress the

Celestial Martial Dynasty.

On the battle stage, someone stood up. Around him, many people other people stood up. They looked calm and composed, or at least they tried, from their eyes, one could see a terrifying chill. Who dared act so arrogantly and recklessly?

“Elder, that guy’s name is Lin Feng. He’s a genius of Champion University. He’s supported by Saints and back in the days, he destroyed a few Ancient Holy Clans. He’s very strong,” said someone telepathically.

The person in the middle frowned, and said calmly, “Those who dare cause trouble here must die!”

“We obey!” People started moving in all directions. Their Qi was ominous – they were all Celestial Emperors.

At the same time, a strong wind containing death strength started blowing. A group of people appeared behind the battle stage. The atmosphere became eerily silent and oppressive. The strong cultivators of the Celestial Martial Dynasty all stopped moving.

“Eh?” the elder frowned and looked at the newcomers. They were determined to confront them now?

“How do you want to solve the issue? Be straightforward,” said the middle-aged man to Lin Feng.

“Have your Saints come out to talk to me! You’re not qualified to talk to me,” said Lin Feng indifferently. The middle-aged man’s face stiffened. Saints? To talk to him?

How insolent...? Many people were astonished. How insane... or was... Lin Feng... a Saint?

They immediately excluded the idea. Even though they couldn’t see Lin Feng’s cultivation level, he was probably just using a very powerful cloaking technique. Only a few decades had passed, maybe he was a Saint Emperor, or even a Saint Emperor of the top

of the Sheng Di Layer, but he couldn't be a Saint. Saints had transcended worldliness and attained holiness, and in the past, they never saw Saints in Dark Clouds. Saints were also usually very old. Lin Feng was much too young to be a Saint. Only a few decades had passed, how could he be a cultivator of the Sheng Layer?

Lin Feng was probably confident because he was backed up by Saints. Many people had heard that he had become a Fortune Shrine disciple after ranking first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds back then. It explained why he was arrogant and asked them to send Saints to talk to him.

The elder looked at Lin Feng icily. He said he wasn't qualified to talk to him...

"Even if you're a member of the Fortune Shrine, you're not qualified to talk to Saints, either. And even if you're talented, you can die anytime," said the elder, smiling icily. Lin Feng was startled, that guy knew he was a member of the Fortune Shrine?

"Fortune Shrine? That's Lin Feng!" Shi Xuan was astonished. No wonder he found him familiar. But why did Lin Feng look so ordinary? Why didn't anyone notice him? He had no Qi, he didn't look proud and sharp, like his statue.

"You just now guessed it was my teacher's fellow disciple, Shi Xuan? He just taught me. That's how my Dao broke through. He's a peerless genius. He finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and he's a disciple of the Fortune Shrine! You'll never be as successful. You cannot imagine how strong he is," said Lang Yan icily. He could sense how terrifyingly strong Lin Feng was, he had been taught incredible things in only a few minutes. He had the impression that Lin Feng could kill anyone in a few seconds.

Shi Xuan's face froze. He knew Lin Feng, Lin Feng was famous in the Holy City. In only a few years, he had become the most dazzling young cultivator of the city. Just now, Lin Feng had

taught Lang Yan a few things. That's how Lang Yan had become stronger than him!...

"Continue the battle," said Lin Feng indifferently. He ignored the elder, and took control over the grand ceremony.

Lang Yan released his Qi.

The face of the Celestial Martial Dynasty's elder stiffened. Lin Feng disdained him?

"Shi Xuan, you betrayed Tiantai! Today, you're going to die," said Lang Yan. His speed exploded. A terrifying heavy Dao strength oppressed Shi Xuan.

Shi Xuan released sharp sword strength.

"Slow!" said Lang Yan, closing his eyes. He felt more confident, he had instantly become stronger after Lin Feng's teaching. Now, he knew he could defeat Shi Xuan!

Everything around him became slower. It was Dao, it was intent, it was a sensation.

Anything could become a deadly weapon at extremely high speeds, even a leaf could become sharp at high speed. Lang Yan performed the same attack he had seen in the dream. His finger could become the sharpest sword.

Metal clashed, Shi Xuan's sword lights and Lang Yan's finger collided. Surprisingly, the sword lights dispersed instantly.

"Impossible." Shi Xuan couldn't believe it. Lang Yan's attack didn't look extraordinary, it wasn't dazzling, how come it was so powerful?

Lang Yan continued moving his finger towards Shi Xuan's third eye. Lang Yan shouted furiously, "Die!"

"Why!?" shouted Shi Xuan. That was his last word. He was a genius of the Huang Qi layer, he was first on the Imperial Ranking List, he had become a member of the Celestial Martial Dynasty,

and they had organized the grand ceremony. It was supposed to be a wonderful day for him.

But Shi Xuan, a Saint's disciple, was now dead!

“This time, Tiantai is taking big risks. They're messing around with Saints now!” A terrifying Saint's strength filled the air and surrounded the whole crowd. People's hearts started pounding violently. Was a Saint going to show up?

A figure appeared in the sky, wearing a white robe. He looked ordinary, but when the members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty saw him, they were astonished and amazed. They looked at him with true admiration, as this was a Saint!

Chapter 2413: Troubles lie Ahead

The Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty appeared and looked down at the crowd. Many people were wondering how the Celestial Martial Dynasty was going to deal with Tiantai.

“Greeting, Your Holiness of the Celestial Martial Dynasty,” said people from many different groups, standing up and bowing before the Saint. In the past, Saints were considered legendary cultivators, and now they had a Saint in front of them!

“Is that a Saint? I’ve heard that the difference between a Saint and a great emperor was incredible, they aren’t even comparable. Saints can easily kill entire armies of great emperors!” whispered someone, looking at the Saint admiringly.

Before the Celestial Martial Dynasty and the Canaan Dynasty had settled in the Holy City, people had heard that Lin Feng was backed up by Saints.

A moment before, Tiantai had killed a Saint’s disciple.

Lang Yan watched the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty nervously. However, he trusted Lin Feng, he was an incredible cultivator. He probably knew how to solve the issue.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the Saint. He was surprised, because the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty was a low-level Saint, surprisingly. Such a cultivator had come to the Holy City to create the Celestial Martial Dynasty, that was very surprising.

But a low-level Saint didn’t scare Lin Feng.

“Brother Lin, you disappeared for so many years, and now you’re back in the lower world. You’re even interested in the grand ceremony. I’m surprised,” said the Saint to Lin Feng, just when everyone thought he’d be furious. He even smiled calmly. However, the crowd trembled, even more than if he had killed Lin

Feng immediately.

They were astonished because the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty called Lin Feng “Brother Lin”, he didn’t address disrespectfully.

“Brother” was a friendly way of addressing someone, but the most terrifying part was that it also proved one thing: the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty considered Lin Feng someone of the same level. Otherwise, he wouldn’t possibly have called him “Brother Lin.”

How strong was Lin Feng, then?

Many people’s hearts were pounding furiously. Lin Feng had disappeared for decades, was he now a Saint? People couldn’t believe it.

“I am from the Holy City, and a member of Tiantai, so of course I come back sometimes. Since you organized the grand ceremony, it should be a fun event, and not a way to oppress everybody else. I don’t mind destroying the Celestial Martial Dynasty immediately, you know,” said Lin Feng calmly.

The crowd was astounded. He... didn’t mind destroying the Celestial Martial Dynasty?

The Celestial Martial Dynasty had risen in the Holy City, and apart from the Canaan Dynasty, nobody could resist them. Even though the Celestial Martial Dynasty was powerful, they didn’t destroy all the other groups of the Holy City, as the four universities still existed. Many of their students even betrayed them to become members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty. Nobody minded actually; many groups were willing to let their disciples become members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty. The Celestial Martial Dynasty didn’t force them outright. Many strong groups of the Holy City wanted to rise along with the Celestial Martial Dynasty. Many people even thought it was an opportunity.

However, if they decided to oppress other people, Lin Feng didn't mind teaching them a good lesson.

"I see. Since it's that way, I'll respect your opinion, Brother Lin. Today, we don't need referees anymore. People of the same level can fight against each other, I won't get involved. What do you think?" asked the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty calmly. He didn't seem angry.

"Alright," Lin Feng agreed. On the inside, he smiled coldly. He had studied the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique, and even though the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty was extremely polite, Lin Feng could sense he was furious and wanted to kill him. He had a good intuition now, his perceptions were acute and precise. The Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty didn't look angry, but Lin Feng could guess he was.

Lin Feng was now convinced that prophecies and predictions could be true.

"Back, everybody!" said the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, waving his hand. All the strong cultivators of the Celestial Martial Dynasty withdrew. Lin Feng nodded and his people went back as well. Only Lang Yan was left on the battle stage.

"Lang Yan, you killed a traitor who betrayed Tiantai, and you're now first on the ranking list. I would like to grant you a Saint's Weapon for your achievement. Great emperors won't be able to kill you. However, you can't use a Saint's Weapon unless you're in imminent danger of dying. When you become strong enough, I will offer you other precious items," Lin Feng said calmly.

He waved and a Saint's armor appeared, glowing softly. It flew towards Lang Yan and stopped in front of him.

"A Saint's Weapon." People's hearts were pounding violently. Only Saints could have Saint's weapons, and Lin Feng was giving one to Lang Yan, that...

Lang Yan was astonished, too. He was speechless, and dumbstruck... a Saint's Weapon? He didn't... his teacher's fellow disciple was offering him a Saint's weapon?

"What are you looking at? Take it," said Mu Chen, smiling at him.

Lang Yan was stupefied and he took the armor numbly. "Thank you very much, Teacher."

"Brother Ruo Xie is very busy traveling. He doesn't have time to teach you. I'll also offer you some skills, techniques, and spells," continued Lin Feng.

Lang Yan's heart twitched. Lin Feng had just offered him a Saint's Weapon, so what kind of techniques would he give him?

Some of the disciples of the Celestial Martial Dynasty were members of Tiantai in the past. At that moment, their hearts were pounding in astonishment. They had the impression they had made a mistake. They had missed something great!

"Disciples who respect Tiantai, who never betrayed Tiantai, have a very important position in my heart. No matter how strong they are, no matter how talented, they will all be rewarded," said Lin Feng calmly. The members of Tiantai all looked happy, and clenched their fists in joy. They felt even more determined for remaining loyal.

Lin Feng was back and finally, Tiantai was going to change again. Lin Feng could talk to a Saint as an equal. Everything changed. He even dared say he could destroy the Celestial Martial Dynasty!

To Lin Feng, a Saint's Weapon wasn't much anymore. However, he hoped that Tiantai would become extremely powerful. He had great affection for the other direct disciples of Tiantai, as well. He hoped Tiantai would have no more problems in the future. He wanted to show everyone that Tiantai couldn't be offended, and he wanted to help all his friends rise.

“Brother Lin Feng, I’m a member of Tiantai too, do you have a gift for me?” Ling asked Lin Feng. Her eyes were twinkling.

“When we go back, you can choose something,” Lin Feng agreed.

“Awesome!” Ling grinned.

“Alright, it’s the great emperors’ competition now,” said the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty indifferently. All the great emperors walked up to the stage. A young man appeared at the foot of the stage. He raised his head and looked at Lin Feng, smiling broadly.

“Teacher,” said Ye Chen with a smile. He looked very happy to see his teacher.

“Xiao Chen, do your best. But stay safe, don’t risk your life,” said Lin Feng smiled. He waved and some strength surrounded Ye Chen, “Go now.”

“I will do my best,” Ye Chen nodded. He didn’t feel relaxed at all. His teacher was there, he felt even more pressured. He wanted to finish among the best cultivators, otherwise, it would be a humiliation for his teacher. He was very nervous.

“Because you’re here, Xiao Chen will be even more worried, he will be nervous because of the rankings,” said Mu Chen to Lin Feng, understanding what was going on.

“He must listen to his heart,” replied Lin Feng calmly.

—————

The Fire Shrine...

A woman was standing in front of a stone stage. In front of her were a few Saints. Since there were many problems in the continent, many groups had called their Saints come back. Shrines had many Saints, even if people seldom saw them.

“I’ve got news. Lin Feng is in Dark Clouds in the Holy City. He’s sly. Even if the Fortune Shrine supports him, he must die. I have

some people watching him, we know where he usually goes. He won't be able to escape this time," said the woman calmly. All the Saints understood why she made such great efforts to find Lin Feng: because of Qiong Yu!

"Lin Feng's real body is not weak, and could even be called strong. He's a low-level Saint, but he's soon going to become a medium-level Saint. I'm not sure you can easily kill him. All of you are heroes of the Qiong Clan. This time, I need people who can go to the lower world to kill Lin Feng," said the woman, glancing at the Saints. These people were all heroes of the Fire Shrine, and high-level Saints. She couldn't give orders to people stronger than that even if her social position was very high.

The Qiong Clan was a powerful clan of the Fire Shrine, and they had many contacts. These Saints were from her clan.

"I don't want the Fire Shrine to send people straightforwardly to kill Lin Feng, because we have to make sure Qiong Yu is safe," said the woman. Other people from the Fire Shrine might killed Lin Feng straight off, without caring about Qiong Yu.

"I'll go. Tian Ruo Jian and the others aren't there this time. Killing Lin Feng should be easy," said Qiong Lin icily. He was the one who had captured Zhe Tian the previous time.

"Alright, I'll leave it to you then," said the woman, smiling at Qiong Lin. "Thank you!"

Qiong Lin nodded. His task was to get Qiong Yu back alive, safe and sound!

Chapter 2414: Bestial Saints' Help

Lin Feng was in the bleachers, watching the young people battle. He felt enthusiastic. It reminded him of his youth. Back in the days, he was also on battle stages quite often. Now, things had changed, and he would never be on a battle stage to compare his strength with other people again.

“As expected, Xiao Chen is having a hard time, but he’s ready to risk his life,” sighed Mu Chen.

“Little Lin Feng is back, so that little boy doesn’t want to disgrace his teacher. That’s why he’s ready to take risks. I’m afraid he will deteriorate quickly,” said Emperor Yu. As expected, just as he finished talking, Ye Chen was struck hard. He was injured, hurled away, and blood splashed. He crashed to the ground.

“You lost. Go now,” said Ye Chen’s opponent. He knew Ye Chen was from Tiantai, so he didn’t dare act too arrogantly. He had seen Lin Feng a moment before. He wanted to give them face.

“I lost.” Ye Chen pulled a long face and came over to Lin Feng. He lowered his head and said, “Teacher, I’m sorry, I made you lose face.”

“Come here,” said Lin Feng, smiling. He didn’t care about those things.

Ye Chen walked over to Lin Feng, he didn’t dare look at him. He felt ashamed.

“Little boy, how could I say anything about that. So many years have passed, and I haven’t had time to teach you. I feel guilty,” said Lin Feng. He released life Qi, which surrounded Ye Chen and quickly healed him.

Very quickly, Ye Chen felt rejuvenated. He raised his head and said, “Teacher, don’t say that, I’m the one who’s useless.”

“Don’t feel bad. Come here, sit in front of me and watch the

battles. Learn from them,” said Lin Feng smiled. Ye Chen understood that Lin Feng truly didn’t mind, but that made him feel even more guilty.

—

The battles continued. Lin Feng sensed something approaching. He raised his head, his eyes narrowing.

Danger is approaching, he thought. He had practiced the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique for a while already, and he could sense and predict things. It was a very strange sensation. It wasn’t like when he had talked to the Saint of the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique. This time, a terrifying danger lurked.

If I sense danger, it means there’s a high-level Saint. Their original strength has already reached the maximum level, so I can’t compete with them. I’ll need to borrow the strength of the Star World again, he thought. He considered several things. The Shrines wanted him to die, especially the Fire Shrine...

Lin Feng suddenly remembered the woman, Qiong Yu’s mother. She had mentioned the Holy City in the past, Qi Tian Holy Town, his friends... so was the Celestial Martial Dynasty a group which had been created by the woman to settle in the Holy City?

It was absolutely possible. A low-level Saint had appeared in the Holy City. For the lower world, that was very surprising. They had started watching everything in the city, very strange behavior...

“Ling, go back to your father,” said Lin Feng. He was still holding her in his arms. He nodded and went back to Mu Chen.

“Teachers, I need to leave my body for a few minutes, don’t let anyone disturb me,” Lin Feng told Mu Chen and Emperor Yu telepathically.

They were both surprised, but nodded and replied, “Alright.”

Lin Feng closed his eyes, and after a few seconds, he appeared in the star world.

“Master Ox!” he called out. He disappeared and reappeared in front of the old Ox.

“What’s going on?” the old Ox asked Lin Feng.

“Master Ox, I think some high-level Saints are coming for me, I need some help,” said Lin Feng.

The ox said to Lin Feng, “At your cultivation level, you cannot compete with high-level Saints, indeed. However, I told you, I can’t help you in the outside world. You need to ask those beasts if they are willing to help you. One is enough. Try and convince one of them.”

“One is enough?!” Lin Feng was astonished. The old Ox sounded very confident. He knew the beasts were incredibly strong.

Lin Feng had seen how strong the nine low-level bestial Saints were. They were just medium-level Saints. The high-level bestial Saints were even more terrifying. They were the god’s beasts, but they were proud, too. Convincing them to help would be very complicated.

“I’ll try,” said Lin Feng. He disappeared and reappeared in front of an ocean of stars. The nine high-level bestial Saints were there.

“Everybody!” shouted Lin Feng. The beasts ignored him. Their eyes were closed, as if he didn’t exist.

“I know that you’ve been imprisoned in this world for a very long time, and that the god is not here. I know you don’t want to submit to anyone, especially me, the new master of this world, and I’m very weak in comparison with you. I know all this,” said Lin Feng calmly. “Now, I will give you an opportunity, if anyone agrees to help me, when I become a high-level Saint, I’ll give you the opportunity to challenge me. If you win, I’ll release you and you’ll be free.”

When Lin Feng said that, they suddenly opened their eyes and looked at Lin Feng. He sensed a terrifying bestial Qi fill the air.

“Really?” asked one of the bestial Saints. Lin Feng was proud. When I become a high-level Saint, I’ll give you the opportunity to challenge me. That was an opportunity? Wasn’t he just trying to get them to react?

“Master Ox can tell you I am a man of my word,” replied Lin Feng indifferently.

“Are you sure you want to do that?” the old Ox asked Lin Feng telepathically.

“Yes,” Lin Feng nodded. He asked, “Master Ox, which one is the weakest one of them?”

“You made up your mind. Even if you choose the weakest one, it’s indeed enough. But let me warn you, in the future, when you become a high-level Saint, even the weakest one will easily be able to defeat you, if not kill you,” said the old Ox.

“I already made up my mind,” said Lin Feng.

“The gigantic one, he’s an ancient golden ape. You can choose him,” said the old Ox telepathically.

“Thank you very much, Master,” replied Lin Feng nodded.

The nine beasts said, at the same time, “I agree to help you this one time, and then I’ll challenge you when you become a high-level Saint!”

“Thank you very much, everybody,” Lin Feng smiled. He looked at the gigantic golden ape and said, “Master, please help me this time.”

“Alright, only once,” said the gigantic golden ape. He shrank down in size, only as tall as Lin Feng. His Qi now looked ordinary. “Take me out.”

“Yes,” Lin Feng agreed.

—

In the outside world, Lin Feng opened his eyes. Mu Chen and

Emperor Yu were startled when someone appeared behind Lin Feng. He looked composed, but also unfathomable and enigmatic.

“Little Lin Feng?” Emperor Yu inquired warily.

“Teacher, continue watching the battles,” Lin Feng smiled. The Celestial Emperors were fighting at that moment. It was almost the end of the ceremony. After them, the Saint Emperors would fight.

“Little Lin Feng, for the Saint Emperors’ battles, most of the fighters will be patriarchs themselves,” said Mu Chen.

“Who will fight for Tiantai?” asked Lin Feng.

“An old friend of yours,” Mu Chen smiled. Lin Feng was surprised... an old friend of his?

Chapter 2415: Saint's Arrival

Lin Feng had convinced the golden ape, a high-level bestial Saint, to help him. He didn't feel he was in danger. Since he could solve the issue easily, he continued watching the battles.

After that, the Celestial Martial Dynasty sent forth a fighter. Lin Feng was startled, he knew that fighter.

Back then, during the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List, there was a giant: Shi Yun Feng! He was now a member of the Celestial Martial Dynasty.

Shi Yun Feng was a Saint Emperor now. He was very strong, having reached the very top of the Sheng Di Layer. If the Holy City hadn't changed so much in the previous years, a Saint Emperor would have been considered a terrifying cultivator. The Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List hadn't taken place too long ago, and Shi Yun Feng had already become really strong.

Back then, Lin Feng remembered everybody used to say that those who did well at the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List were going to become great cultivators... and it was true. All those people were very talented and continued rising.

"Shi Yun Feng, back then, during the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List, you weren't as strong as me, and now you will still be weaker than me," a voice proclaimed. A Buddhist monk walked forwards. It was Dou Zhan Seng, now a strong cultivator of the Canaan Buddhist Clan. He was also a Saint Emperor at the top of the Sheng Di Layer. Back in the days, at the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List, he had ranked better than Shi Yun Feng.

"Lin Feng, it's a pity that you're not fighting today, I wonder how strong you are, and Chu Chun Qiu..." said Dou Zhan Seng, looking at the members of Tiantai. Those people were now so strong.

“Watching an old friend fight is a great opportunity, too,” Lin Feng smiled.

At that moment, someone shouted, “Lin Feng, old buddy! You came back, and you didn’t tell me!”

A strong cultivator arrived as a strong wind started blowing. He was topless. Lin Feng grinned, “Tantai, couldn’t you put on some clothes?”

“Hehe, I like being topless!” said Tantai. He looked straightforward and good-natured as usual. He landed on the battle stage. “Now that Lin Feng is not participating, I’ll finish first!”

“We’ll see if you’re strong enough!” said Dou Zhan Seng.

“Ancestor, how strong is the cultivator of Champion University?” Lin Feng asked Ancestor Shi Tian.

“Those guys are extraordinarily talented. They’re as strong as me. Some of them are even stronger than me. Champion University has some incredible geniuses; you killed Ji Chang, and now nobody can compete with those people,” Ancestor Shi Tian sighed. Some incredible people came from Champion University; some of them had died or joined the Celestial Martial Dynasty when the Holy City had become chaotic.

“Alright,” said Lin Feng nodding, “I owe Champion University, but some things must be changed in Champion University, too. Ancestor Zhu Tian, you’re very strong, why don’t you fight personally for the university?”

Ancestor Zhu Tian’s face stiffened, and he blushed. He hadn’t thought Lin Feng would come back. Since Lin Feng had come back, he had remained silent, saying absolutely nothing. But Lin Feng had heard him before arriving...

Some people were incredibly important in Lin Feng’s life: his wives, his teachers, his fellow disciples. In the past, Ancestor Zhu Tian was relatively respectful, but now, he had humiliated Lin

Feng's teachers, and was very impolite. Lin Feng couldn't accept that. He didn't want to do anything against Champion University, he owed them, but he had to do something about Ancestor Zhu Tian.

"Lin Feng, you're a student of Champion University, why don't you fight for it?" said Ancestor Zhu Tian. He felt embarrassed, but he was an elder. Lin Feng wasn't being polite to him.

"Me?" Lin Feng smiled. Ancestor Zhu Tian looked at Lin Feng and suddenly, he had the impression everything around him had become darkness and death.

"You said me?" said a voice in his head.

Ancestor Zhu Tian shouted quickly, "No, let me off!"

Everything became normal again. Lin Feng was just looking at him and smiling indifferently. Ancestor Zhu Tian was covered with cold sweat, his face as white as a sheet of paper. He looked like he had almost died. Everybody was staring at him.

"What's wrong, Ancestor?" asked Lin Feng. However, he sounded a bit cold.

Ancestor Zhu Tian lowered his head, he didn't dare look at Lin Feng. How could Lin Feng be so strong?

A Saint. Lin Feng had to be a Saint. Ancestor Zhu Tian's heart was pounding violently. A moment before, the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty had talked to him as equals, he had hoped that he was talking that way because he was a disciple of the Fortune Shrine.

But now his hopes were ruined. Lin Feng was a Saint. He was as strong as the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty. How could he go onto the battle stage?

"Ancestor, you shouldn't bully people who are weaker than you," said Lin Feng indifferently. He didn't look at him anymore. The other Ancestors also noticed it, but they all remained silent. Lin

Feng was back. Saints talked to him as equals, and Ancestor Zhu Tian had infuriated him. The other Ancestors decided to let nature take its course. After all, Lin Feng and Champion University's relations were deep. They didn't want that to change. They didn't want Lin Feng to hold a grudge against Champion University, either.

The battles started. At that level, things were completely different. There was no group battle, only one on ones. It would have been too destructive otherwise.

“Shi Yun Feng understands stone Dao. His defense and attacks are terrifying. When he becomes a Saint, it will probably become earth original strength...” murmured Lin Feng, watching Shi Yun Feng fight. When becoming a Saint, a cultivator's strengths all had to turn into original strength. Stone Dao became earth original strength. And to understand earth original strength, a cultivator had to understand several sorts of Dao intent of the same type, such as stone, mud, heavy, sand etc.

Dou Zhan Seng was also very strong. He was a Buddhist monk, and his attacks were terrifying. He was like Kong Ming, his defense and attacks were terrifying, too. He's stronger than Shi Yun Feng, thought Lin Feng.

He could see everything. Finally, it was Tantai's turn. Tantai's tribe controlled one type of strength: explosion strength. Their strength became more and more explosive with time. It was a special kind of strength. Tantai also understood soundwave Dao now, and he had an advanced understanding of it.

Time passed, and the battles continued. The sun gradually set. The evening sun illuminated the battle stage, the atmosphere was different.

Tantai won against Shi Yun Feng, but he lost against Dou Zhan Seng. Dou Zhan Seng really reminded Lin Feng of Kong Ming.

Finally, the battles ended: Dou Zhan Seng finished first, Tantai finished second, Shi Yun Feng finished third.

“Brilliant,” said the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty standing up and applauding. He said, “Alright, the battles are over. The top three cultivators can join the Celestial Martial Dynasty and become my disciples if they wish.”

When the Saint said that, many people were astonished. For the different leagues, most of the time there were members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, the Canaan Dynasty, and Tiantai in the top three. Those people weren’t really going to leave their groups, especially since Lin Feng had come, so Tiantai was now at the same level as the Celestial Martial Dynasty.

“Nobody is willing to become my disciple?” said the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty looking at Lang Yan and Tantai. “You two, you better become my disciples.”

“Eh?” The crowd was astonished, the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty was provoking Tiantai even though Lin Feng was there.

Lin Feng didn’t find it strange, he found it very normal.

“Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, you think you’re good enough to be my teacher?” said Tantai icily. The Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty was humiliating Tiantai.

“Good enough?” the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty smiled. “You’re ignorant like a frog in a well. Don’t you know that Saints are also divided into different levels: Half-Saints, low-level Saints, high-level Saints, peerless Saints. Before we came, there wasn’t a single Saint in the Holy City. Becoming a Saint is extremely difficult. And me, I’m a low-level Saint, and you’re saying I’m not good enough to become your teacher?”

The crowd was astonished, he was a low-level Saint which meant he was a level two Saint!

“I’ll give you an opportunity now. If you refuse, you’ll fall with Tiantai if anything happens,” said the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty indifferently. Everybody’s heart started pounding. Was Tiantai going to be destroyed?

“Nonsense,” said Lang Yan coldly.

“Nonsense?” The Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty smiled icily. Some Saint’s strength filled the air, and the atmosphere became oppressive. Everybody had the impression they were suffocating. Then, they saw a group of people in the sky. They were flying so high, they looked like gods.

“Saints, they’re all Saints!” The crowd was trembling in fear!

Chapter 2416: Killing

To the inhabitants of the Holy City, a group of Saints was a terrifying and astonishing thing to see. Their hearts were racing.

“Lin Feng!” proclaimed a voice which sounded like thunder, and made people’s bodies shake even more.

“Lin Feng, they’re here for Lin Feng! It proves that the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty knew that!” The people trembled even more. This group of Saints didn’t come in peace.

“Lin Feng, get ready to escape,” said Mu Chen and Emperor Yu. They were both grimacing. Even though they didn’t know how strong these people were, they could sense how terrifying they were, and they wanted to kill Lin Feng.

At that moment, Lin Feng raised his head, he looking completely unperturbed. He looked at the leader of the group: Qiong Lin, from the Fire Shrine. Back then, he had captured Zhe Tian and imprisoned him.

One high-level Saint, three low-level Saints, five Half-Saints, they really overestimated me, he thought. If the Fire Shrine had managed to get a high-level Saint to come for Lin Feng, it meant they took the issue extremely seriously. It was Dark Clouds, so even if Lin Feng contacted the Fortune Shrine or Tian Ruo Jian, they wouldn’t be able to arrive within a short time. The Fire Shrine couldn’t know that Lin Feng had obtained something great in the Godly Grave, though. He now possessed the star-studded sky world and the Star God had transmitted his knowledge to him.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, asking, “You’re a member of the Fire Shrine?”

“Lin Feng, I’m not from the Fire Shrine, they just hired me to watch Tiantai and gather information about you. Regarding the Holy City, I’m happy here. The Qi is good. You can’t escape

anymore, so my mission will soon be over,” said the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty calmly. People around were astonished; so that’s how things were... the Shrines wanted to kill Lin Feng, and the Celestial Martial Dynasty was there to spy on him!

Why did the Shrines, who controlled the world, want to kill Lin Feng? What had he done to them?

The crowd looked at the group of Saints in the sky in awe and veneration. Not only were those people Saints, but they were also members of Shrines!

“If you release Qiong Yu, apart from you, we will not bear recriminations against other people,” Qiong Lin stated loudly. He looked imposing and awe-inspiring.

Lin Feng smiled coolly. “I see, so the Shrine wants to attack ordinary people again?”

“It all depends on you,” said Qiong Lin coldly.

“Is that so?” said Lin Feng. He had a knowing smile on the corner of his mouth. He waved and said, “Teachers, move away.”

“Little Lin Feng.” Mu Chen, Emperor Yu, and the others looked extremely worried. Lin Feng wanted to fight against a Shrine? How could he?

“Move away. I can solve the issue,” said Lin Feng calmly. Mu Chen and the others were astonished, but they nodded and moved away. Lin Feng said, “As long as I’m not dead, if you touch any of my friends, I’ll kill Qiong Yu atrociously.”

“Since you want to die so much, I will help you.” The Saints were in line. The crowd was terrified. One glance, and those people could kill all of them instantly.

“Let’s see how you intend to kill me,” Lin Feng said to Qiong Lin.

Qiong Lin flashed forwards. He was a high-level Saint, and fighting against Lin Feng was easy. The reason why he had brought

the others was just to be sure, in case something unexpected happened.

A beam of light streaked across the sky, it looked like a shooting star. The sky started burning instantly. The ground under Lin Feng's feet started crackling, turning into an ocean of magma and flames, and his enemy hadn't even arrived yet.

Something shattered with a sharp and clear note. The person who was standing behind Lin Feng without saying anything finally moved. He grew to a gigantic size and turned into a golden beam of light. He roared furiously, his voice turned into a powerful soundwave strength which blew away any incoming energies.

The flames exploded and disappeared. The crowd saw a gigantic golden ape behind Lin Feng, dozens of zhang tall. The air thrummed with the presence of a supreme beast. The atmosphere crackled when he breathed!

Qiong Lin was extremely fast. He had landed in front of Lin Feng in the blink of an eye, but at that moment, he started shaking. A gigantic hand swept towards him. The five fingers looked like mountains!

The crowd was astonished. That cultivator was there to protect Lin Feng, and was horrifyingly strong.

All the bleachers and the fighting stage all exploded. Buildings hundreds of li away blew apart. Many strong cultivators exploded instantly, too. Their souls exploded, unable to stand the pressure.

When Saints fought, it was an apocalypse for normal people!

A terrifying metallic sound spread in the air, Qiong Lin was smashed backwards. The gigantic golden hand continued moving towards him.

"Who are you, Your Excellency?" shouted Qiong Lin desperately. He was afraid. A terrifying heavy strength oppressed him.

Nobody answered. The gigantic hand continued moving towards

him. He felt powerless.

How strong!, thought the crowd on the ground. How could that ape be so strong? Qiong Lin was already incredibly strong, but that ape could force him back in the blink of an eye. How incredible! And even though Qiong Lin retreating desperately, the gigantic hand continued closing on him.

Qiong Lin released as much fire strength as he could. He was now bathing in flames, his fire original strength turned the atmosphere around him into an explosive ocean of flames.

“Break!” shouted Qiong Lin, releasing a sun to collide with the gigantic hand. An incredible explosion covered the sky.

And the gigantic golden ape’s hand grabbed Qiong Lin.

“What should I do with him?” the gigantic golden ape asked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng’s heart was pounding. No wonder the old Ox was so confident. Those beasts were much, much stronger than he had imagined. The golden ape controlled several sorts of original strength, all at the maximum level. He was a terrifying high-level Bestial Saint!

“Kill!” Lin Feng said firmly. The ape crushed Qiong Lin in his hand, crackling sounds spread out. He drew his hand back and looked at the arm sticking out of his closed hand. The ape growled ferociously.

“No!...” Qiong Lin shouted desperately. He was devastated. He released strength while shouting, but gradually, his voice grew more and more faint. When the ape opened his hand, only a few threads of fire Qi were left, Qiong Lin had disappeared.

“Pfew...” The crowd was astonished and took a deep breath. That was a truly terrifying Saint. He could kill a Saint without moving; he could shout and kill gigantic groups of people...

The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine were astonished. Lin

Feng had a protector who was a peerless Saint. Qiong Lin was a high-level Saint, and had been killed in the blink of an eye.

The members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, Tiantai, and Champion University were astonished too.

At that moment, the gigantic figure shrank down again. The ape was now a mere three meters high, standing calmly behind Lin Feng. The crowd was just flabbergasted.

Lin Feng was back, and Saints could be killed?

Behind him was a terrifying Bestial Saint, Lin Feng had just said told him to kill, and his protector had killed that Saint from a Shrine!

Chapter 2417: Saint Lin Feng

The atmosphere became eerily silent. Everybody had suddenly forgotten about the grand ceremony.

The members of the Fire Shrine were staring at the gigantic ape behind Lin Feng, trembling now. They knew how strong Lin Feng was, unrivaled in his cultivation. They also knew how strong any high-level Saint was, especially high-level Saints from Shrines, and they were from the Fire Shrine. A high-level Saint had at least one kind of original strength at the maximum level, and Qiong Lin had been killed in one strike.

One strike, and Qiong Lin had died.

“Piss off now. Tell that woman that we’ll settle accounts. Don’t cause trouble to anyone else, or she will receive Qiong Yu’s corpse,” said Lin Feng icily.

The members of the Fire Shrine all grimaced. Lin Feng was telling them to piss off and was threatening them. The woman had sent such a big army, convinced they would manage to kill Lin Feng. However, nobody had thought such a thing would happen. Qiong Lin, a high-level Saint, had been killed because a terrifying cultivator protected Lin Feng. Could they kill Lin Feng now? They could already consider themselves lucky for not dying here!

“Let’s go,” said one of them. They quickly turned around and left. They had come looking dignified and majestic, they left in abject fear.

Many people were astonished. Saints had come looking dignified and majestic, many people had looked at them as if they were gods, and their strongest cultivator had promptly been killed.

And now Lin Feng had told them to piss off.

Everybody turned and looked at Lin Feng. What had Lin Feng gone through in the previous decades? How had he changed so

much? The crowd couldn't believe it. And who was that terrifying cultivator protecting him?

"Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint," said Lin Feng at that moment. He smiled icily. The Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint's face froze unnaturally.

"Brother Lin, you're extraordinary, as expected," said the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, smiling awkwardly. He didn't look as majestic as before. The golden ape behind Lin Feng could kill him effortlessly.

"Your Excellency, I vividly remember what you just said," smiled Lin Feng. The Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint's mouth twitched. He didn't know what to say. He was furious at the Fire Shrine. They hadn't been able to deal with Lin Feng. Of course, they hadn't known Lin Feng would be backed up by such a terrifying cultivator...

"Lin Feng, I'll tell you directly. If that Bestial Saint wants to kill me, I naturally can't do anything against him. That'd be my destiny. Anyway, that being the case, the Celestial Martial Dynasty is in the Holy City, and it won't change anything."

The Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty remained calm and continued, "Anyway, if that terrifying Bestial Saint kills me, what can I do?"

"You think too highly of yourself," said Lin Feng, smiling icily. He said calmly, "Since you say that, I'll give you an opportunity. It's the grand ceremony today, the younger disciples are all done fighting. You and me, let's fight."

"Eh?" The Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty was stunned. Lin Feng wanted to fight against him? He didn't know much about Lin Feng. He only knew he was very talented and that the Shrines wanted to kill him. But in any case, the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty had been a Saint for thousands of years. Even if he couldn't defeat Lin Feng, he was convinced Lin Feng wouldn't be

able to kill him. Only that golden ape posed a threat to him.

“Really?” asked the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty.

“Naturally,” said Lin Feng, flashing forwards. The crowd was astonished... Lin Feng wanted to challenge the Saint?

He was a low-level Saint. Lin Feng had disappeared for decades, he couldn't be a low-level Saint... he was definitely a Half-Saint, right?

Everybody was curious. They thought that Lin Feng dared act like that because he was a member of the Fortune Shrine, and the Fortune Shrine protected him. They didn't think that Lin Feng had become a Saint in just a few decades. But Lin Feng was challenging the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty!

“Alright,” said the Saint, slowly walking forwards. It felt like the earth and the sky were on the verge of freezing.

“Let's see how strong a genius of the Fortune Shrine is!” said the Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, staring at Lin Feng. He sounded cold and detached. He flashed forwards as everything froze around him. A layer of ice appeared around Lin Feng's body, and he felt his soul start to freeze. Ice strength was trying to prevent him from releasing his own strength.

The Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint turned into a beam of light. His robe was covered by a layer of ice, glittering in the light. He threw himself at Lin Feng.

“Die!” A gigantic ice cauldron moved towards Lin Feng. The ice on the cauldron turned into threads of original ice strength. Each thread seemed like it could freeze a cultivator's soul.

“Slow!” Lin Feng released slow strength, and the threads of ice Qi slowed down, Lin Feng could see them more distinctly. He could also see the Saint's movements more clearly.

Lin Feng moved too, raising his finger and releasing absorbing strength. A dragon which absorbed everything in his way moved

towards the cauldron. The two sorts of original strengths collided and shattered.

Lin Feng was staring at his opponent. He looked enigmatic and unfathomable.

“Throne!” shouted the Celestial Martial Dynasty’s Saint loftily. An ice throne appeared and rotated around him. It contained king Qi.

“Go in,” said Lin Feng. The Celestial Martial Dynasty’s Saint sensed the world around him turn into an illusion. Everything around him turned into darkness.

“Celestial Life Peeling,” said Lin Feng coldly. The Celestial Martial Dynasty’s Saint was horrified as he sensed his life being peeled off.

“How is this possible? My King Dao Qi!” The Saint was astonished. He had a king-type body, he had a king life, his Qi was more powerful, he was extremely strong and talented. And yet, Lin Feng was peeling off his King Dao!

As expected, the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique is terrifying. Not only do I sense what might happen in the future, but I can also use it to kill people by destroying their destiny, thought Lin Feng. It was one of the last things he had studied, but it was also one of the things he had studied for the longest time, decades. He only understood the basics so far.

“I’m done playing with you,” said Lin Feng indifferently. He pointed at the Celestial Martial Dynasty’s Saint, and moved in a blur of motion. He condensed fast strength in his hand and accelerated, moving so fast it was impossible to follow him with the eye.

And the Celestial Martial Dynasty’s Saint was still affected by the slow strength.

Playing with me? The Celestial Martial Dynasty’s Saint pulled a

long face. He had been a low-level Saint for so many years, and Lin Feng said he was playing with him?

A million death stamps turned into hell and surrounded him. The Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint shouted furiously, his throne of ice was behind him, he looked like an ice king.

A terrifying sword Qi moved towards him. It was Lin Feng's Ruler's Sword. The throne exploded, and the ice as well.

"Piss off!" shouted the Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint. He raised his hand and released ice original strength. He wanted to freeze Lin Feng.

"Absorb!" Lin Feng's fist collided with his hand, turned into a vortex and absorbed his king Qi. The Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint's face turned deathly pale as he stared at Lin Feng. He hadn't thought he would feel so weak against Lin Feng.

"And you dared act arrogantly in front of me," said Lin Feng icily. He looked at the Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint disdainfully. These days, Lin Feng released attacks with all his body parts, his eyes, his hands... It was difficult to defend against him. Lin Feng controlled so many sorts of original strength, he could attack without really probing. Attacking was natural for him.

The Celestial Martial Dynasty's Saint was being attacked from all sides, and his Qi was being absorbed. He was being absorbed in Lin Feng's vortex... and then he disappeared into it entirely.

"How is that possible?" The members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty were astonished and terrified. A Saint had just been absorbed?

Lin Feng rolled up his sleeves and slowly walked back to the members of Tiantai. He looked like a peerless and aggressive cultivator. The crowd realized that Lin Feng wasn't a gentle young man anymore. He had become almost peerless. He had become a

real king!

Lin Feng looked like a real king; he was Saint Lin Feng!

Chapter 2418: I Won't See Anyone!

The crowd was even more astonished than when the gigantic golden ape had killed Qiong Lin, a high-level Saint. Lin Feng had disappeared dozens of years. When he had left, he was still a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer! He had dazzled during the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List, then he had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He had come back and destroyed some Ancient Holy Clans, but the crowd mainly remembered Lin Feng as a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer, and later as a great emperor.

A few decades was nothing to become a Saint. Saints were legendary cultivators, and especially a level two Saint. The inhabitants of the Holy City didn't even dare imagine that, but Lin Feng had done it. Lin Feng had just killed a low-level Saint in front of them, not to mention a Saint who was at the top of a powerful group in the Holy City, the Celestial Martial Dynasty!

The Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty was dead, so the Celestial Martial Dynasty would probably collapse at some point. The crowd looked at Lin Feng and at the members of Tiantai.

Tiantai was going to continue rising.

When a man attains the Tao, even his pets ascend to Heaven. Lin Feng had attained enlightenment, so Tiantai rode on his success, too.

The golden ape was surprised, he hadn't thought that Lin Feng was so strong. This guy had managed to become the new leader of the Star World, he didn't have an undeserved reputation...

Mu Chen, Emperor Yu, and the others were stunned, gaping at Lin Feng. They had never thought Lin Feng would be so talented, he had changed so quickly...

"Little Lin Feng, I'm really surprised..." said Mu Chen, taking a

deep breath.

“Indeed, I still remember everything we went through: the Qi Tian Peak, the meeting of the emperors. Back then he made a great show of your talents, and then we came to the great world, and continued being oppressed. However, Little Lin Feng continued rising, he became stronger and stronger. Back then, I still didn’t think he’d become a Saint so quickly. I hadn’t thought a Saint would appear in Tiantai, to be honest.” Emperor Yu was astonished. His disciple was a Saint? It was like a dream!

“I want to be like my teacher,” said Ye Chen, clenching his fists. He felt so weak.

“Uncle Lin Feng is so strong!” Lang Yan was astonished and pleasantly surprised. Tiantai was so lucky!

The crowd forgot all about the Celestial Martial Dynasty and their grand ceremony.

I never thought Lin Feng would already be so strong, sighed Dou Zhan Seng. He was proud and talented, but he felt like an insect in front of Lin Feng.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty. He said calmly, “I don’t care about the Celestial Martial Dynasty. However, I will destroy all those who betrayed Tiantai.”

All the members of the Celestial Martial Dynasty shook. They felt ridiculous, insignificant, and ashamed.

“Teachers, let’s go back,” said Lin Feng, smiling at Emperor Yu and Mu Chen.

“Go, back to Tiantai,” said Emperor Yu smiling. “Unfortunately, your fellow disciples are not here, otherwise, we would have a big party.”

“Yes, we’ll have other opportunities, though. We must do something together,” Lin Feng smiled. He looked at Ancestor Shi

Tian, “Ancestor, come to Tiantai with us.”

“Alright,” said Ancestor Shi Tian, smiling and nodding along. Lin Feng’s social status was different now, he had become a king. He could now be more informal with the Ancestors. In the cultivation world, strength set the base for politeness and respect, not age. Of course, Lin Feng was usually polite, but he didn’t feel awkward or embarrassed, either.

Some people were embarrassed and felt awkward at that moment, though, such as Ancestor Zhu Tian...

The atmosphere in Tiantai was great and lively. Mu Chen, Emperor Yu, Lin Feng, Tantai, Yun Qing Yan, Qin Wu, Ye Chen, Lang Yan, and many others were all together at the heart of Tiantai. Ancestor Xuan Tian, Ancestor Shi Tian, and the others didn’t have assigned seats, so they sat wherever they wanted. Everybody was chatting happily.

“Lin Feng, how did you practice cultivation and become a Saint?” asked Yun Qing Yan. Her eyes were twinkling. She was curious.

“Just like that,” said Lin Feng, shrugging and laughing.

“Tell us about Saints then. We’ve never met Saints before, we’ve never properly chatted with one. We don’t even know what kind of strength Saints control,” said Yun Qing Yan.

“Yes, Lin Feng, please tell us about Saints. We’ve been Saint Emperors for so long, and we’re not able to transcend worldliness and attain holiness. Maybe the only person of Champion University who became a Saint was the founder. He didn’t write anything about it, though,” said Ancestor Shi Tian. He was curious, too.

“Alright,” Lin Feng agreed. “You all know what it’s like to be a great emperor. However, to become a Saint, you must understand what Celestial Dao is. That kind of strength can’t be studied

formally, you must transcend worldliness to understand. When you understand it, you have the impression you have returned to your true self, you are one with nature, and your body becomes nature. Then, when you fuse strength together with Celestial Dao, it creates a Saint's technique. That way, you create your own Saint's techniques. That's when you become a proper Half-Saint, and when you transcend worldliness and attain holiness.

“When you're a Half-Saint and want to become a low-level Saint, you need to understand one sort of original strength: gold, wood, water, fire, earth, death, soundwave, and so forth. Anything is possible. Cosmic energy and Dao are original strengths, and Celestial Dao is a more advanced version of those. You understand when you have an advanced comprehension and knowledge of energies. Heavy strength and oppressive strength and earth strength all belong to the same category, earth original strength. Ice strength, frost strength, and rain strength all belong to the same category as well: water original strength. When you understand one type, you can carry out terrifying attacks, you can fuse original strength together with Celestial Dao. When you manage to do that, you become a low-level Saint.

“The Saint of the Celestial Martial Dynasty understood a water-type original strength, ice and frost strength. He fused it together with Celestial Dao and that's how he created the ice throne. He could have easily killed a Half-Saint, but it was far from enough for him to become a high-level Saint. For that, your original strength must reach the maximum level. For example, you'd need to understand every earth-type strength to make your earth original strength reach the maximum level: heavy strength, oppressive strength, earth defense strength, and so on. Then, when you understand properly, your original strength reaches the maximum level. I haven't been able to do it yet.

“Regarding peerless Saints, it's even more complicated. Many high-level Saints understand many types of original strengths at

the maximum level and don't become peerless Saints like the golden ape. To become a peerless Saint, you must fuse special kinds of original strength together."

Everybody was carefully listening to Lin Feng. It was fascinating, he was telling them about legendary Saints. Making one type of original strength reach its maximum level sounded like something extremely difficult. Saints were not from the same world as them anymore.

"Teacher, when you made me dream and practice cultivation, was that intent original strength?" asked Lang Yan.

"Indeed," Lin Feng confirmed.

"No wonder. I could sense that my Dao had broken through, but I also knew that kind of strength in the dream was unreachable for me at the moment. I need to practice cultivation more. I hope I'll become as strong as you someday, Teacher."

"You will have opportunities," Lin Feng smiled. He looked at Mu Chen and Emperor Yu. "Teachers, Tiantai went through a lot this time. Please select some of Tiantai's disciples, people who are motivated, talented, loyal to Tiantai, and even if they're not very talented, some who are very determined, wise, and kind. I want to give give them a lecture. I want to help them."

Mu Chen was surprised, but nodded approvingly, "Alright, it'll definitely help them. Can we also attend your lecture?"

"You're flattering me, Teacher," said Lin Feng, smiling wryly. He definitely wanted to help his two teachers, but not by giving them a lecture. Even though his teachers were willing to attend, Lin Feng couldn't accept, he had the impression it was disrespectful.

"Lin Feng, we also want to attend your class," Ancestor Shi Tian said to Lin Feng.

"No problem, Ancestors," Lin Feng agreed.

"Lin Feng, Zhu Tian wants to come and apologize," said Ancestor

Shi Tian.

“He did it once already, but he’s petty and miserable. I am a student of Champion University, but I can’t tolerate seeing petty people at the top of the hierarchy in Champion University,” replied Lin Feng calmly.

The Ancestors were surprised, but not much. They nodded, “We understand.”

“I want to report something,” said someone at that moment. That person was standing at the gate.

“Speak!” replied Mu Chen.

“The new leader of the Celestial Martial Dynasty, as well as some founding members, are here with some people who betrayed Tiantai. They’re here to apologize,” said that person.

The crowd understood how the Celestial Martial Dynasty felt. They were afraid of Lin Feng. They even came to apologize!

They all looked at Lin Feng, and Lin Feng said, “I’m not seeing them. Just tell them three words: conduct yourselves well!”

“Yes!” replied the disciple. The crowd shuddered. Those who had betrayed Tiantai were probably going to go through hardships...

“Also, I heard that the Canaan Dynasty’s Saint wanted to come to pay you a visit,” said the disciple. The crowd shook again. A Saint wanted to come to pay them a visit?

“Tell them that I won’t receive guests for seven days. They can come in seven days and after,” said Lin Feng. The disciple bowed and left.

People were astonished. A Saint wanted to come and pay Lin Feng a visit, and Lin Feng just said he wouldn’t see anyone for seven days. How incredible!

The Ancestors of Champion University were astonished, too. If they hadn’t met Lin Feng when he was much weaker, they would

have never met him!

Chapter 2419: Lecture

In the central part of Tiantai was a field. Many disciples gathered there, they standing in two gigantic lines. Between them were praying mats. They all looked at a young man with admiration. He was wearing white clothes, he looked clean, calm, and composed.

However, everybody knew that that young man could kill low-level Saints easily. He had destroyed some Shrines' members, too. He had also refused to see a Saint because he was busy. He was a living legend. Now he was going to teach them some concepts, how incredible! One could well imagine how happy the crowd was.

I've heard that Brother Lang Yan received some knowledge from him, that's how he defeated Shi Xuan. He progressed a lot after receiving Teacher Lin Feng's transmissions. In a few seconds, he can probably make you progress more than you would in ten years by practicing really hard!, thought someone. Such opportunities were extremely rare.

"Sit down," said Lin Feng, smiling patiently. He didn't sound stuffy at all, rather amiable and casual, but the disciples were nervous. They all sat down on the praying mats and looked at Lin Feng.

"You all have different cultivation levels. You all practice different types of cultivation. I can't make a uniform lecture for you. However, I want to say a few things.

"When I started practicing cultivation, my cultivation level was much lower than yours. I started at the Qi layer. Back in the days, I admired cultivators. For me, cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and the Tian Qi layer were extraordinary cultivators. Such levels were out of reach for me. If I hadn't thought that way, I don't think I would have progressed at all. I would have never become a Tian level cultivator. But now I'm a Saint, what is the Tian Qi layer to me?" Lin Feng began calmly.

People were shaking. Indeed, they couldn't forget that Lin Feng used to be extremely weak back in the days. He had admired other people, too. Now he was much powerful than the people of the Tian Qi layer whom he had admired once.

“Don't think that you can't surpass me even if you are slow-witted. Never give up, grand talents mature slowly. Many people are slow-witted, but they still have good aptitudes, they practice slowly, but they can also become very strong. Talent is helpful until a certain point, that's all. Talent cannot determine which cultivation level you'll reach in your life, what does is your heart,” said Lin Feng. Many people felt extremely determined.

“Your heart, that's your intent. Your intent makes you unbreakable. You can bend, but not break. But you also need to be realistic, cultivation is something you do step by step. You must be determined to become better each day. Someday, you'll reach the end.”

“Pfew...” People were extremely excited, they all breathed quickly. Their hearts were pounding: reach the end!?

“Alright, I just wanted to tell you those things. If you have any question, you can ask me,” smiled Lin Feng. “Don't feel ill at ease, ask me anything.”

“Teacher!” said a bald young man standing up quickly. Everybody looked at him, he looked nervous and kept scratching his head, “Teacher, I'm so nervous, sorry. I am now a high-level emperor, I understand earth cosmic energy. However, I can't understand Dao, how do I understand Dao and how do I know which Dao is mine?”

Most people understood Dao when they were great emperors, but some talented and outstanding young people understood Dao when they were still emperors, like Lin Feng, Chu Chun Qiu, and Ji Chang had back in the days.

“Come here and use your best strength to attack me. Let me sense

your cosmic energies,” said Lin Feng to that young man.

He was surprised and nodded, “Teacher, I don’t want to be disrespectful.”

He bowed before Lin Feng and attacked him.

A powerful heavy strength moved towards Lin Feng. The bald young man’s fist became as heavy as a mountain, his strength was oppressive like an avalanche.

Of course, it couldn’t do anything to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng stood up and the bald young man sensed an oppressive strength surround him. It was painful.

His strength is a billion times more powerful than mine, it’s also a type of cosmic energy, thought the bald young man. Lin Feng moved towards him, surrounding him with the force of a landslide and the power of a tidal wave. It was as if the earth had oppressed him.

“Dao is an accumulation. To understand Dao, you must accumulate enough strength. You can’t just study and learn Dao like this. I first understood Life and Death Dao. I remember, when I understood Dao, I was on the battlefield of the Celestial Country. I killed many, many strong cultivators before understanding Dao. There were mountains of corpses around me. Other people can only give you pieces of advice regarding Dao, but they can’t help you find your Dao.”

Everybody listened to Lin Feng. As Lin Feng walked towards the young man, the strength became too oppressive, and he fell down on his butt. When the strength disappeared, he closed his eyes and visualized the strength Lin Feng had just used, the pure earth intent he had released.

“You’re worth teaching,” smiled Lin Feng. He walked back to his original seat. He had helped the bald young man sense the strength he studied, so now he had to study it on his own, Lin Feng couldn’t

study for him.

Teacher Lin Feng is teaching us personally, we have to seize this opportunity. It's extremely rare, realized many disciples.

"Teacher, I'm a low-level emperor, and I've been stuck at this level for a very long time. I can't break through. What to do?" asked someone, standing up.

"How long haven't you gone traveling?" asked Lin Feng.

"Two years."

"During those two years, you only practiced and meditated alone, and you haven't broken through?" asked Lin Feng.

"Indeed, I can't break through. I can sense my cosmic energies are powerful enough, though."

"Come here," said Lin Feng casually.

That student walked towards Lin Feng. Suddenly, Lin Feng moved like the wind; a terrifying strength surrounded that cultivator and corroded his intent. He had the impression he was going to die.

He didn't have time to react, but it was an opportunity too. If he were slightly stronger, he would be able to dodge!

"No..." shouted that student, furiously. Then, he moved with the wind, changing his position and releasing humming sword lights all around himself. But he still felt danger closing on him.

Another wave of Qi rolled towards him. It descended from the sky and moved towards his shoulders as fast as lightning.

"Wind!" That cultivator released wind strength and moved as fast as he could, but as soon as he dodged, more strength moved towards him. It didn't stop, strength kept attacking him. At the same time, he looked at Lin Feng, who was already seated on a praying mat.

“That’s...” The crowd was astonished. That disciple was fighting against nothing in a frenzy. He looked crazy.

“He has the impression he’s going to die.”

“It’s definitely an illusion, the goal is to unleash his full potential as if he were about to die.”

“The teacher is oppressing him, he has to dodge; if he doesn’t he will die.”

The crowd understood. The teacher wanted to see how long he would persevere. At that moment, the air hummed, and a stronger Qi rolled out. The crowd frowned.

“I... broke through.”

The illusion disappeared, and the disciple stopped awkwardly. His cosmic energies hummed around him. He was astonished as he understood what was happening to him. He bowed before Lin Feng and said, “Thank you very much, Teacher.”

“You understand now? asked Lin Feng.

“I understand. You oppressed me, but it wasn’t real. It just made me think I was going to die. I had only two options: surpass myself and break through, or die.”

“Indeed. Die, or break through. But to achieve that, you must have reached a certain level too, your cosmic energies had to be at the top already. This time, you only needed a little bit of pressure. To achieve that, you need to go out and travel. That’s why cultivators travel all the time, you need to fight against enemies to become stronger. Risking your life is often part of the game. That’s how you unleash your full potential, when your enemies oppress you.”

Everybody listened carefully. Lin Feng taught new things to everyone.

That lecture last for three days. However, for them, it felt as if

they had saved thirty years. Everybody was in awe of Lin Feng. It was incredible to spend time with a legendary cultivator. They would always respect him, they would never betray Tiantai, they owed Tiantai for this chance!

Chapter 2420: Flying to the Top!

After the lecture, Lin Feng gave his teachers many spells, skills, techniques, and weapons. He only gave them great ones. He even gave them some Saint's Weapons he had obtained after killing people.

“Little Lin Feng, those things are good because you're in Tiantai, but if you're not here, people will annihilate us for those items. Like when you gave Lang Yan a Saint's Weapon in front of everybody, that was scary. Do you really think it's a good thing for Lang Yan to have a Saint's Weapon?” asked Mu Chen, easily seeing the problem.

“Teacher, I understand what you mean. I also thought about that, that's why I gave Lang Yan a protective Saint's Weapon. He can't use it to attack, he can only use to protect himself. Most cultivators can't do anything to him. When I'm traveling, I will leave nine low-level Bestial Saints here to protect Tiantai. They will become Tiantai's protectors. I'm sure they'll be able to protect Tiantai for thousands of years, no matter what happens. High-level Saints are unlikely to come to the lower world.”

“Nine Bestial Saints as protectors!” Mu Chen and Emperor Yu were astonished, “Alright, indeed, nobody can do anything to Tiantai with such cultivators, unless Shrines come personally.”

“The Fire Shrine is the Shrine with which I have the most problems. I kidnapped a descendant of the Fire Shrine, that's why they don't dare try anything too risky. They will probably not try anything for the time being. In the future, if my relations with the Fire Shrine worsen, I will take care of Tiantai.”

“Alright, sounds like a plan,” said Mu Chen, smiling and nodding. “In less than a hundred years, Tiantai will become one of the strongest groups, I think.”

“Teacher, do you have any news from my fellow disciples?”

asked Lin Feng.

Mu Chen and Emperor Yu remained silent. Lin Feng looked at their expressions and asked, “What is going on, and what are you hiding from me, Teachers? Tell me. ”

“Little Lin Feng, Tian Chi is... hmm...” Mu Chen sighed.

Lin Feng’s face stiffened, “What’s wrong with him?!”

“There’s a Buddhist mountain in the Holy City, the legend says you need to climb up 99,999 steps to achieve enlightenment as a Buddhist cultivator. You’ve heard of that legend, right?”

“Indeed?” Lin Feng nodded. The first time he had arrived in the Holy City, Huang Fu Long and Tantai had told him about it. It was said that those who had needed the least time to get to the top had done it in three years, it was impossible to do it by flying. The cultivators who tried died. There was also another legend which said that there was a peerless Buddha at the top, but that many people who managed to get to the top became peerless demons.

Tian Chi had tried to climb up that mountain many times, he had also failed repeatedly.

“Tian Chi managed to get to the top. He didn’t become a Buddha, he became a demon. He came back once, kowtowed three times banging his head on the ground, then he said he had nothing to do with his teachers and fellow disciples anymore,” said Mu Chen. It was horrible for him to think about. Tian Chi was one of his direct disciples, like a son to him. Tian Chi used to be gentle and soft, and now he had become a demon, so he had decided to break off all ties.

“When did that happen?” Lin Feng asked grimly.

“Just before the Canaan Dynasty started rising. It is said that the rising of the Canaan Dynasty has something to do with the Buddhist Mountain,” said Mu Chen.

“Where is Tian Chi?” asked Lin Feng.

“I don’t know. I haven’t heard anything from him since he left. ”

Lin Feng frowned. He gazed into the distance and suddenly shouted, “Canaan Dynasty’s leader, hurry up and come to Tiantai to see me!”

Everybody in the Holy City heard his voice. The ground trembled at his words.

“Canaan Dynasty’s leader, hurry up and come to Tiantai to see me...”

—

His voice echoed for a long time. Many people raised their heads and shuddered in fear. That was probably Lin Feng’s voice, he was the only one who could shout so loudly and especially make the leader of the Canaan Dynasty come to Tiantai. Many people sighed; at that cultivation level, people seemed to belong to another world. Nothing could stop them.

As expected, after a short time, a group of people from the Canaan Dynasty arrived and stopped outside of Tiantai.

They didn’t land, someone directly said icily, “What is the Canaan Dynasty’s relationship with the Buddhist Mountain?”

Those people looked at Lin Feng in surprise. The leader of the group was the Saint, he was startled too. He had watched Lin Feng had directly kill the Celestial Martial Dynasty’s Saint during the grand ceremony, so he didn’t want to offend him.

“At the beginning, the Canaan Dynasty was the Canaan Buddhist Clan, then a disciple climbed up the mountain and obtained a Sutra. Then, he practiced really hard, and that’s what happened,” someone said to Lin Feng.

“You want to die!” shouted Lin Feng icily. A strong wind blew past and beheaded that person. Blood splashed, and he died instantly. The others’ faces turned deathly pale.

“If you continue lying, I’ll kill you all,” said Lin Feng icily. He said to the Saint, “Speak!”

The Saint tried to keep calm. He said to Lin Feng, “I’m the cultivator of the Buddhist Mountain he meant, then I came down, I went to the Canaan Buddhist Clan and I granted them many techniques. Then I changed their name.”

“You’re a Buddhist monk, you’re not a demon cultivator?” asked Lin Feng icily.

He looked startled and said, “Buddhism is demon cultivation.”

“Go. Bring me to the Buddhist Mountain,” said Lin Feng coldly.

The Saint said, “You want to walk up the mountain?”

“I want to fly straight to the top!” replied Lin Feng.

“You don’t respect the big Buddha,” said that person, smiling coldly.

“If Buddhism is demon cultivation, Buddhists need respect? Besides, if I’m strong enough, what is Buddha in front of me?” said Lin Feng aggressively. The crowd was trembling around them. Buddhism was demon cultivation? If I’m strong enough, what is Buddha in front of me?

“Since it’s that way, you and me will get to the top.” He rose up in the air and flew away. Lin Feng glanced at the members of the Canaan Dynasty icily and turned into a beam of light.

According to legends, to achieve Buddhist enlightenment, it was necessary to climb up the stairs. People who flew and landed at the top died. However, Lin Feng considered himself strong enough to fly straight to the top. He could kill low-level Saints easily, but what about the peerless Buddha of the legends?

Lin Feng didn’t care about legends?

—

In the Holy City, many people’s figures flickered. They flew

towards the Buddhist Mountain; was Lin Feng going to land at the top of the mountain?

The Buddhist Mountain was surrounded by water. People usually arrived by boat. At that moment, two figures were flying high up in the sky. The leader of the Canaan Dynasty stopped and said to Lin Feng, “I must stop here. If you can pass, I’ll follow you. ”

“Let’s see who’s purposely making a mystery of a simple thing and terrifying the inhabitants of the Holy City,” said Lin Feng, rolling up his sleeves. He didn’t believe in Buddha and demons, he just believed in strength. If a Buddha wasn’t strong, who would believe in them? At the top of the mountain, there had to be a strong cultivator. Lin Feng didn’t care about him, but this time his friend had a problem, so he had to help. His friend had even decided to break off ties with his friends and teachers, that was too strange...

A powerful energy filled the air and surrounded Lin Feng. Lin Feng was not surprised. As expected, Saint’s strength. No wonder nobody could fly to the top.

But now he had decided to break the rule.

Lin Feng continued walking slowly. The atmosphere was oppressive. Then, Buddha lights rolled out and Lin Feng heard someone chant a mantra in a magnificent Brahma voice. A peerless golden Buddha appeared. He kept chanting endlessly.

Many people raised their heads; as expected, there was a peerless Buddha protecting the mountain. Nobody had ever dared fly straight to the top, but Lin Feng dared!

Chapter 2421: Situation

Lin Feng raised his head and heard the Buddhist cultivator shout loudly. The atmosphere trembled. He had the impression his soul was going to explode. However, Lin Feng shouted out too, and the force of his voice dashed to the skies and collided with the Buddhist cultivator's loud shout.

However, it was just the beginning. After that, a gigantic ancient golden Buddha descended from the sky and oppressed everything. His hand blotted out the sky and bore down on Lin Feng. It felt like the earth and the sky were on the verge of collapse. What a domineering attack!

"Hmph!" Lin Feng grunted icily. He released sword strength, which streaked across the sky and destroyed the Buddhist hand imprint instantly.

The Brahma voice's sound waves continued rolling out in waves. Suddenly, Lin Feng was alone in an empty space and could only hear the Brahma voice. A hundred and eight Sakyamunis appeared and chanted mantras unceasingly. They wanted him to give up everything and die happily.

Lin Feng was disgusted by this kind of technique. Buddhist cultivators tried to kill people by making them give up, it was a horrible feeling.

Lin Feng disappeared. The hundred and eight Sakyamunis shot towards Lin Feng. He raised his hands.

"Slow!" said Lin Feng. Everything around him slowed down. At the same time, he released a terrifying sword intent which contained God strength, his manifesting speed was incredible. It was like he was merely releasing dazzling beam of lights. The ancient Buddhas exploded one after another.

They turned into a golden ocean, which rolled in waves towards

Lin Feng, the roar of the waves threatening to drown earth and sky. The mantra soundwave continued floating all around him.

Eh? Could it be that there's no peerless Buddha here? It seems like only the attacks of a peerless Buddha are left, but an actual person, thought Lin Feng. He didn't see his opponent at all. The attacks had definitely been created by a very strong cultivator, probably a high-level Buddha Saint, or the attacks he had left wouldn't have been so powerful.

Sword lights kept flashing around Lin Feng. He jumped into the golden ocean and continued walking.

Only Buddhist enlightenment could allow one to escape from the boundless sea of bitterness, but Lin Feng wasn't interested.

His figure flickered. The sea of bitterness was boundless, there were dazzling golden lights everywhere, corroding away. People from the outside couldn't see the top of the Buddhist mountain at all. Lin Feng and the ancient Buddha disappeared together.

Lin Feng traveled for days. He didn't turn around. He ended up in many illusions, but Lin Feng overcame every obstacle.

—

Lin Feng was still walking slowly. Finally, the sea of bitterness disappeared, and he finally landed at the top of the mountain.

"This the Buddhist mountain?" Lin Feng looked around, he was surprised.

He smiled icily; this was a Holy Place for Buddhist cultivators?

Bullshit! It was an evil and demonic place!

On the top of the mountain were several buildings. Some people came out of a building, all of them Buddhist monks. However, Lin Feng smiled icily when he saw them. They were wearing Buddhist clothes, but their demon Qi rolled in waves around them.

"I would have never thought that this place would be a sink of

inequity,” said Lin Feng calmly. “Where is Tian Chi?”

“I wouldn’t have thought someone would arrive by air. Unfortunately, you’re not a Buddhist cultivator,” sighed those people. “Your Excellency, please go back, you shouldn’t be here.”

“Who should come here, then?” asked Lin Feng.

“People who want to achieve Buddhist enlightenment.” replied that person.

“Why do people who want to achieve Buddhist enlightenment turn into demons?” asked Lin Feng.

“They achieve supreme enlightenment.”

“After they achieve supreme enlightenment, they don’t become Buddhas, they become demons, how ridiculous! Where’s Tian Chi?” asked Lin Feng. He didn’t have time to talk about this.

“There hasn’t been any Saint in the Holy City for a very long time, but Buddhist monks who come to the Buddhist Mountain become great Demon Buddhas and become Saints. Isn’t that supreme enlightenment?” asked that person, ignoring Lin Feng. They were all strong, all low-level Saints. If Lin Feng hadn’t come personally, he would have never known there were such strong cultivators here.

“Buddha? Demon?” Lin Feng looked furious. He took out his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, and demon strength suddenly rolled in waves. He suddenly looked like a peerless demon. He said icily, “If you continue making me waste my time, I’ll destroy the Buddhist Mountain!”

Those people were stupefied; this strong cultivator was a demon cultivator!

“Tian Chi is there,” said that person, pointing at a building. Lin Feng’s godly awareness rolled out, crackling sounds spread in the air. He entered the building and saw a cultivator with long black hair seated cross-legged.

The man suddenly opened his eyes and said, “Brother Lin Feng, what are you doing here?”

Lin Feng put his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation away and walked forwards. The ground under his feet shattered. He destroyed the building, and the demon cultivator appeared alone in front of Lin Feng. It was Tian Chi. He had completely changed, he looked like a demon now.

“Second fellow disciple.” Lin Feng was seething. Back in the days, Tian Chi used to smile all the time. Now, he had completely changed.

“You go back. I’m not your second fellow disciple anymore,” said Tian Chi indifferently. Lin Feng suddenly felt so sad to hear that. He was probably as sad as his teachers.

“Why?” asked Lin Feng.

“I don’t care about worldly affairs anymore. I only care about strength. In only a few dozens of years, I became a Saint. I’m becoming extremely strong,” said Tian Chi calmly.

“I will understand,” said Lin Feng, turning around. He landed in front of the flight of long stairs. There were ninety-nine thousand and nine hundred and ninety-nine steps on it.

Lin Feng moved like the wind and descended the flight of stairs. After a short time, he arrived at the foot of the flight of stairs. He looked up at the flight of stairs and started climbing it again. He wanted to see what people who went through that test experienced.

“Those who are not honest and serious can’t achieve enlightenment,” said a voice. Lin Feng didn’t care, he continued walking up. He could sense a strange strength, but the voice was right actually, without being completely honest, it was impossible to achieve enlightenment. However, Lin Feng was different, because he was stronger than the flight of stairs. Nothing could

stop him.

Thirty-three thousand and three hundred and thirty-three steps. People who make it here must be very honest and have faith, they believe. Buddhist cultivators are usually very determined and honest, my second fellow disciple is that kind of person too, thought Lin Feng.

He continued walking up. There were several tests as he walked up the stairs, illusions which tested his ambition, intent, honesty etc. He had to pass all the tests to get to the top. It wasn't an easy test, but Tian Chi had passed it long ago.

—

Lin Feng was on the sixty-six thousand and six hundred and sixty-sixth step. He was starting to experience Buddhist cultivators' lives in illusions. Those lives were all about faith. The only way to continue walking up was faith. Lin Feng was surprised by some illusions, too.

For example, a Buddhist monk had practiced compassion everyday, he had become incredible, he had created great skills to help people become compassionate and so on. He had recruited many disciples. Then, one day, he realized that the disciples he trusted the most had betrayed him. They had killed his family members and stolen his skills and techniques. How could people like that be considered Buddhist cultivators? The Buddha delivers all living creatures from suffering and torment?

Those illusions looked extremely real, like the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' lives. If someone who tried to climb up the stairs had any doubt, they couldn't get to the top anymore. Lin Feng could imagine how hard the exam was.

Lin Feng's heart was racing. He imagined how terrifying it was for people who got to the top and saw demon Qi: how devastated were they? Achieve supreme enlightenment? How cruel! How could people achieve supreme enlightenment like that?!

Chapter 2422: Buddhist Mountain's Leader

Lin Feng continued moving forwards. He saw all sorts of things. For Buddhist monks who had faith and who were determined, passing all those tests was a beautiful thing. But the one who had created that test wasn't a real Buddhist cultivator, he wanted to crush people's faith. That's why it was so cruel!

If someone firmly believes until the last minute, it must be even more horrible, thought Lin Feng. He continued climbing up the stairs. Finally, he arrived at the top, after experiencing someone's life. That life was a Buddhist monk's life. He had experienced love and hatred, but he abandoned everything to achieve enlightenment and, in the end, he lost everybody he loved, they died, and in the end, he had a miserable life.

When Lin Feng reached the last step, he heard a voice say, "Do you still believe?"

Hearing such a thing was shocking. Lin Feng took another step and arrived at the very top of the mountain, he sensed the demon Qi and heard, "Being a Buddhist in this world is useful if you want to be strong, and it's also the goal when you're a demon cultivator, demon cultivation and Buddhism are the same. I am a Buddha."

Then, Lin Feng saw a woman, Buddhist and demon energies intertwining around her. The two antagonistic energies were having a fierce battle.

"That's the one who experienced the miserable and tragic life." Lin Feng was grim, and took a deep breath. He understood why Tian Chi had no way to free himself. People who managed to pass the exam of the flight of stairs were extremely determined and motivated, and when they arrived at the top, their beliefs, their faith, were crushed, which also crushed them emotionally.

Lin Feng's figure flickered. He arrived in front of Tian Chi again and said, "Brother, even if you passed the tragic and sad exam of

the flight of stairs, you don't need to be disappointed in everything. Our two teachers and all our fellow disciples love you as a brother and it's not a lie, it's true."

Tian Chi shook his head, "If they're honest, it's great, and if it's all a lie, it doesn't matter, either. I already gave up. Leave now. Don't disturb me while I practice cultivation. It's my own decision, and it has nothing to do with you."

"If you accept to reply to a few of my questions, I'll leave," said Lin Feng.

Tian Chi opened his eyes and looked at Lin Feng, "Go ahead."

"Your faith has been crushed, you don't believe in Buddhism anymore, why did you turn into a demon cultivator?" asked Lin Feng.

"Demon cultivation is merciless and emotionless. The only purpose is to become strong. You can see how strong I've become; do you think I had the ability to become that strong in the past?"

"Alright, you think you can only be strong that way, so you became emotionless and merciless to become strong. But then again, why do you want to become so strong?" asked Lin Feng.

"In this world, only strength matters. If you're strong, you can control everything. If you're strong, you can say you're a Buddha, you can say you're a demon, it all doesn't matter. You can choose to be what you want to be."

"What was the purpose of the one who made you become a demon?" asked Lin Feng.

"He's had a miserable and sad life, and then he achieved supreme enlightenment. He didn't want other people to have the same life as him, so he decided to help others. He is an extraordinary being. If you can't become a demon, then you can continue believing in Buddhism, it doesn't matter anyway. Both can become peerless cultivators," said Tian Chi slowly.

Lin Feng burst into frantic laughter, like a madman. Tian Chi asked, “What are you laughing at?”

“Second fellow disciple, I’m laughing because you seem so naive. Since he achieved supreme enlightenment and became a peerless demon, he’s supposed to be selfish and focus on his own strength, he’s supposed to practice with single-hearted devotion and without distracting thoughts.

“So, why would he help other people? I’m laughing because you think you achieved supreme enlightenment, you think you’re having a good life as a demon cultivator. You’re just a tool for him,” said Lin Feng, “Now, I will show you how to achieve supreme enlightenment again. If you still don’t believe me, then we’ll break off ties forever.

“You say that demon cultivation, merciless and emotionless are the best ways to become strong quickly. How, I’ve never changed, I love my closed ones, I hate my enemies. Back then, we were similarly strong, how strong am I now?” demanded Lin Feng. His robe started fluttering in the wind. He stepped forwards, and a terrifying energy filled the air. Tian Chi’s face changed drastically, and he jumped away.

“You think you can escape?” Lin Feng’s eyes became pitch-black, Tian Chi had the impression he was being absorbed into Hell. Lin Feng raised his hand and grabbed Tian Chi’s neck, “Maybe you did achieve supreme enlightenment, but you’re so-so now.”

He threw Tian Chi away, and the latter crashed into a wall. He pulled a long face and stared at Lin Feng, while releasing demon Qi in angry waves.

“You’re angry? You’re not qualified to be angry! Our teachers made great efforts to raise you and you decided to break off ties? You’re worthless!” said Lin Feng, walking forwards. He raised his fist again.

Tian Chi was angry. He released ancient imprints and shot them

towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng destroyed them instantly. He grabbed Tian Chi again and threw him onto the ground violently. A crater appeared under Tian Chi, and he coughed up blood.

“That’s what you call ‘achieving supreme enlightenment’? You’ve become a tiny little insect! You’ve become weaker after achieving supreme enlightenment! I can kill you in the blink of an eye!” Lin Feng looked at Tian Chi disdainfully and said, “Don’t tell me that you achieved supreme enlightenment and that it’s the best way to practice cultivation when I’m stronger than you!”

“You say that strength is the most important thing, that Buddhism is demon cultivation, maybe! But in any case, the most important thing is to listen to your heart. I am strong, but I listen to myself, I have my own stories, I have my own life. There are people I love, there are people I hate. I think am quite free and unfettered, unlike you,” said Lin Feng.

Tian Chi shivered.

“And these people who live at the top of the mountain, are they enlightened beings?” snarled Lin Feng, glancing at the crowd icily. He glanced at them, and buildings exploded instantly. Qi rolled in waves towards Lin Feng. He flickered, pointed his fingers at someone, and that person instantly died.

“Killing you people who have achieved supreme enlightenment is a slight effort,” said Lin Feng, rolling up his sleeves. Then he landed in front of Tian Chi again and said, “Did you see that clearly? You really achieved supreme enlightenment?”

Tian Chi was trembling and staring at Lin Feng. His younger fellow disciple was crazy and honest; he had never changed, he loved his friends and hated his enemies. Why change?

“You passed the test of the flight of stairs and changed because you thought you had achieved supreme enlightenment. I’ve also gone through a lot, and I also experienced many lives, I’ll show you,” said Lin Feng. Suddenly, Tian Chi started dreaming, Lin

Feng forced him to experience the different lives of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.

After a long time, the dream ended and Lin Feng said to Tian Chi, “I experienced more than you and I didn’t change, why did I manage to do that and you didn’t? Even if you don’t believe in Buddhism anymore, even if you don’t want to be a Buddhism monk anymore, why did you need to change your personality? Why do you exist? What is your purpose in life?”

Lin Feng was furious, Tian Chi thought he had achieved supreme enlightenment?

“You mean it’s a conspiracy?” asked Tian Chi.

“Of course, come with me!” said Lin Feng. Their figures flickered.

There was nothing where Lin Feng took Tian Chi, but he took out a sword and slashed it. “Break!”

Clear notes sounded as something unseen broke. Fissures appeared in the atmosphere. Tian Chi was stunned.

“Nothing that is invented can escape from my perceptions,” said Lin Feng. They continued moving forwards. There was a mountain there, and a figure at the top. There was a man there, half Buddha half demon, holding a woman in his arms.

“It’s him.” Tian Chi was astonished.

“Indeed, it’s him! He’s the one at the center of all this,” said Lin Feng, “You really think he’s helping you?”

“What is his goal?” asked Tian Chi.

“To become a peerless Saint,” replied Lin Feng firmly. Tian Chi was stupefied. Lin Feng said to that person, “You’re still alive, if I’m not mistaken.”

The person slowly turned around and looked at Lin Feng. His

face was blurry, it was impossible to see his features. He was half demon, half Buddha.

“I think we know one another,” said Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng,” said that person. Lin Feng wasn’t surprised. He could sense that he did indeed know that person.

“Who are you?” asked Lin Feng.

“You’ll know in time. Now, take him away. He came voluntarily, I didn’t force him. There’s no need to disturb me,” said that person calmly.

“Alright, we’ll meet again,” replied Lin Feng easily. He left with Tian Chi.

“You know the difference between high-level Saints and peerless Saints?” asked Lin Feng to Tian Chi.

“I know,” said Tian Chi, nodding.

“What are conditions to become a peerless Saint?” asked Lin Feng.

“Two sorts of special original strength at the maximum level, then you must make them fuse together,” said Tian Chi slowly. Suddenly, he looked astonished as if he had just understood something. His heart started pounding.

“Indeed. That cultivator is a terrifying Buddhist monk, and he wants to become a peerless Saint, for that, he needs to understand the opposite original strength: demon original strength!”

“He used you guys to study!” said Lin Feng. Tian Chi was astonished and trembling.

Chapter 2423: True Self

Lin Feng showed Tian Chi a lot, had he made a mistake?

Back then, he didn't really care about the outside world. He was free, but he was also very determined on the path of Buddhism. Lin Feng knew that. Mu Chen and Emperor Yu also knew that.

But during the previous decades, he had focused on climbing the Buddhist Mountain because of his religion, his faith had been ruined, and his soul had been bruised all over. He had decided to focus on becoming stronger, he had decided to become a demon. In a few years, he had become a Saint, so he was convinced that it was due to his choice.

But now Lin Feng had used facts to show him he was wrong. He had been used by other people. He couldn't withstand a single attack from Lin Feng. Lin Feng was the same as before, and he had become strong too, and he was still becoming stronger quickly. So why was Tian Chi becoming stronger quickly because he had decided to practice demon cultivation?

Lin Feng looked at Tian Chi and said icily, "You became stronger, so what? Someone ruined your faith, your personality changed, and you convinced yourself you were happy that way? Don't you feel ashamed, ridiculous, and miserable? Your fate was in someone else's hands!"

Tian Chi took a deep breath and asked himself what he had done wrong. Someone had used him?

"Second fellow disciple," said Lin Feng. Suddenly, he didn't sound as cold, he sounded calm and serene. Tian Chi slowly turned his head to Lin Feng, and looked at him straight in the eyes.

"I came here to find some answers. Now, I told you all I wanted to tell you. I hope you'll return to your true self, I can't force you to change. I hope you'll understand who you really are, and how to

live your life. If you really want to stay like that, I'll just leave immediately, and I will never come back to you," said Lin Feng, staring at Tian Chi calmly.

Tian Chi also wondered who he really was.

He closed his eyes, he had to listen to his heart, he had achieved supreme enlightenment once, now he had to do with his heart. He had to forget about everything. He needed to understand his own emotions!

Tian Chi visualized many things, he visualized a young Buddhist monk at the top of a mountain meditating. He said to a middle-aged man, "Teacher, why do we practice cultivation?"

"Cultivating our mind and body is important to learn things, to become qualified. It helps you understand yourself, it helps you choose your path," smiled the middle-aged man. He didn't really understand, but the middle-aged man laughed and tapped his head.

The little Buddhist monk grew up. He practiced really hard, he traveled all around, he was tired, life was difficult. He went back to the mountain, the middle-aged man was still there, he clapped his shoulders and smiled, "Little Chi, little Chi, you traveled for two years."

The Buddhist monk who had grown up smiled widely. "Teacher, I feel purer in my heart, I feel infinitely grateful."

"I didn't ask you to leave for so long, though," another middle-aged man smiled. The Buddhist monk lowered his head and grinned.

Tears appeared in his eyes and flowed along his cheeks. He suddenly felt so sad.

He understood. He finally understood.

He suddenly opened his eyes. He cut his long black hair, and after a few seconds, he was completely bald again. He looked at Lin

Feng, he was still crying, but he still smiled broadly. He felt sad and happy at the same time. He had returned to his true self. Nobody could use him anymore!

“Lin Feng, thank you,” said Tian Chi. Lin Feng smiled broadly too. He knew that the Tian Chi he knew had come back to his true self.

“Second fellow disciple,” said Lin Feng. They hugged.

“Let’s go back, Lin Feng. I want to see our teachers,” said Tian Chi suddenly. He was impatient.

“Alright, let’s go back,” said Lin Feng smiling. They both left.

At that moment, there were still many strong cultivators at the top of the mountain. Tian Chi wasn’t the only one who had been influenced by Lin Feng, the others were, too. They were also struggling in their hearts.

But all of that had nothing to do with Lin Feng anymore.

In Tiantai, Mu Chen and Emperor Yu gazed into the distance. They were waiting. Lin Feng had left for a few days already and he hadn’t come back, so they were worried.

Even though Lin Feng was strong, the Buddhist Mountain was mysterious, and they had heard that Lin Feng had tried to fly straight to the top of the mountain. There had been a terrifying battle and after that Lin Feng had disappeared.

In the distance, a beam of light appeared and shot in their direction. They couldn’t see anything, but they heard sonic booms. They landed on the ground, a gigantic crater appeared as dust rose up in the air. Then, someone appeared in front of them, and didn’t dare look at them.

“That’s...” the two were stupefied. Then they saw Lin Feng land there, too.

“Little Chi!” said Mu Chen. He was stupefied. Tian Chi was on his knees in front of them.

“Teachers, I am a bad disciple,” said Tian Chi. He sounded extremely sad and guilty. He banged his head on the ground, dust continued rising around him.

“Pfew...” Emperor Yu and Mu Chen glanced at each other and smiled. Little Chi was back!

“Stand up.”

“Little Chi, you’re back, we’re happy.”

They walked up to him and dragged him up, or at least they tried to, he didn’t stand up.

“Teachers, let me kowtow here,” said Tian Chi, raising his head. He looked at them, he could see they weren’t angry at him, but he still felt so guilty, so sad. He imagined how sad his teachers had been because of him. He felt like a horrible person.

“Little Chi, you made a mistake, but we don’t blame you,” said Mu Chen, pulling on Tian Chi.

“Mu Chen is right. Little Chi, you’re back, let bygones be bygones,” said Emperor Yu. Tian Chi looked at the two teachers, he felt so guilty...

“Second fellow disciple, stand up. You’re making our teachers sad like this. Let bygones be bygones,” said Lin Feng, walking towards Tian Chi.

Tian Chi looked at Lin Feng and then at his teachers. He kowtowed again and said, “Your teachings are etched firmly into my mind.”

Tian Chi stood up, Emperor Yu and Mu Chen were touched and really happy.

“Little Lin Feng, thank you for having brought Little Chi back,” said Mu Chen to Lin Feng. He hadn’t thought Lin Feng would

succeed.

“Teacher, we can’t blame my second fellow disciple. The leader of the Buddhist Mountain is too strong. He’s using people who are determined; he makes them lose faith and turns them into pawns,” said Lin Feng. He could talk from personal experience now.

“I understand. I also know what kind of person Little Chi is. I never thought the legendary cultivator of the Buddhist mountain would make people change so much,” Mu Chen sighed. “Lin Feng, what did you find there?”

“A strong and terrifying cultivator; he practices both Buddhist and demon cultivation. He’s a high-level Saint who’s stuck at that cultivation level, he’s trying to make both original strengths reach their maximum level to become a peerless Saint. He controls the Buddhist Mountain and studies the cultivators who go there to progress, that’s why he turns them into demons. He studied demon cultivation using them!”

“How strong!” Mu Chen was astonished. He had never thought the cultivator there would be a high-level Saint who wanted to become a peerless Saint, how incredible!

“Yes, we know each other, but I’m not sure who he is,” said Lin Feng. He didn’t remember whom he knew who practiced both demon and Buddhist cultivation.

“I’ll tell all the disciples of Tiantai that nobody should go there, ever,” said Mu Chen slowly. They had to be very careful!

Chapter 2424: Shrines' Changes

In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, on a public field of the Fire Shrine...

There were flames all around a sacrificial altar. In front of the altar was a strong cultivator wearing a fire robe. He looked dignified and majestic. There were incredibly strong cultivators gathered around. Qiong Yu's mother was in the crowd.

"Fierce battles have started, it's at the point of no return now, the situation is really chaotic. What do you think?" asked the presiding man calmly.

"Everything is going to change now," said someone.

"Of course. We can read lots of things about the situation back in the days when it was chaotic, there were great changes. Some Shrines were destroyed, and some others rose."

"Of course. Things change all the time. People have different destinies. Many geniuses rise. Many people break through suddenly. Of course, even more people fall behind and get killed."

The leader smiled. "Indeed. Some of you will rise, too. Some of you will die. You all have different destinies.

"You've probably heard of what happened yesterday."

"We know," everybody nodded. "I hadn't thought that the legends would be true. All the worlds the Shrines have created are connected, and the territories which connect two different worlds are sometimes forbidden territories. It's incredible. These last few years, we've found a dozen worlds connected to the Continent of the Nine Clouds."

"Yes, so there's the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds which is something different, then there's the Continent of the Nine Clouds and twelve worlds that are connected to it. In those other worlds, there are some incredible influential groups,

but still, there is no world that is more complete than the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Continent of the Nine Clouds is the best and main world.”

“The other worlds were created by gods. The Continent of the Celestial Stars was created by cultivators who control star strength. They might have close relations to the Fortune Shrine. We have already sent some cultivators to investigate that matter. We’ll see if we can find anything related to the Fortune Shrine, and to the god or gods who created that continent.”

“The World of the Celestial Stars isn’t the only one. We sent strong cultivators to all the other worlds to investigate. We’re not the only ones doing that, the other Shrines are also doing it. The relationships between all the Shrines are complex nowadays. We need to help the younger generations grow strong. From now on, the Fire Shrine’s gods’ picture scrolls should be made available for the core disciples.”

“Elder, I have something to report,” a woman said to the leader.

“What?” asked the elder.

“Maybe that Lin Feng who has a Forbidden Body is in the lower world. Can we send a peerless Saint to kill him?” asked the woman. Qiong Lin had been killed, so she understood that without a peerless Saint, they wouldn’t be able to kill Lin Feng.

The elder’s eyes glittered, and he said to the woman, “Last time, you told us about the situation. Back then, the Shrines even went to the Fortune Shrine to oppress some young people, but nothing was done to kill them quickly. Now, some of them have already become famous, the Shrines made a mistake of strategic importance.”

The elder said the Shrines had made a mistake without feeling ashamed. He continued, “But the Shrines’ leaders didn’t think that the world would become so chaotic later. We forgot or neglected what happened a thousand years ago; the Destiny Wheel is not a

joke! The top cultivators of the last Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were really talented, that's why they became strong so quickly.

“And last time you acted alone; you sent people and you failed. You think the Fortune Shrine doesn't know about that? They know! Lin Feng's real body has a mysterious strength. Even if we send a peerless Saint, it might not work, either. Let's forget about it for the time being,” said the elder.

The woman's face stiffened. “Elder, Lin Feng is becoming strong extremely quickly. He probably has the Forbidden Body. If we let him become strong, he will overturn the Shrines,” said the woman.

However, the elder just glanced at her and retorted, “You think it's so easy for a low-level Saint to become a peerless Saint? It's already extremely hard to make one sort of original strength reach its maximum level, so imagine two sorts of special original strength, it's even harder! In the history of the world, nobody has ever managed to do that in less than a thousand years! We still have time! We need to wait until it's the right time. Just have some people spy on him, that's enough.”

The woman wanted to say something else, but the elder said, “Enough! If Lin Feng has a Forbidden Body, we'll see. The Fortune Shrine will also attach more importance to him. Don't you understand these basic principles?”

When the woman heard the elder, she pulled a long face. How could she give up and let Lin Feng off?

“We're not the only ones who want to kill Lin Feng, the other Shrines want to kill him, too. We shouldn't stir up trouble,” said the elder icily. The woman shuddered as she understood something. Shrines could be destroyed in troubled times. Thus, all the Shrines wanted to protect themselves and their people, as their people were their assets. They couldn't take risks and let their

people die. The Fire Shrine didn't want to take risks and then have other Shrines attack them in a moment of weakness.

“This time, I called everybody together because I want you to do some things. First, I want you to make efforts to teach our young people more things and help them become stronger. Second, I want you to recruit young geniuses. Third, I want everybody to get ready to battle. The world is chaotic, and it'll be the same as in the past. It will be a very long fight. The fighting may last for one, five, or even ten thousand years. He who laughs last, laughs longest.”

“We understand,” everybody nodded. The worst times were also the best. Who was going to use the losers as stepping stones?

Those things had nothing to do with Lin Feng for the time being. As the Fire Shrine thought, there would be chaos for a very long time. No Shrine was stupid enough to attack another Shrine straightforwardly, and nobody was stupid enough to use their trump cards immediately, either. Also, nobody was stupid enough to send their strongest cultivators first and have them die. Therefore, they focused on raising their young geniuses, they needed to accumulate strength.

Lin Feng wasn't strong enough to make the whole world change. He didn't have such a power.

Those days, Lin Feng stayed in Tiantai with his teachers and his friends; he taught young people about cultivation. The Holy City calmed down again. Many people who wanted to become Tiantai's disciples came, but Tiantai didn't recruit disciples so easily. To become a member of Tiantai, the rule was now to become a student at Champion University first, then they had to become core students of Champion University. Only then did Tiantai consider their applications.

It also meant that Tiantai and Champion University belonged to the same group. Champion University used to be strong, and now

they were even stronger. They had always been respected, so many students wanted to study there. Regarding Tiantai, people admired Tiantai because of Lin Feng.

Mu Chen, Emperor Yu and Tian Chi were gathered in a courtyard. Mu Chen asked Lin Feng, “Little Lin Feng, you really intend to go?”

“Yes. I’ve been in the Holy City for half a year. Tiantai is becoming stronger and more stable. I have left nine Bestial Saints here to protect Tiantai. They can protect Tiantai for a thousand years. They will do their best. I need to leave,” Lin Feng told Mu Chen. “But now the passage between the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and the lower world is open. I can come back to see you anytime, anyway.”

Mu Chen nodded, “You stayed here for a while and you did so much for Tiantai, you should indeed leave and do your own things now. Little Chi, are you going to leave too?”

“Teacher, I won’t call you great fellow disciple or brother, you’re my teacher. Qing Lin is my great fellow disciple or brother. They all left for so many years, I was a demon for so many years, too. I should go and travel,” said Tian Chi, smiling calmly. He looked soft and kind, like in the past.

“Even though you were a demon for a while, your fellow disciples might not necessarily be as strong as you, you’re already a Saint. But you were lucky. This time, if you go and travel, be careful.”

“I understand,” Tian Chi nodded.

“Alright. Old buddy, let the kids leave the nest,” smiled Emperor Yu. However, he also looked sad; he didn’t want the young ones to leave, either.

“Haha, alright, go,” said Mu Chen, laughing wholeheartedly. “These little boys don’t want to leave, either. And Ling, she keeps

following Little Lin Feng everywhere.”

“Tell them after we leave. Let’s go now.” Lin Feng and Tian Chi bowed before their teachers and flew up. Mu Chen and Emperor Yu watched them disappear in the distance. They turned around only when the two of them completely disappeared into the horizon.

Chapter 2425: Original Strength Entity

The two of them flew in the sky. Lin Feng smiled at Tian Chi, “Second fellow disciple, where do you want to go?”

“Our teachers were right; even though I progressed a lot, it wasn’t in the best conditions. However, after what happened, I understand myself even better than before. I returned to my truest self. Even though I decided to go and travel, Tiantai is always in my heart. I will do all I can to become stronger in this life and honor Tiantai, our teachers, and fellow disciples. I have learned from my past mistakes,” Tian Chi smiled. He gazed into the distance, as if he were taking an oath.

When Lin Feng heard that, he was surprised. Tian Chi’s obsessiveness was impressive. Was it because he had returned to his true self? He didn’t understand what Tian Chi was thinking about, but in any case, he felt extremely guilty and was becoming obsessive about it. He wanted to dedicate his life to Tiantai and his teachers now.

“Lin Feng, you’re extremely talented, keep up the good work. Someday, you’ll become a supreme cultivator in the whole world. You’ll control Heaven and earth. Then, even if I can’t do everything I want for Tiantai, at least you’ll be there. Anyway, now I’ll travel everywhere in the world, and I’ll go back to Tiantai from time to time,” Tian Chi smiled. Then he asked, “What about you? Where are you going now?”

“Vast Celestial Ancient City and Qi Tian Holy Town. I have things to do there.” replied Lin Feng. He wanted to bring Qing Feng back to the Animal World, and he also wanted to go to Qi Tian Holy Town.

“Alright, so we’re going in different directions. We’ll see each other again,” said Tian Chi.

“Yes, take care, brother.” They both smiled at each other and

headed off in different directions.

After Lin Feng destroyed the Moon Palace in Vast Celestial Ancient City, things went back to normal, and the city became calm again. However, calmness was relative. Different groups continued competing, but the Animal World rarely got involved.

After Lin Feng arrived in the Animal World, he met the Third Leader. He also got some news from Wu and the others. The Third Leader was completely stunned when he learned about Lin Feng's cultivation level. Things had changed so fast!

But Lin Feng didn't stay there too long. He left with Qing Feng and Jing again.

Qi Tian Holy Town was more agitated than Vast Celestial Ancient City. It had a long history, and there were powerful groups there. After the Continent of the Nine Clouds had become chaotic, many people had come to Qi Tian Holy Town. Of course, an important reason for that was that back in the days, a group of strong cultivators, including Lin Feng, had been to the historical remains.

Now, the historical remains were filled with strong cultivators wanting to explore the mysteries of the historical remains. Of course, they also wanted to know who those chained cultivators were!

Lin Feng arrived in the historical remains, standing at the top of a mountain. Qing Feng and Jing were next to him, looking peerlessly beautiful. Some people looked at them, and others also released their godly awareness to look at them.

"What's this place? Surprisingly, there are so many strong cultivators," asked Jing. Her beautiful eyes twinkled. She had been practicing cultivation for decades, but she was still only a Celestial

Emperor. She was astonished.

“Historical remains. The founders of all the Dynasties sealed this area long ago, and some terrifyingly strong cultivators were stuck inside. So, naturally, they attract many other strong cultivators,” replied Lin Feng, “I wonder if we will be able to find answers.”

“I can sense different kinds of Qi. They’re all incredibly strong,” said Jing.

“Yes, the Qi here has become more powerful with time, it seems,” agreed Lin Feng. He flashed forwards and landed in front of a gigantic abyssal hole. He could hear the sound of chains coming from within.

Back then, Lin Feng had jumped into it to escape, and the hole had collapsed, so it wasn’t as dark as in the past.

A terrifying demon intent roared out and shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng took a deep breath and spat out fire strength, which surrounded the demon Qi and destroyed it.

“Little boy, you grew up,” said a gloomy voice.

“Your Excellency, who are you, or what are you?” asked Lin Feng. He was much, much stronger than back then, but he couldn’t sense the other’s strange Qi precisely. It was just a pure demon energy, but it was also much more powerful than back then.

“If you break my chains, I’ll tell you,” said that person promptly. Lin Feng pulled a long face. The Ancestors of the Dynasties who were Saints were strong, but back in the ancient days, they were probably not strong enough to seal terrifying immortal creatures.

“Who chained you? What do I have to do to break them?” asked Lin Feng.

“You don’t need to know who chained me. And these chains are a seal, the Celestial Chains of Heaven and Earth. If you can find the

source of the chains, you'll be able to break them, and if you break them, you'll be rewarded. You can't imagine the incredible things you will obtain," said the voice, heavy with demon strength.

Lin Feng was startled. The Celestial Chains of Heaven and Earth? Who had created them? He had the impression that the stories of the ancient days were even more complex than what the Saints of the town had told him.

"Let's go," said Lin Feng, frowning. He took Qing Feng and Jing away. After a few seconds, they arrived in a frozen place. In the middle of the area a figure was buried. Some crackling sounds spread out, and the figure broke free from the ice, but he could not move away.

"Back in the days, I didn't see everything. Surprisingly, there are nine creatures like that here, and they're all chained. The Ancestors of the Dynasties are definitely not the cultivators who sealed them. I need to ask Qin Shan."

Lin Feng took out a jade talisman and contacted Qin Shan, "Master Qin Shan, are you there?"

"What is it, Lin Feng?" replied a voice. Lin Feng was astonished; Qin Shan was in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and Lin Feng was in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and the call still worked! It was probably due to the fact that the passages were open, as it wasn't possible in the past.

"How's it going in the Life Shrine?" asked Lin Feng to Qin Shan.

"I'm recovering. The Life Shrine is a great place. The Rebirth Scriptures are really mysterious. Thank you for everything, Lin Feng, it's all thanks to you. I never thought I'd recover someday."

Lin Feng laughed and said, "It's all thanks to the Diviner. He's enigmatic and unfathomable. He has extremely good relations with the Life Shrine, and he asked them to help me at some point, that's how it started. So we have to be grateful to him."

“I know, but without you, it still wouldn’t have been possible for me,” Qin Shan laughed.

“Right! By the way, I am in Qi Tian Holy Town in the historical remains where you used to be. There are nine terrifying cultivators here who are imprisoned, they say those chains are called Celestial Chains of Heaven and Earth. You probably know what happened here back then, right?” Lin Feng asked Qin Shan.

Qin Shan suddenly sounded nervous. “Lin Feng, actually, if you try to investigate, you’ll probably learn things. But sometimes, you have to be careful. Back then, we were all quite strong, but it was difficult for us to become stronger. When you’re a low-level Saint, it’s difficult to break through. But one day, we bumped into them. When we saw them, we finally had hopes again, we saw an opportunity to become stronger in them. Back then, we practiced cultivation really hard. We kept becoming stronger, we weren’t even aware of our cultivation levels, actually, as we didn’t care about naming them, all we knew was that we were breaking through.”

“Who are they?” asked Lin Feng. When the Saint of the Holy Spirit Dynasty had transmitted the memories of the ancient battlefield to him, Lin Feng had heard about that.

“They’re not cultivators, they are... a transformation, an evolution, of original strength. They can absorb space strength and turn it into original strength. They evolve in endless cycles. They constantly become stronger. They are heavenly-gifted, they are natural original strength!”

Chapter 2426: People in White Clothes

When Lin Feng heard Qin Shan, he shuddered. They were an evolved form of original strength, heavenly-gifted! No wonder their Qi didn't resemble cultivators' Qi!

So, the terrifying entity in the abyssal hole is demon original strength, the one in the ice world is water original strength, and there's also an empty space original strength, and a soundwave one... Nine innate original strength bodies, thought Lin Feng. He asked, "So back in the days, you started fighting because of those people? However, you didn't manage to absorb them?"

"We all regretted it in the end. For example, me, I used all my strength to turn into a gigantic cauldron to oppress the soundwave original strength in the valley. The other Saints did the same. Nobody won. In the end, we used as much strength as we could to oppress their original strength. Then, we decided to have our descendants come, but we didn't think nobody would be strong enough to do anything until now. It finally changed."

"I understand. Thank you very much!" replied Lin Feng. He put his jade talisman away and ran back to the abyssal pit. Outside of the black hole were two people. They were both very strong and demon Qi rolled around them. They were both Half-Saints.

"What's going on here? The demon intent is terrifying, it doesn't even look like a person," said one of them.

"I'm not sure. I have the impression that practicing cultivation next to him is good, it helps us understand demon original strength," said the other one.

"But practicing here could be dangerous, he could kill us," said the other one. He looked petrified. The energies in the black hole might be more powerful than his own.

At that moment, they looked at Lin Feng and the others, and

their eyes twinkled.

“You’re a Saint, too?” one of them asked Lin Feng. They couldn’t sense Lin Feng’s Qi, so they didn’t understand.

Lin Feng just glanced at them, then said to Qing Feng and Jing, “Wait for me here. I’ll be back quickly.”

“Alright,” both of them nodded.

Lin Feng jumped into the hole. The two cultivators were stupefied. That guy was definitely a Saint, otherwise he wouldn’t have dared jump into the abyssal pit!

It was completely dark inside. Back then, Lin Feng had been inside but this time his godly awareness was much more powerful. Lin Feng saw the demon’s evil eyes and the chains. The demon said to him, “I’m not interested in people who are not demon cultivators. Piss off!”

“Who said I wasn’t a demon cultivator?” asked Lin Feng airily. He looked at the demon disdainfully, and released demon energy. Instantly, he looked like a demon king.

“Demon original strength, very good!” said the demon. He looked ferocious as the chains emitted crackling sounds. He rose up into the air and a gigantic hand moved towards Lin Feng.

“I wonder how strong a body made of original strength is?” Lin Feng asked casually. He also released a terrifying demon punch. The entity’s punch broke apart and Lin Feng realized that after it broke, the original strength condensed a hand again, and it was more powerful than the previous one. It moved towards him again, too. It was like the entity had used Lin Feng’s demon strength, too!

“Good little boy!” Lin Feng was stunned, then, his body turned into a vortex and he started absorbing the energies. It was incredible to see.

The vortex absorbed the demon strength. As the original strength disappeared, Lin Feng continued moving down. He

wanted to check whether he could absorb all the strength at once.

The demon was astonished, and roared with rage. The chains shook even more violently. Lin Feng felt danger.

Demon strength condensed. Twelve ancient demons appeared around Lin Feng, all holding gigantic steel fork. They looked like demon gods as they rose up in the air and started attacking Lin Feng's vortex.

The twelve demons hit the vortex with their steel forks, thunder rocked the pit. The vortex cracked, and the twelve demons roared eagerly.

“Hmph!”

Lin Feng grunted icily and continued releasing strength to oppress the enemy. That demon has a body made of original strength. I can't fight against him as if I were fighting against a normal Saint.

Lin Feng suddenly accelerated, arriving in front of the twelve demons. They roared in unison and attacked.

“Slow!” said Lin Feng. Everything around him became slower, including the twelve demons. Lin Feng then flew past them, as trying to kill them was useless anyway.

After that, Lin Feng appeared in front of his enemy and directly used a Ruler's Sword attack. It pierced through the demon like a knife through butter.

The demon directly vanished. Lin Feng's sword destroyed it. However, the nothingness condensed again into a demon, still chained.

“It's not a real body?!” Lin Feng was astonished. That wasn't a real body. Even when the demon was destroyed, the chains continued constricting him, those chains seemed indestructible.

The demon roared furiously. He wanted to eat Lin Feng!

“Fire!” Lin Feng released fire strength, which burned the entity. At the same time, he suddenly rose back up in the air and headed outside. How annoying!

“How was it?” Jing asked Lin Feng.

“He can’t be killed. I don’t know what to do.” whispered Lin Feng. Jing was stunned. He couldn’t kill that creature?

They heard a terrifying roar. Many hands reached for Lin Feng, Jing, and Qing Feng. Lin Feng dragged them away as lights surrounded them, and they continued flying away. Lin Feng wasn’t afraid of the original strength creature, but Jing and Qing Feng were vulnerable.

Lin Feng was annoyed. He was so strong, even stronger than Qin Shan back in those days, but he couldn’t do anything against the original strength entity, either.

A group of people appeared outside of the historical remains. They were all wearing white clothes, moving easily and casually, and stylized sharp eyebrows.

“There,” said one of them, pointing to a place. There was a chained entity in the sky. Golden lights flashed there.

“Let’s go.” The group of people in white clothes flew and punched the creature in chains.

“Who?” the chained creature shouted furiously. The atmosphere around it exploded, energies moved towards the group of people.

“Chain!” Chains descended from the sky and bound the attacks before moving them into an empty space. At the same time, mighty deployment seals surrounded the chained creature. It looked like a fly in a spider web, buried in chains.

“You! Argh!” that creature shouted furiously. The atmosphere kept shaking around it. Everybody in the historical remains heard

it.

“Kill those people!” shouted someone furiously. Soundwave strength shook people’s eardrums.

“Eh?” The people who were in the historical remains raised their heads and saw the group of people in white clothes. At the same time, those figures flickered. What were those people in white clothes doing to the chained creatures?

A light curtain appeared in the sky and surrounded the people in white clothes, including the chained creature.

—

Lin Feng arrived, wanting to see what was going on. He was startled too. “Sealing strength. These people are strengthening the chains? Do they have anything to do with the Celestial Chains of Heaven and Earth?”

“Stop struggling. Our master let you live for one reason. You’re captured and tied already, no need to put up a fight,” said one of the cultivators in white clothes.

Those Saints represented their Master; how powerful was their Master?

Chapter 2427: Gift for a New Disciple

The seal was still there, more and more invisible and intangible marks appeared and surrounded the original strength entity. He couldn't move anymore.

The group of people in white clothes moved forwards, their sealing lights became even more dazzling and powerful. The young man in the middle released shining golden lights. At the same time, he started drawing things in the air with his finger. Suddenly, chains appeared around his own body and connected to the chains on the original strength entity.

“Who are you?” shouted the empty space original strength entity furiously. It could sense that the chains were terrifying. These people were similar to the people who had sealed it long ago. They probably belonged to the same group. Back then the cultivator who had sealed them was even stronger and scarier.

“From now on, you and me make one. You'll help me make my empty space original strength reach the maximum level. You should be happy about that,” said the young man, slowly walking towards the original strength entity. Empty space original strength and sealing strength were two sorts of strength. The original strength entity was a gift he had received from his teacher when he had been accepted as a disciple. It meant his teacher acknowledged him.

“Piss off!” shouted the original strength entity desperately. It was going to become this young man's tool? It was very unhappy. It had been created by the earth and the sky, nature was its mother. It was a heavenly-gifted strength of nature. Nobody had managed to capture it in the past, and now what? It was going to become someone's stepping stone?

“Body Seal!” shouted the young man furiously. The original strength entity slowly started corroding. His original strength

slowly started flowing through the chains towards the young man's body. The young man was absorbing it and sealing it in his body.

"No..." shouted the original strength entity frantically. However, its entire body turned into smoke and penetrated into the young man's body. It vanished completely. It became an integral part of the young man's body.

"You're mine," said the young man in white clothes. The seals in the space disappeared, as the original strength entity had already disappeared.

The crowd around was astonished. Many people's hearts were racing. Those people's sealing abilities were just too incredible. They could directly absorb the original strength entities and make them part of their bodies!

"Do you want to die too?" shouted the young man furiously. His voice echoed far away in the historical remains. The eight other original strength entities stopped shouting out, afraid that the group of people would try to capture them as well.

The sealing strength of the group of people in white clothes disappeared. They turned around and glanced at the crowd. They looked indifferent and scornful, as if they found all those people worthless because they weren't strong enough.

The crowd sensed that those people were making fun of them, but so what? What could they do? They were so much weaker compared to them. They probably came from a powerful and influential group. Their sealing techniques were mysterious and incredible. Only extremely strong cultivators could do such things. They were all Saints, and their group attacks were amazing.

They had also talked about their master, who also seemed to be a terrifying being.

"Since the passages to the higher world are open, more and more

Saints will appear here, but let me tell you one thing: you're too weak to do anything against them. Now piss off! We want to seal this place!" said the young man in white clothes calmly.

Many people didn't know what kind of creatures the eight original strength entities were. However, Lin Feng knew about them. Therefore, he understood that these people wanted to seal the place to have access to the original strength entities later on if they had the opportunity.

They wanted to use the original strength entities to become stronger easily. If they sealed the area, they would be able to use them whenever they needed them, like a moment before when they had absorbed the empty space energy original strength entity.

"Haven't you heard me?!" said the young man icily. Some people hadn't moved, as if they hadn't heard him.

"Young master, since they cast greedy eyes on the gift our Master gave you, we should kill them all," said a person in white clothes standing next to the young man. He sounded as calm as pale clouds and light breeze, as if killing all the people around them was something insignificant and easy. Actually, it really was the case, as those small Saints from the lower world were really weak compared to them.

Their Master seldom showed up in the outside world, but he was really terrifying. The young man in white clothes had had to become a low-level Saint to be acknowledged by his teacher.

When the crowd heard him, they flew away. It was better not to offend these people. They were crazy and really strong.

—

"A gift, meaning his teacher acknowledged him?" When Lin Feng heard them, he was astonished. Those original strength entities were a gift to that young man? That was impressive, indeed.

"Qing Feng, Jing, leave now," said Lin Feng. The two women

weren't strong. If anything happened, they could die easily.

"Alright." The two women understood that too, so they left. Quickly, many people disappeared from the historical remains, but some people also decided to stay. Some of them were like Lin Feng, and didn't like it when other people threatened them, and second, they were interested in original strength, too.

The young man in white clothes inspected the area with his godly awareness and suddenly looked angry. He hissed, "Surprisingly, some people decided to stay here, they're not afraid to die! Well then, kill them all!"

"Yes, Young Master!" said the group of people when they heard their Young Master. They rose up in the air and released a powerful sealing strength over the historical remains. A gigantic circular sealing pattern appeared in the sky.

"Eh?" Lin Feng frowned. He could sense that a sealing strength was constricting his body.

"Seal, Dragon constriction!" shouted a cultivator. A gigantic godly dragon appeared and roared out. Sealing strength could also kill people!

Lin Feng wasn't the only who was being attacked. Everybody who had decided to stay in the historical remains was being attacked and buried in sealing strength.

That kind of strength can be that powerful? Surprising, thought Lin Feng. He released sword intent, but it wasn't sufficient to destroy the godly sealing dragons. There were more and more dragons around him.

"It's impressive when so many people attack at the same time." He attacked a dragon directly, and it exploded instantly.

The godly dragons were getting closer and closer to Lin Feng. Lin Feng was angry, and released Sword intent as he rose up in the air, using his God's Sword. Fissures appeared in the sky around him.

At the same time, he accelerated and moved, condensing fast strength in his sword.

The seal sounded like metal shattering as Lin Feng managed to pierce through the energies and appeared outside. He inspected the area with his godly awareness and realized that all the strong cultivators were being attacked like him. The dazzling empty space lights had turned into ancient godly dragons.

“Those people’s sealing attacks are powerful and strange. I wonder where they are from.” He saw the cultivators in white clothes looking at him. He had managed to escape from a dragon constriction attack, attracting their attention.

Chapter 2428: Familiar Sealing Strength

The young man in white clothes looked furious and called out, “Celestial Horizontal Chains!”

He put his hands on the empty space ancient dragons, and the other strong cultivators moved at the same time. A mighty sealing strength surged out. Lin Feng saw the cultivators who were already constricted by godly dragon chains get constricted by another layer of chains. More and more sealing layers appeared around them.

“Eh?” Lin Feng frowned as invisible and intangible empty space chains descended from the sky. He could sense their strength, too.

Lin Feng rose up in the air. He wanted to escape from those sealing chains, which were closely following him. His enemies wanted to constrict him completely.

“Eight Celestial Gates!” shouted the young man icily. The group of cultivators in white clothes attacked at the same time. Celestial Gates appeared in the sky. Lin Feng raised his head as the strange sealing gates came closer and closer to him.

“Close!” shouted a cultivator furiously. The eight gates descended from the sky.

“Slow!” shouted Lin Feng. He was furious. These people considered everybody and everything beneath their notice. They didn’t allow anyone to cast covetous eyes on the original strength entities.

Lin Feng released slowness strength on the eight gate, and a terrifying empty space strength and his figure became blurry.

“Great Empty Space Technique!” shouted Lin Feng icily. The chains shifted away from his body. He jumped into an empty space void and turned into a beam of light. He reappeared outside of the eight gates.

“Eh?” The group of people was astonished. A low-level Saint could escape from their group attack? The attack was extremely powerful. Their sealing attacks were the best in the world. Once someone had been sealed, it was difficult for them to break free, especially once they continued releasing more and more sealing strength.

They suddenly realized that Lin Feng was getting closer and closer to them. He was moving very, very quickly!

The group of people was astonished. This guy was pretty brave, he dared to get closer to them. Wasn't he afraid?

Lin Feng pointed a finger at them. Hell death strength appeared. The strong cultivators in white clothes started hearing ghosts and demons howl furiously around them. Hell strength surrounded them, then demons appeared and converged on them.

“It's an illusion! Keep cold-headed!” shouted the young man in white clothes. Everybody was startled. Their enemy controlled illusion original strength, and he was a low-level Saint, they had to be careful. Illusion original strength was a terrifying kind of original strength. At such high levels, one thought sufficed to trap people in illusions. Inside illusions, cultivators could barely protect themselves. They could be killed easily!

Those who controlled more than just illusion original strength were even more terrifying!

“Seal the space!” shouted the group of people icily. Sealing strength filled the area again. They sealed the atmosphere around them. They saw Lin Feng attack their sealing strength frantically, but he didn't manage to destroy it. They smiled icily.

“Get ready to attack and kill him!” ordered the young man in white clothes. The cultivators in white clothes nodded and released even more sealing strength.

“Open!” They opened the sealing strength and converged on Lin

Feng.

“Life Seal!” Sealing patterns appeared one after another and moved towards Lin Feng. His life strength was being drained out. He was dying.

“He overestimated himself,” the young man in white clothes smiled icily. At that moment, he sensed danger, and their faces stiffened.

“Be careful, seal your own bodies!” shouted the young man in white clothes. His friends sealed their bodies with the Celestial Sealing gates. As they did, an incredible destructive strength filled the air, and a curtain of sword Qi appeared.

“How is that possible?” When they saw the sword, they were astonished. They were convinced they had killed him, how had he survived?

“Illusion!” They suddenly understood. They were still in the illusion, they hadn’t managed to break free at all! And now they couldn’t protect themselves inside. It was the problem with illusions, you believed you broke free but actually you were still inside. It was the scariest part of illusions.

They sealed their bodies or ran away, but they were so slow. Their enemy’s attack was extremely fast, as fast as lightning. The sword instantly cut apart a Saint, and his soul dispersed.

“No...” There was a scream as another Saint was killed. The God’s Sword was terrifying. In the blink of an eye, two people had been killed.

Ancient sealing gates suddenly appeared and moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng withdrew and jumped into an empty space. He was startled to recognize that it was a kind of spirit he had seen a long time ago!

Before breaking through to the Huang Qi layer, cultivators used their spirits a lot. When they became emperors, their spirits fused

together with their blood. They became an inherent strength, an ability, a part of a cultivator's body. Emperors could use their blood strength to use similar abilities after that. That was why really strong cultivators' descendants also had incredible spirits, because it was a part of their blood. It was why someone who had an incredible sealing soul also had incredible sealing abilities, especially after becoming an emperor.

"You want to die!" shouted the young man in white clothes furiously. He had just been acknowledged by his teacher, many people admired him, and his teacher had granted him the original strength entities, but told him to pick them up himself. That was why he was there.

Their teacher had told them that the world was chaotic, so he had told them to get ready to travel and become famous in a chaotic world. However, they had just come down their mountain, and now someone was already killing them! They were getting killed in the lower world, it was humiliating. If they went back and told their group that some of them had been killed, their fellow disciples would make fun of them.

He released a great sealing strength, and the atmosphere became dark. More gates appeared.

"There are sealing gates everywhere." Lin Feng was impressed. Indeed, he had already seen such gates before, but these were much, much more powerful.

"Stop." shouted someone at that moment. Lin Feng was startled, but the space was sealed and he didn't know who was shouting.

The young man tried to look as if he hadn't heard anything.

"Di Shi, you're ignoring me?" asked that voice. The young man in white clothes frowned, and came back to his senses.

How come he's here?

Chapter 2429: Saint Feng Mo

When Di Shi heard that, the sealing gates disappeared. Everything returned to normal.

“Ninth Fellow disciple, what are you doing here?” asked Di Shi, smiling unhappily and looking at another cultivator in white clothes. He wasn’t happy; before recruiting him, his teacher already had nine direct disciples, but Di Shi only admired the first eight ones, because they were extraordinarily strong.

He didn’t like the Ninth because he wasn’t that strong. He had been a low-level Saint for a shorter time than he had. According to rumors, the Ninth disciple had become their teacher’s disciple only because he knew their teacher from before. Otherwise, their teacher would have never recruited someone like him. Therefore, Di Shi didn’t like him much. After all, he had just become his teacher’s disciple, so he had to respect him. He couldn’t wait to rise up in the hierarchy of the group, and then he would forget about Ninth quickly.

“Come and see,” said the young man in the sky indifferently. He hadn’t been recruited by his teacher very long ago either, only a few dozen years. Someone had taken him to a mysterious and incredibly powerful group, and he had been accepted as a disciple of an incredibly strong cultivator. He didn’t know much about his teacher in comparison with the other disciples. He felt a bit lonely.

He also knew that Di Shi didn’t like him. Of course, he didn’t care about him.

“Brother Lin Feng, we finally meet again,” said the young man, smiling at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was astonished, he couldn’t believe it his eyes. That little boy had become so strong?

A long time ago, he had understood that that little boy had an

incredible strength. They hadn't seen each other for such a long time, he had never heard of him since. This time, that little boy was the fellow disciple of those people in white clothes. He also understood that those people's influential group was incredible, from what he had heard so far. Their teacher had even offered them those original strength entities.

Of course, Lin Feng was happy for him. Back in the days, he was also quite strong. Finally, he had found a group, it was definitely due to his innate abilities and talent.

"Duan Feng," smiled Lin Feng. This young man was Duan Feng, they had met in their home world, in Xue Yue, long ago. He used to be a member of the Imperial Family of Xue Yue!

"Eh?" When Di Shi heard them, he was astonished. They knew each other?

"Brother Lin Feng, even though I was recruited by my teacher a short time ago, I know you're famous. Back then, I saw you at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and I also saw the Shrines attack you. Recently, I heard you were safe and sound, I was so happy for you. You will definitely become a high-level Saint soon. I've always known that," replied Duan Feng, smiling and landing next to Lin Feng.

The crowd of people in white clothes were really stupefied now.

Lin Feng, they had heard that name before. This was Lin Feng! They had underestimated people from the lower world. Lin Feng was there, too!

"So, our ninth fellow disciple is one of Lin Feng's friends. What a misunderstanding," Di Shi spoke up suddenly. He smiled at Lin Feng and said, "Brother Lin, what just happened was a misunderstanding, I'm sorry."

Lin Feng glanced at Di Shi. They were Duan Feng's fellow disciples, he couldn't say much. He just nodded, "Let's forget about

it now, then.”

“Alright, but Brother Lin, this place is a gift my teacher gave to me, at least the original strength entities within. My ninth fellow disciple also knows that. I hope you won’t try and steal those gifts,” said Di Shi. Even though he was polite, he was also firm. He was telling Lin Feng he had to conduct himself well. He didn’t want Lin Feng to steal the original strength entities. Duan Feng couldn’t say anything about it, either.

“Your teacher is the Demon-Sealer?” said Lin Feng. It wasn’t clear whether he was asking Duan Feng or Di Shi.

“Brother Lin Feng, I’ll tell you more about that,” said Duan Feng. He looked at Di Shi and said, “You already have your gift. Bring the others away now.”

Di Shi was surprised, and looked unhappy. Duan Feng was being a bit too pressing suddenly.

Wait until the teacher respects me enough, I’ll show you, thought Di Shi. He had just become his teacher’s disciple, he couldn’t be too defiant. He had to submit this time.

“No problem, fellow disciple. I’m off. I’ll go and see our teacher to thank him. I will also tell him about what the situation looks like here. We’ll see what he thinks. The passages between the higher and the lower worlds are open, so I’m afraid this place will attract many people’s attention. So, we’ll see if he wants to take all the original strength entities away or not,” said Di Shi calmly.

Duan Feng replied indifferently, “If you like.”

“Let’s go,” Di Shi smiled. He waved and rose up in the air with the others, looking quietly furious.

Lin Feng watched them leave. Duan Feng said, “Brother Lin Feng, let’s find a place to talk.”

“Alright, let’s head to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Let’s talk and move at the same time,” said Lin Feng, glancing around. They flew

away quickly.

—

“Brother Lin Feng, back then, when I was in the Ba Huang Province in our home world, someone took me away and taught me a lot. He’s my current teacher,” said Duan Feng told him. Lin Feng nodded and waited.

“At the beginning, he just taught me about cultivation. He didn’t let me become his disciple officially, even if I already considered him as my teacher. Long after that, I became a Saint and he decided to recruit me officially. Even though I’ve always known he was extremely strong, I only realized how strong he really was when I became his disciple officially.”

“The world is gigantic, there are many powerful groups. Apart from the Shrines, there are invisible groups, who are mysterious and hold themselves aloof from the world. I’m not surprised,” said Lin Feng. He knew a lot more about the worlds these days.

“Indeed. My teacher is Feng Mo. In our small world, he was known as the legendary cultivator who could seal incredibly powerful demons, the Demon-Sealer. Many years ago, he was very famous. Many strong cultivators feared him in the outside world. He wasn’t interested in power, though, and created his own world. Time passed and people seldom heard about him in the outside world. He just became a legend. Many people don’t even know who Feng Mo or the Demon-Sealer is, only old, powerful cultivators know him.”

As expected, thought Lin Feng. The great emperor, the Demon-Sealer, was famous in the small world. In the small world, they thought great emperors were already incredibly powerful. To Feng Mo, a great emperor was a tiny little insect. He could kill great emperors with the tip of his finger.

“Did your teacher create our small world?” asked Lin Feng. There was a sealed area in the Huang Sea. It had the same shape as

Xue Yue. According to legends, it had been created by the Demon-Sealer.

“Yes. Xue Yue is my teacher’s native land. Xue Yue is the place where we grew up, but once, it was a small country in the great world. My teacher comes from there.

“After a great battle happened in the ancient days, the Continent of the Nine Clouds became chaotic, and brought people much misery and suffering. Xue Yue was destroyed, and my teacher created a small world and put Xue Yue in there. That’s where we grew up. My teacher also lived there once. As a result, he left his traces everywhere,” replied Duan Feng.

Lin Feng realized he had guessed right.

The Three Lives Emperor’s demon clone had been sealed by Feng Mo. What about Empress Xi and the Nine Netherworlds Emperor’s graves? What were the details?

Also, why did the members of the Imperial City of Xue Yue have a Sealing Gates spirit?

“Feng Mo lived in Xue Yue before,” realized Lin Feng. In his life, he had seen some extraordinary cultivators who had ordinary lives in small places. They hid their cultivation, they had lots of time, and they had lots of families. Maybe that was Feng Mo’s case, too?

“So Xue Yue’s imperial family... your family, the Duan’s, do they have your teacher’s blood?” Lin Feng asked.

“Even though he never told me the truth, I think it’s the case. But he must have many families, and he doesn’t really care, I guess. He just created Xue Yue, a family is like a house he would have built. If I had been weak, he wouldn’t have cared about me, and he wouldn’t have recruited me,” replied Duan Feng.

Lin Feng nodded. Indeed, such cultivators had feelings, but only to a certain extent. They didn’t really care about their family members.

Duan Feng probably had such a relationship with Feng Mo because they had the same blood and he was talented.

Chapter 2430: Lost Country

The Holy Spirit Dynasty was the same as before. The previous time Lin Feng had been there, the Fire Shrine's members had sent some people to attack Lin Qiong Sheng. Luckily, Lin Feng had arrived and had pretended to be a strong cultivator from the Fortune Shrine. Now, Lin Feng didn't know where his son Lin Qiong Sheng was, or what had become of him.

At the same time, because of the particular status of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, the other Dynasties didn't like it. They wanted to destroy it, but as long as Lin Feng was alive, nobody would be able to destroy them, including the Animal District. There were many strong cultivators in the region since the lower and higher worlds were now connected, but the Holy Spirit Dynasty was the same as before, it hadn't changed. Lin Feng was famous, and that was probably one of the reasons why people feared him.

Lin Feng and Duan Feng arrived. Holy Emperor Ling came out to greet Lin Feng personally, because he liked him a lot. He was the father of their future Holy Emperor! Lin Feng had transmitted his blood to their descendants, so they were connected now.

“Lin Feng.” Many strong cultivators came out to greet him. They looked at him and didn't notice anything about him particularly, but they didn't doubt that he had become much stronger. Dozens of years had passed; it wasn't a long time, but they could see that Lin Feng had changed.

“Holy Emperor!” Lin Feng replied. “Is Qiong Sheng here?”

Holy Emperor Ling shook his head and said, “I don't know where he is. I haven't heard anything from him since. He never contacted me.”

“He's a bit too hands-off,” said Lin Feng, smiling wryly.

“Lin Feng, who’s this?” asked Holy Emperor Ling, looking at Duan Feng. His Qi looked extraordinary.

“My friend, Duan Feng.”

“Lin Feng, Duan Feng, let’s go inside to talk,” said Holy Emperor Ling. They all entered the Dynasty’s territory.

“Holy Emperor Ling, so many years have passed. Has Qi Tian Holy Town changed a lot?” asked Lin Feng.

“Of course, there have been great changes. All the Dynasties have changed. The Holy Spirit Dynasty is the Dynasty which has changed the least, especially since many strong cultivators from the higher world come here. There are many battles and so on, changes are normal and expected. The reason why not so many things changed here in the Holy Spirit Dynasty is that we’re half stuck.”

“Half stuck?” asked Lin Feng.

“Yes, you know there are conflicts between the other Dynasties and the Holy Spirit Dynasty. They don’t want us to rise. We can’t do anything without being watched. They just don’t dare attack us directly, that’s all,” said Holy Emperor Ling.

Lin Feng nodded and said, “It’s going to stop.”

“Holy Emperor, send some people to the most powerful groups and have them convey a message from me: tell them I want all their leaders to come to the Holy Spirit Dynasty,” Lin Feng said calmly. Even though he sounded calm, it made Holy Emperor Ling and the other strong cultivators of the Holy Spirit Dynasty tremble. How crazy! Have all the Dynasties’ leaders come?!

“I don’t think they’ll come...” replied Holy Emperor Ling.

“Just transmit my message. If they don’t come, it’s their choice,” said Lin Feng.

Holy Emperor Ling smiled and nodded, “Alright, we’ll see if they

come. It's their decision."

The first thing Holy Emperor Ling wanted to do didn't surprise Lin Feng; he organized a huge banquet for him! But Lin Feng didn't want one, so he said, "I'm just going back to where I was before. You can let the other Dynasties' leaders stay in those great and magnificent places."

"Alright, I'll be waiting for you here," said Holy Emperor Ling. He knew how Lin Feng was. He smiled as Lin Feng and Duan Feng left. Lin Feng went back to the place he used to share with Tang You You, and they watched the sunset.

"Duan Feng, where is your teacher?" asked Lin Feng out of curiosity. Feng Mo was a mysterious and legendary cultivator. Where had he created his group? "Of course, if it's a secret, you don't need to tell me," Lin Feng added quickly.

"It's alright. It's not a secret for everybody. I would guess most of the Shrines' Saints know where he established his sect."

"Why have I never read anything about him, then?" asked Lin Feng. He didn't understand.

"Because even if you had read about it, you wouldn't necessarily be able to go there, so writing about it would be useless," said Duan Feng with a smile. "My teacher's sect is in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, in a place called Sealed Imprint Mountain. Brother Lin Feng, do you know where Sealed Imprint Mountain is in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?"

"How could I guess?" He shook his head. Duan Feng was creating suspense.

"The Lost Country," Duan Feng stated calmly.

Lin Feng was astonished. The Lost Country? He had heard that name before, of course.

“Sealed Imprint Mountain is situated in the Lost Country?” whispered Lin Feng.

“Indeed, one of the seven forbidden territories, the Lost Country,” said Duan Feng, bursting into laughter when he saw Lin Feng’s flabbergasted face. Apart from Sealed Imprint Mountain, other people couldn’t go there unless someone gave them directions.

“How do you go there?” asked Lin Feng. He was really curious now. The Lost Country was one of the seven forbidden territories, a famous place. According to legends, the Lost Country used to be an incredible country with many strong cultivators. There used to be many demon and ghost cultivators there. One day, they faced a catastrophe, the gods abandoned them, and their nation had turned into ruins and desolation. Now many incredible cultivators were sealed in there, and many people had died there.

Of course, it was a legend, which didn’t prove anything, and going inside could be deadly. Few people dared go there. Yet now Duan Feng was telling Lin Feng that Sealed Imprint Mountain was in the Lost Country.

“We have a special way to avoid danger, we can go straight to the sect. The sect is in a sealed area. It’s not a really a mountain, it’s a world created by my teacher.”

“I see. I’m curious, I wish I could meet your teacher,” murmured Lin Feng.

“I’ll take you there some time. Even though his world can’t be as big as the Continent of the Nine Clouds, it’s still amazing there.”

“Your teacher doesn’t allow people to come and go as they wish, right?” Lin Feng smiled.

“Correct, most people don’t know about the world, only some people who practice in Sealed Imprint Mountain know about it and can go there. You can only go with prior authorization.”

“I understand,” Lin Feng nodded.

Outside of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, an incredible Qi filled the air. A group of strong cultivators arrived and entered the Holy Spirit Dynasty. One of the guards stopped them and smiled, “Please stop here.”

“Is this a joke? The Holy Spirit Dynasty invited us, and this is how you treat your guests?! Have Holy Emperor Ling come here!” shouted the leader of the group icily.

“Don’t prevent Holy Emperor Tianci from entering!” shouted a voice in the distance. The guards suddenly understood; these people were from the Tianci Dynasty, and Holy Emperor Ling came out personally to greet them.

“Holy Emperor Ling, I trust you have been doing well since we last met,” said Holy Emperor Tianci, entering the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s territory.

“I’m alright. And guards, don’t stop anyone who comes here! Many Dynasties’ leaders are coming to pay us a visit. Greet them warmly,” said Holy Emperor Ling.

“Yes sir, Holy Emperor!” replied the guards. They thought of Lin Feng; he had come back and now something big was going to happen. He had invited all the leaders of the Dynasties here!

“Where is Lin Feng?” asked Holy Emperor Tianci. He arrived in a great hall where a banquet had been prepared.

“He’s here. He’ll come soon, I guess,” Holy Emperor Ling smiled. He was convinced Lin Feng knew what was going on.

“We came because he invited us, why isn’t he here? What’s that supposed to mean?” asked Holy Emperor Tianci. He sounded unhappy.

“You can ask him when he arrives,” Holy Emperor Ling smiled.

Lin Feng could take care of everything.

More and more people arrived outside. All the leaders were arriving!

Chapter 2431: Waiting

The atmosphere in the Holy Spirit Dynasty was getting lively. The Holy Spirit Dynasty had dispatched some people to invite these guests over. Even though the Dynasties' leaders were all furious, they were also a bit frightened. Why did Lin Feng dare act so arrogantly? He had sent people to invite them to come to the Holy Spirit Dynasty, it felt more like an order to come than anything else: I, Lin Feng, summon you, the Dynasties' leaders!

That was precisely why they were a bit worried, and that was also the reason why they had all come, they wanted to see what was happening. Now that they were here, they didn't need to be very polite because having come was already polite. Lin Feng didn't give them face, so they needed to show they were proud and dignified.

"Holy Emperor Ling, what does Lin Feng want?" asked the Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty icily.

However, Holy Emperor Ling just looked unmoved. He glanced around at all the strong cultivators, smiling calmly. Lin Feng was right, they had all come. Of course, it was due to the fact that Lin Feng was famous abroad.

"Holy Emperor Qin, don't worry. You're not the first one to ask me that. Everybody, please sit down and enjoy the banquet. Why are you all so nervous?" Holy Emperor Ling smiled. Lin Feng hadn't appeared, yet so all the leaders were worried about what he was planning...

"How insolent!" said someone icily. He looked at Holy Emperor Ling and said, "I haven't left the university for years! I was invited today, so I came, and now you keep us waiting?"

Holy Emperor Ling looked at the speaker; it was an old man, an elder from Goblin Spirit University. People respected him because many geniuses studied at Goblin Spirit University, but Lin Feng

kept him waiting.

“Lin Feng invited all of you, he also said you could choose not to come if you didn’t want to. Now he’s not here, he must have his reasons. If you want to wait, wait; if you don’t feel like it you can leave, nobody is forcing you to stay,” replied Holy Emperor Ling calmly. The old man pulled a long face, but he said nothing. They could stay and wait, or just leave. As they wished!

Holy Emperor Ling sounded a bit haughty. How could those people not be furious? They were all extraordinary people. Nobody burst out into anger though, they just tried to put pressure on the Holy Spirit Dynasty. If Lin Feng showed up and wasn’t strong enough to keep them in control, then they wouldn’t hesitate anymore.

“The banquet is for everybody, so help yourself,” said Holy Emperor Ling smiling. Servants kept bringing fine liquor and food, but it didn’t suffice to make those people happy.

They waited for a while, and it became dark outside, the crowd grew more and more furious. Even though they all chatted, they looked dark and gloomy. Many strong cultivators just drank silently.

Holy Emperor Ling was a bit surprised. What was Lin Feng doing? Was he trying to infuriate these people?

“Excuse me, everybody,” said Holy Emperor Ling. He suddenly stood up and left. The crowd guessed he was going to go and look for Lin Feng; they couldn’t do much but wait now.

Holy Emperor Ling indeed went to look for Lin Feng. Lin Feng and Duan Feng were laying in the grass in a courtyard and chatting as if the outside world had nothing to do with them. They had even sealed the area with Qi in order not to get disturbed by people’s godly awareness. They looked completely at ease. They obviously didn’t know that some of the leaders were already furious.

“Lin Feng.” shouted Holy Emperor Ling in the courtyard.

“Holy Emperor Ling, come in,” said Lin Feng smiling. When he saw Lin Feng lying in the grass, he was annoyed and asked, “All the leaders are here, aren’t you going to see them?”

“No rush. It’s still early,” said Lin Feng smiling.

“It’s still early?” Holy Emperor Ling’s face stiffened, and he replied, “Those guys are all furious. If you keep making them wait, I’m afraid they will...”

“Don’t worry. Nothing will happen. Even if they get furious, then what? If they want to leave, they can leave,” said Lin Feng smiled. He was calm, all pale clouds and light breezes, as if it wasn’t a problem at all. Holy Emperor Ling didn’t understand.

“Lin Feng, could you please tell me what you intend to do?” asked Holy Emperor Ling, smiling wryly.

“Holy Emperor.” Lin Feng sat up. He asked, “Do you remember what happened last time when I came back?”

“Yes, there was an envoy from a Shrine, and some Dynasties also got involved, they wanted to attack Qiong Sheng. Luckily, you came back at the perfect time and solved the issue. I was astonished.”

“Indeed. Nowadays, the Continent of the Nine Clouds is in a state of chaos. Nobody can escape it anywhere. If they weren’t afraid of me, they could have joined hands and destroyed the Holy Spirit Dynasty, what do you think?” asked Lin Feng.

“That’s a fact,” said Holy Emperor Ling, nodding agreement.

“Do you think we can accept a compromise, or coexist peacefully with them?” asked Lin Feng.

“Impossible.”

“Therefore, this time, I want to teach them a good lesson. I want to show everyone in Qi Tian Holy Town that nobody can treat me

or my family like that, I want them to remember it forever,” said Lin Feng indifferently.

Holy Emperor Ling smiled and nodded, “Alright, but some Dynasties aren’t our enemies, what will you do if they are furious or leave?”

“Even if they’re angry, so what? Nobody will dare attack in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. If they leave, I’ll invite them again,” Lin Feng smiled. “Including those we have tensions with.”

“Since you have a plan, I’m not going to ask again,” said Holy Emperor Ling, leaving quietly.

——

At dawn, the atmosphere was oppressive. Lin Feng hadn’t shown up at all, the leaders had been waiting the entire evening and nobody could give them an explanation. How infuriating!

“Holy Emperor Ling, are you humiliating us on purpose?” asked Holy Emperor Qin icily.

“I’ve also been waiting here. I told you, if you want, you can leave!” said Holy Emperor Ling calmly.

Holy Emperor Qin punched the table in front of him, and it exploded. Alcohol fell onto the ground. He looked dark and gloomy. “Everybody, should we go?”

People were surprised and glanced at one another.

“Everybody, you must have noticed that many people are watching us from outside. People must already be talking about the fact that we’ve been waiting here the whole time. Do you really intend to stay here and wait?” asked Holy Emperor Qin. The crowd was surprised. They had also released their godly awareness, and noticed that some people had been watching. All the leaders of the Dynasties had gathered there, how could there not be anyone outside?

“I agree. Let’s leave,” said the Holy Emperor of the Great Desert Dynasty.

“Since you want to leave, just leave. Nobody is forcing you to stay. Why talk so much?” said someone with a smile. It was the celestial being of the Ancient Jade Dynasty. The two Holy Emperors looked furious.

“Hmph! You’re patient then, celestial being!” said Holy Emperor Qin icily. He rose up in the air and flew away.

Outside, many people saw Holy Emperor Qin leave, and whispered. He was out, he didn’t want to wait anymore. Back in the days, there had been conflicts between him and Lin Feng, and now he had just been badly humiliated.

“Everybody, enjoy yourself. I’m off,” said Holy Emperor Qin, rolling up his sleeves. Then he left, also furious.

After Holy Emperor Qin, Holy Emperor Tianci also left. Three days later, everybody left. The hall was just empty. Holy Emperor Ling was annoyed. What was Lin Feng thinking? Even people outside who had come to watch were annoyed. What was going on?

When everybody calmed down, on the fourth day, a terrifying beast landed in the Qin Dynasty. It was dozens of meters tall. It could crush people with one foot. It went through the Qin Dynasty and destroyed all their buildings, but it didn’t kill anyone. Many people were panic-stricken. The Qin Dynasty used their full strength to attack that beast by surprise, but nobody could compete with it. Each time the beast punched someone, they died.

The beast looked for Holy Emperor Qin, and it stared at him with its gigantic eyes, it looked excited.

“Master, what do you want from the Qin Dynasty?” asked Holy Emperor Qin when he realized how terrifying that beast was.

The gigantic beast didn’t reply. Holy Emperor Qin felt pressured.

The gigantic beast then threw his hand at Holy Emperor Qin. He wanted to dodge but he had no time; he coughed up blood, his eyes rolled and he fell onto the ground.

Chapter 2432: Rolling Up His Sleeves and Leaving

“Master, why? Why are you doing this?” asked Holy Emperor Qin, crawling back up. He didn’t understand why that beast had attacked the Qin Dynasty.

The gigantic beast spat out Qi, but didn’t say anything. He raised his hand and threw it out again. Holy Emperor Qin wanted to dodge, but he couldn’t move because of the oppressive strength. Rumbling sounds spread in the air, and he crashed onto the ground hard, forming a crater. Blood splashed. The beast continued attacking.

Boom boom boom...

The beast continued punching him. All the members of the Dynasty didn’t understand, why was that beast attacking their Holy Emperor?

The Qin Holy Emperor had never felt so humiliated.

He was still coughing up blood. He suddenly flew away, trying to leave the Dynasty. He quickly realized that the beast was attacking him and nobody else.

“Why?” asked Holy Emperor Qin. His bones were all broken. He wanted to escape, but the beast was much faster than him. The beast continued punching him or squashing him with his feet. How humiliating. Holy Emperor Qin had never felt this way before. He was going insane. Had he offended a terrifying cultivator?

“Lin Feng?” Holy Emperor Qin was frightened. Was this happening because he hadn’t waited for Lin Feng? But Lin Feng had done that on purpose, what was he supposed to do? Wait forever?

“The Tianci Dynasty is there.” Holy Emperor Qin turned around

and saw two people in the distance, a big one and a small one. When he saw them clearly, his face paled, those two figures were: Holy Emperor Tianci and a gigantic beast.

He wasn't the only one who was going through this.

"Holy Emperor Qin!..." shouted Holy Emperor Tianci. His face was deathly pale. When he saw that Holy Emperor Qin was going through the same thing as him, he was stunned.

"Go, let's go to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Only they can save us." shouted Holy Emperor Qin to Holy Emperor Tianci suddenly.

"Yes, let's go to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. What a humiliation for us, two Dynasties' leaders," agreed Holy Emperor Tianci. He felt wretched and miserable.

"I feel the same, damn!" said Holy Emperor Qin. He even had tears in his eyes. How miserable for two Dynasties' leaders!

They flew towards the Holy Spirit Dynasty as fast as they could, but on the way, the beasts continued humiliating them, and hitting them. Their clothes were torn apart. They both had a running nose and sniffled, with tears in their eyes.

On the way, some people saw them, they were astonished. Those two people were Dynasties' leaders, and those two beasts were making them cry. They looked truly miserable. Many people even had compassion for them. Poor leaders!

"Holy Spirit Dynasty, we're there." Holy Emperor Qin looked like he had hope again when he saw the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Were the beasts finally going to stop humiliating them? Those beasts had even put their dirty feet on their faces. Their noses were even broken!

Boom! Holy Emperor Tianci and Holy Emperor Qin wanted to enter the Holy Spirit Dynasty, but they collided with a light curtain. Their faces became even paler. Thunder rumbled behind him. The gigantic beasts drew closer.

“It’s a seal.” Holy Emperor Qin’s face was deathly pale. Behind the light curtain was Holy Emperor Ling. Holy Emperor Qin said, “Holy Emperor Ling, let us come in!”

“I thought you didn’t want to stay here, Holy Emperor Qin? Why did you come back?” asked Holy Emperor Ling indifferently.

“I want to keep the appointment, I want to keep the appointment!” said Holy Emperor Qin, forcing himself to smile. But when he said that, he raised his head and saw a gigantic stinky foot move towards his face again. He wanted to dodge, but heavy strength oppressed him and squashed his face.

The beast wiped his foot on his face. Holy Emperor Qin’s pale face turned red. He looked at Holy Emperor Ling and said, “Holy Emperor Ling, I was wrong, I offended you, I’m so sorry, I want to keep the appointment, please let me back in.”

“After you left, we canceled the banquet, we’re not receiving guests anymore. Sorry,” said Holy Emperor Ling indifferently. Holy Emperor Qin’s face paled again.

The gigantic beast squashed Holy Emperor Qin’s face again. Holy Emperor Qin crashed onto the ground and crawled back up on his knees.

“Holy Emperor Qin, what are you doing? You’re a Holy Emperor, I can’t stand seeing you like this. If you really insist, I’ll go and see Lin Feng,” said Holy Emperor Ling sighed. Holy Emperor Qin wanted to kill Lin Feng so bad, so he was the one who had sent those evil creatures.

“Thank you so much,” said Holy Emperor Qin standing up. However, Holy Emperor Ling didn’t move. He just giggled and looked at him. Holy Emperor Qin’s face turned even paler. He realized something.

What banquet? Lin Feng had done this on purpose.

If I don’t kneel down, the beast will squash my face again,

thought Holy Emperor Qin realizing what was going on. He felt so miserable and pathetic, but it was the truth, the sad and cruel truth. He had joined hands with a Shrine hoping they would kill Lin Qiong Sheng, and now Lin Feng was back and he wanted to get his revenge. And now, even if Lin Feng destroyed his Dynasty, he wouldn't be able to do much about it. How tragic, how humiliating!

“Lin Feng, I will definitely see you die someday!” shouted Holy Emperor Qin inside. He knew he couldn't surpass Lin Feng, but he hoped he would die, and then it would be the Holy Spirit Dynasty's judgement day.

“Boom boom!”

When the Tianci Dynasty's Holy Emperor saw that Holy Emperor Qin was kneeling down, he did the same. He had also had conflicts with Lin Feng back in the days. Lin Feng hadn't destroyed their Dynasties entirely, he had just humiliated them.

On that day, the atmosphere outside of the Holy Spirit Dynasty got very busy. Leaders of universities and other powerful groups came and begged to see Lin Feng. All those strong cultivators gathered there, but Lin Feng didn't show up.

Holy Emperor Ling went to Lin Feng's courtyard, raised his head and heard Lin Feng's voice, “Holy Emperor, I'm leaving those Bestial Saints here, they will protect the Holy Spirit Dynasty. If anything happens, you can give them orders. I'm off.”

He just heard Lin Feng, but didn't see him.

“You're free and unrestrained. A group of strong cultivators is waiting outside and you're leaving it to me,” said Holy Emperor Ling, shaking his head and smiling wryly. Lin Feng didn't feel like wasting his time with those people. If he wanted, he could kill them in a flash, but he didn't, he just wanted everybody in Qi Tian

Holy Town to remember him and to know that the Holy Spirit Dynasty was powerful.

And he didn't even show up.

"Lin Feng, I'm sure people will remember you for a very, very long time in the Continent of the Nine Clouds," replied Holy Emperor Ling, before turning around and slowly walking away. He arrived outside, where the sealing strength had already disappeared. The beasts looked at the sky; they were half-Bestial Saints from the Starry Sky World, their leader had asked them to protect the Holy Spirit Dynasty.

"Lin Feng said he didn't want to see you. Please leave," said Holy Emperor Ling, waving his hand.

Those people's faces paled, they were terrified. The leader of the university who had burst into anger the previous time shuddered with fear, "Holy Emperor Ling, please help us and tell him we wish we could see him."

"Yes, please, Holy Emperor Ling!" said Holy Emperor Qin. He had the impression the beast would squash his face anytime again with his dirty feet.

"Eh..." Holy Emperor Ling had cold sweats. He looked at the gigantic beasts and said, "Masters, please come back in."

"Yes, we have received orders from our Master," the beasts replied. They shrank down and entered the Holy Spirit Dynasty.

"Alright, everybody, please go back," said Holy Emperor Ling.

Those people glanced at one another and asked Holy Emperor Ling, "Really?"

"Really," Holy Emperor Ling nodded.

"Thank you very much," said Holy Emperor Qin and the others, standing up. They turned around and left as fast as they could. They felt so humiliated. When they left, flames of fury appeared in

their eyes. Holy Emperor Ling understood that, but he didn't care anymore. Those beasts could protect the Holy Spirit Dynasty. It was difficult to imagine how strong Lin Feng would become within a thousand or even ten thousand years!

Chapter 2433: Treasure Hall

In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, in the Fortune Shrine...

There were gigantic mountains and waterfalls coming from the sky. They were magnificent and grandiose.

Lin Feng was walking in the Fortune Shrine. Many people looked at him in surprise. They smiled and said, "Brother Lin Feng!"

Lin Feng also replied and smiled back. Even though many things had happened in the Fortune Shrine because of him, he rarely spent time with the others. He only spent time with the Diviner.

"Lin Feng, you're back!" said an old man walking past Lin Feng, and smiling.

"Yes, I'm back," Lin Feng smiled. He didn't recognize anyone, but they all recognized him. Lin Feng slowly walked towards a waterfall. At the top of the waterfall, there was a figure, graceful and elegant. She smiled broadly when she saw him.

"Meng Qing!" said Lin Feng. He flew up in the air and landed next to Meng Qing. He stretched his arms and caressed her wan and sallow face. He smiled gently and said, "Silly girl."

Meng Qing laughed and said nothing. She put her head on Lin Feng's shoulder and her eyes turned red.

"You left for so long, don't do that again," whispered Meng Qing. Lin Feng felt guilty.

He nodded and said, "I will always take you with me in the future."

"You said it," said Meng Qing raising her head and smiled softly.

"Indeed," Lin Feng nodded. They both sat down on a gigantic stone and gazed into the distance. The landscapes were incredible here.

“Any news from Zhe Tian?” asked Lin Feng.

“No. I don’t know where he is. He has the same personality as you back in the days.”

“Like father, like son,” Lin Feng grinned.

“But while you were away all those years, many things happened to the Fortune Shrine. The Continent of the Nine Clouds is now in a state of chaos. More and more Shrines want to fight against the Fortune Shrine, and the Shrines are also starting to fight for supremacy.”

“During times of prosperity, people don’t really fight over territories that much. But now that the world is in a state of chaos, resources are scarce and influential groups start fighting over territories. All the influential groups want to gain some mysterious worlds or places where there are precious things. They want to use resources for geniuses, so the competition is even more fierce.”

Lin Feng understood that. If the Fortune Shrine controlled a city, it meant that the resources in that city also belonged to the Fortune Shrine, and whenever new geniuses appeared in that city, then the Fortune Shrine could also recruit them. When the world was in a state of chaos, it lasted for thousands and thousands of years. The situation couldn’t be solved from one day to another, so the Shrines had to do their best.

“So anyway, what I wanted to say is, seven years ago, the Fortune Shrine decided to recruit core disciples every ten years. The core disciples can then all compete, no matter what their cultivation level is. Your friends, Hou Qing Lin, Jun Mo Xi, and someone else came back, they want to try and become core disciples in the Fortune Shrine.”

Lin Feng smiled, “You saw Brother Hou and Jun Mo Xi?”

“Yes, they came to see you, but then they found out you weren’t here,” said Meng Qing nodding.

“How are they doing?” asked Lin Feng.

“Very good. In three years, you’ll be able to see them,” said Meng Qing smiling.

“Great, in three years then,” Lin Feng nodded. He grabbed Meng Qing’s hand and said, “Come, I want to take you somewhere.”

Meng Qing was curious. They walked towards an ancient palace. They both entered the cultivation room, Lin Feng waved his hand and a praying mat appeared.

“Let’s go in.” Lin Feng and Meng Qing stepped onto the praying mat, lights flashed and they both disappeared, quickly reappearing in the Starry Sky World, Meng Qing was stupefied when she saw the landscapes. This wasn’t Lin Feng’s world...

“Where are we?” asked Meng Qing.

“A god’s world,” Lin Feng smiled. “Meng Qing, I disappeared for a few years because I was stuck in a forbidden territory. You probably know about that. Then, I found the Godly Grave’s god’s historical remains, this Starry Sky World. This world was created by a god.”

“The news that many people came out of the historical remains quickly spread. There are also many strong cultivators from other worlds. Everybody knows about that now. I would never have thought it all happened because you obtained the god’s world,” answered Meng Qing, smiling sweetly. It meant that the god had chosen Lin Feng as an heir!

“Let’s go. There are many places here. I don’t even know what to do with all these places,” said Lin Feng. Their figures flickered, and they went to a few ancient star palaces. Lin Feng and Meng Qing entered one of them. Dazzling lights surrounded Meng Qing, which made her shiver.

“There are Saint’s Weapons everywhere?”

Meng Qing was stunned. There were Saint’s Weapons

everywhere: blades, spears, swords, halberds, axes, bows and arrows, whips, armors, gourds, rainbow cups... it was incredible, the palace was filled with treasures.

“Those are Saint’s Weapons the god obtained back in the days. He practiced cultivation for a very long time, and obtained many Saint’s Weapons. The Saint’s Weapons in this palace are all the best low-level Saint’s Weapons you can find. In the other rooms, you can find medium-level Saint’s Weapons, high-level Saint’s Weapons, peerless Saint’s Weapons, but I can only enter two rooms. I’ll take you to the second one,” Lin Feng told Meng Qing.

He took her to another room. An incredible energy filled the air there. There were even more Saint’s Weapons, all of them dazzling. In the outside world, people would go insane for them, he could only tell Meng Qing about them. He didn’t even tell his teachers about them. People were envious; he had given his teachers many things, but not as incredible as these things because he didn’t want enemies to kill his teachers to steal their weapons!

“Meng Qing, choose a weapon you want,” said Lin Feng, smiling at her. Everything he had in life, he wanted to share with Meng Qing.

Meng Qing and his friends were strong enough, he wanted to help them all become stronger.

“I can’t use Saint’s Weapons, I’m too weak, so I’ll choose one for defense so that you don’t need to worry about me,” she agreed.

“Alright, choose something to protect your physical body and soul. When you become a Saint, you’ll choose some for attacks,” he told her. He didn’t need Meng Qing to become incredibly strong and reach the clouds, he just wanted her to be safe. He could do the rest himself.

Meng Qing chose a soft armor and a Saint’s soul sword. The sword could protect her when someone attacked her soul, so even if a Saint attacked her by surprise, she wouldn’t die.

“Don’t spoil just me. Give some to the others, too. They’re all in your small world, aren’t they?” she prodded him.

“I will go and see them; my world is becoming more and more perfect. They like calm and tranquility. This world is dangerous, so I will ask them,” said Lin Feng smiling.

“Yes, respect is the most important thing,” Meng Qing agreed.

“Let’s go. I’ll take you to a place perfect to practice cultivation!” said Lin Feng, dragging her along. They soon arrived in a cultivation palace.

“Meng Qing, this place is perfect to study Celestial Dao strength. It’s perfect to try and break through to the Sheng Layer. You should practice here for a while,” he said to her.

“Alright, but don’t worry if I don’t manage to break through to the Sheng Layer,” said Meng Qing. They both smiled. She started meditating and Lin Feng went to another room. It was good to practice cultivation too, but it was also suitable to practice special Saint’s spells, as it helped Saints improve their fighting abilities.

Lin Feng controlled several types of original strength. He wanted to become stronger and increase his fighting abilities. He was a low-level Saint now, and he wanted to have no enemy at the same cultivation level!

Chapter 2434: Together

Lin Feng entered the palace and some intent surrounded him. It was a mysterious world.

The place was dark, and Lin Feng couldn't see much, even with his godly awareness. However, at that moment, some light appeared and illuminated the space around him.

After that, a second light appeared, and a third one. The lights kept twinkling on. Millions of lights appeared, the space around him turned into a starlit sky. The stars were dazzling.

"Some kind of intent?" Lin Feng was surprised, all the stars seemed to be changing every second. It was an incredible sight.

However, at that moment, all the stars disappeared, and the space became dark again. It made Lin Feng feel uncomfortable, as it lasted for a while.

Lin Feng sat down cross-legged patiently. Since that palace aimed at improving cultivators' fighting abilities, he didn't mind being patient and staying there for a while.

Suddenly, the lights appeared again, Lin Feng had the impression those lights were as sharp as blades in his eyes, so he closed them. It was very difficult to describe how he felt.

"The first kind of strength is accumulation, the second type is explosiveness. The goal is to accumulate strength until it becomes explosive, like the God's Sword," murmured Lin Feng. The intent in the space around him changed again as it attracted star original strength. Finally, Lin Feng saw the intent invade the space around him, as a kind of finger attack.

One finger seemed like it could move through space and time. It contained an endless number of dazzling lights, and also contained destructive strength. Only that finger was left in the space around. Some explosive strength made the space look even darker. It

absorbed all the dazzling lights around, the stars condensed into that finger, it was impossible to escape from it.

Lin Feng had the impression he was hallucinating. That attack pierced through him; even if his eyes were closed, he still had the impression the attack had pierced through his brain. It gave him chills.

“That one finger uses star original strength, similar to light and space original strength. That attack is so powerful!” Even though the Ruler’s Sword attack was powerful, it didn’t use original strength in such a perfect way.

“That kind of finger technique can improve my Ruler’s Sword attack!” He was meditating calmly. He started using his Ruler’s Sword. He made it condense again, trying to make it as explosive as possible.

After Lin Feng finished studying, he went to another room. They each contained different sorts of intent. He visualized different sorts of Saint’s techniques. Lin Feng had the impression he was becoming much more erudite quickly. He was amazed by the power of original strength. He was focused and enjoyed learning.

Three years passed extremely quickly, it felt like minutes for Lin Feng. He went to see Meng Qing and they left the Star World.

“How do you feel?” asked Lin Feng to Meng Qing.

“I learned so much, I think I could become a Saint soon,” replied Meng Qing happily. “You? You must have progressed a lot during those three years, right?”

“Yes, I studied several things. I understand original strength even better. I understand what I have to do to increase my own Saint’s techniques now,” he replied. During those three years, he had indeed progressed a lot.

“The god’s Saint’s techniques must be incredible.”

“Yes, I saw a technique where he just stretched his arm out and he could pick up the sun, the moon, and the stars. Nothing could stop him. It was incredible,” Lin Feng sighed. He had seen such an attack in the past: the two strong cultivators of the Giant Gods Clan had such an attack, but it was much weaker than the god’s own.

“Lin Feng, you’re back!” said someone at that moment.

Lin Feng was startled and smiled at Meng Qing and told her, “I’ll go and see the Diviner.”

“Alright,” she assented.

Lin Feng sped off, and quickly arrived in another ancient palace, it was also a Starry Sky World.

“Master!” Lin Feng said to the Diviner.

“You went to the Godly Grave and a few decades later, you came out and you were a low-level Saint already. Your cultivation speed is astonishing,” said the Diviner, smiling at Lin Feng gently. “But don’t be too proud. The world is in a state of chaos. Many terrifyingly strong people travel the world. I found some people whose cultivation speeds were terrifying as well, and I recruited them.”

“I understand. At my cultivation level, cultivation speed is not the most important thing. We have to see how strong someone can get in the end,” said Lin Feng calmly.

“No, you’re wrong. If the world wasn’t in a state of chaos, you would be right. But now the world is different, speed is extremely important. You might be more talented than someone else, but if they reach a higher cultivation level than yours more quickly, then you’re doomed. If the Fortune Shrine doesn’t raise geniuses quickly enough, we’ll be doomed,” said the Diviner.

Lin Feng’s heart twitched. “Who is stronger these days?” asked Lin Feng.

“The situation is too chaotic, we can’t be sure. Anyway, everybody is very nervous and every day, every year, everything changes. But all of this has nothing to do with you. Lin Feng, I hope that you will become a high-level Saint as soon as possible. Of course, I also hope you’ll become a peerless Saint someday. Before that happens, you don’t need to fight against the other Shrines directly.”

“Only high-level Saints can help?” asked Lin Feng, smiling wryly.

“Indeed. Great emperors represent the lower strata. High-level Saints are the pillars because they are the only ones who can keep the situation under control. Regarding battles to death, peerless Saints control the whole situation, and we haven’t reached that point yet. The Star Priest of the Fortune Shrine, a peerless Saint, has already started recruiting disciples. Do you know what that means?”

“It means that the situation of the Continent of the Nine Clouds will change thoroughly. Maybe another great war like long ago will take place.”

“Yes, people in the future will maybe consider our war to be like the war of the ancient days. Usually, our peerless Star Priest practices cultivation to try and become a god, but now, he’s recruiting disciples. The peerless Saints of the others Shrines are doing the same.”

Lin Feng nodded. The situation was becoming serious.

“Anyway, don’t worry about those things. Right now, you can’t battle, or at least, you can’t participate as Lin Feng. You can use another face and Qi to participate. Your fate is more important than the fate of a hundred people. You need to become a high-level Saint as quickly as possible so that we can use you in battles.”

“I understand,” Lin Feng said firmly.

“I won’t put pressure on you. You know what to do. Go to

Fortune City. Your friends are back,” said the Diviner, smiling at him.

“My friends are back?!” Lin Feng looked surprised. “Do you think they have the potential to become core disciples?”

“Yes,” said the Diviner agreeably. Lin Feng was pleasantly surprised, so he left immediately.

He left the palace and descended from the sky, releasing his godly awareness to inspect the area. Many people raised their heads in Fortune City, sensing something.

Hou Qing Lin and Jun Mo Xi sensed it, too. They raised their heads, and Hou Qing Lin said, “What a terrifying godly awareness strength. That’s someone from the Shrine.”

“Eh... people in Fortune City are all members of the Fortune Shrine,” Jun Mo Xi laughed.

“Half,” said Hou Qing Lin smiling.

At that moment, a voice said to them telepathically, “Brother Hou, Jun Mo Xi!”

“Lin Feng.” Hou Qing Lin was astonishing. He raised his head and saw Lin Feng descending from the sky, grinning broadly.

“How come you’re together?” asked Lin Feng smiling at the two of them. He landed on the ground next to them. Hou Qing Lin’s Qi was strange; when looking at his eyes, one had the impression one could drown in space and time. Jun Mo Xi’s Qi was ice-cold, one didn’t dare get close to him.

“We bumped into each other while traveling, I almost died, Jun Mo Xi saved me,” Hou Qing Lin smiled.

“Nah, it’s not true. I almost died, but anyway, we were lucky to find one another. If we hadn’t, we would not have today’s cultivation level,” said Jun Mo Xi smiled.

“You both became Saints in such a short time. Good!” said Lin Feng happily.

“Good? There’s still a huge difference between us and you. Back in the days, during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, we were at the same level, now we’re too weak to stand next to you,” protested Jun Mo Xi. He had just sensed Lin Feng’s terrifying godly awareness. He was still happy for him, though.

Chapter 2435: Reincarnation Priest

Lin Feng looked at Jun Mo Xi and shook his head with a grin. “I was lucky. You came to Fortune City to become core disciples, I heard. What kind of exam do you have to take?”

“The Continent of the Nine Clouds is in a state of chaos, so the exam will be a bit different. Every ten years, there will be a round and the Fortune Shrine will recruit core disciples. People of all cultivation levels will have the opportunity to participate, and the exam will be different depending on the different cultivation levels. In any case, it will be extremely difficult. We will do our best. I hope we’ll have the opportunity to become core disciples like you,” Jun Mo Xi smiled. During the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, they had failed. Such opportunities were rare.

“Yes, it’s difficult to understand the Shrines if you don’t become core disciples. This time, I hope we will succeed,” said Hou Qing Lin solemnly.

“When is the exam going to take place?” asked Lin Feng.

“In seventy days,” replied Hou Qing Lin.

“Alright, I’ll take you somewhere first, then. I think it’ll help you become stronger,” said Lin Feng, smiling at his two friends.

Hou Qing Lin and Jun Mo Xi were curious when they arrived in a secret cultivation room. It was isolated from the world. Lin Feng took Jun Mo Xi and Hou Qing Lin out to the Star World. Jun Mo Xi and Hou Qing Lin were some of his best friends, Lin Feng wanted to help them become stronger. He also wanted to give them some medium-level Saint’s Weapons. They were already Saints, so they could use medium-level Saint’s Weapons even if they couldn’t make the most out them.

Before the exam started, Hou Qing Lin and Jun Mo Xi left the

Star World, arriving in front of an illusory castle. It was similar to Fortune City when Lin Feng had gone there from the small world. Someone took Hou Qing Lin and Jun Mo Xi into the castle while Lin Feng and the Diviner stood aside. They were at the top of a mountain range and could see everything.

“Master, that’s...?” Lin Feng glanced at a mountain. A waterfall coming from the sky flowed onto it. There were some old people there, their eyes closed. There were many people seated next to them, all looking down at the castle.

“People who organized the exam choose core disciples. Lin Feng, if you wish, you can also choose disciples,” the Diviner told him.

“That’d only harm the younger generation,” said Lin Feng shaking his head. He preferred focusing on cultivation, he didn’t feel like teaching.

“The exam is starting,” whispered the Diviner. Lin Feng was staring at Hou Qing Lin and Jun Mo Xi. They were in the same place as some other Saints who had entered the castle with them. It was a vast hilly place, many ordinary disciples of the Fortune Shrine were hiding there. They were guarding, the examinees had to break through them to move on to the next round.

“They’re all disciples who have just become Saints. So many people are hiding, breaking through must be difficult,” murmured Lin Feng.

“Becoming a core disciple is indeed not easy,” said the Diviner softly.

Hou Qing Lin, Jun Mo Xi, and the others started moving forwards. The hills and hiding places were not real, they were made of Saint’s strength and breaking them was impossible, so resorting to trickery was impossible, too.

“They have to break through and then cross a tunnel. They all have to go through eight blockades,” said the Diviner.

Very quickly, Hou Qing Lin arrived in front of his first opponent, their battle was explosive. Hou Qing Lin's reincarnation strength was incredible. He kept moving forwards with an indomitable will, flinching wasn't part of his vocabulary. Even if his opponent was extremely strong, Hou Qing Lin's reincarnation strength could defeat them.

"Your friend is an insane fighter," the Diviner observed.

"Back then, when we hadn't broken through to the Huang Qi layer yet, he said being insane was a necessity to become an emperor. Even though he has an exceptional talent and a distinguished appearance, his fighting method has never changed, he's always been crazy," laughed Lin Feng. Hou Qing Lin's fighting abilities were indeed impressive. Even if Hou Qing Lin was injured, he wanted to make his opponents drown in reincarnation strength. Nobody dared risk their life against him. Very quickly, he defeated his first opponent.

Jun Mo Xi also faced his first opponent; their fight was straightforward and explosive. They had a close combat.

"Imperial immortal body, he looks like a king of Hell," the Diviner observed. "At the same cultivation level, even if someone can defeat him, it's almost impossible to kill him unless the enemy has some sort of special power."

"The guards aren't strong enough, otherwise it would be difficult for them to move on," noted Lin Feng.

"Haha, you mean we should have sent core disciples who were low-level Saints? That would have been extremely difficult and unfair. After all, they aren't core disciples yet. We can't only test their fighting abilities, we also need to test their intent."

Hou Qing Lin and Jun Mo Xi made great efforts and passed the test of the first round.

"Brother Hou is on the right path to create a perfect Saint's

technique. When he succeeds, his attacks will be even more terrifying,” Lin Feng pointed out.

“You noticed that too? Indeed, that kind of Saint’s technique is great,” agreed the Diviner. Among the people who had just become Saints, there were twenty-eight contestants. The majority of them were people from Fortune City. At lower cultivation levels, among people who weren’t Saints yet, there were many, many contestants, yet only twelve people passed the first exam.

Jun Mo Xi and Hou Qing Lin continued on, arriving in an illusory place. Lin Feng didn’t understand what kind of exam it was.

“After this, their obsessiveness will be tested. It will be extremely difficult. During this part, some people will be badly injured, some of them will even die.”

“That scary?” Lin Feng’s face stiffened.

“Yes, we will see how determined they are. Many people are talented and good at fighting. However, intent is rare and crucial,” replied the Diviner grimly. The examinees continued walking in the illusion, nothing happened, but Lin Feng knew it was going to be difficult.

An hour passed and someone suddenly groaned with pain and coughed up blood, his face deathly pale. Lin Feng’s heart twitched, noting that person was injured...

Very quickly, a second person was injured. He moved back and left, giving up.

Half a day passed, and of the twelve people, seven people were injured or gave up. Only five persevered.

“As expected, it’s very difficult.” Lin Feng’s face stiffened. Hou Qing Lin continued moving forwards, bathing in reincarnation lights. Many shadows appeared around him.

“What’s that?” Lin Feng was astonished. Worlds of reincarnation appeared around Hou Qing Lin.

“Good little boy. He’s very determined. He can even improve his own natural abilities like that,” said the Diviner. His eyes twinkled.

An old man at the foot of the waterfall suddenly opened his eyes and looked at Hou Qing Lin, “I want that one to become my disciple.”

The other old men nodded. They didn’t try to steal him away. The Diviner looked happy and said, “Lin Feng, your friend is definitely going to become a core disciple, and he’s extremely lucky.”

“Who’s that Master?” asked Lin Feng.

“A senior official of the Fortune Shrine who hasn’t shown up for tens of thousands of years. He is the Reincarnation Priest. Tens of thousands of years ago, he was already a peerless Saint. Then, the Continent of the Nine Clouds became chaotic and our leader had him come back. Hou Qing Lin is going to become his disciple, that’s an extraordinary opportunity for him,” the Diviner beamed. “You know what peerless means?”

“The Reincarnation Priest has made several sorts of special original strengths fuse together to become a peerless Saint?” asked Lin Feng.

“He became peerless thanks to the Six Great Karma Wheel Divisions,” the Diviner beamed. Lin Feng was impressed. His fellow disciple was going to have an incredible opportunity, indeed!

“The second round is about transcending worldliness, getting rid of the self. The third round is going to be easy for him. Everything will happen naturally,” said the Diviner. Hou Qing Lin, as expected, left the castle easily. He looked around at the crowd, seemingly surprised.

“Fellow disciple, congratulations!” said Lin Feng to Hou Qing Lin

telepathically. At that moment, Hou Qing Lin didn't understand. His facial expression was funny.

"Come here," the Reincarnation Priest said to Hou Qing Lin.

Hou Qing Lin looked at him, Lin Feng said to him telepathically, "Brother, he's a peerless Saint of the Fortune Shrine. Go!"

Hou Qing Lin was surprised and slowly walked towards the old man. He bowed and said, "Greetings, Master."

"Would you like to become my disciple?" asked the old man, smiling at Hou Qing Lin.

Hou Qing Lin was stupefied. He said, "I have two teachers, they're like fathers to me. I can't have another teacher."

Lin Feng was astonished, but then smiled. Brother Hou was the same old Brother Hou, he hadn't changed.

"Alright, you refuse to forget your former teachers even when facing someone like me. Come with me, I won't force you," said the Reincarnation Priest. He was a bit annoyed when Hou Qing Lin had refused. But he also admired and appreciated such people. Hou Qing Lin was a good person.

"Thank you very much, Master," said Hou Qing Lin, bowing deeply. He glanced at Lin Feng and then entered the Fortune Shrine with the Reincarnation Priest.

Chapter 2436: Support Needed in Da Yu City

Only three people passed the exam at the level of new Saints. After Hou Qing Lin, Jun Mo Xi also passed, he was extremely determined. The Diviner thought highly of both of them. They had very different personalities. Hou Qing Lin was crazy, while Jun Mo Xi was determined.

Teachers noticed them other two, but they weren't as lucky as Hou Qing Lin. No peerless Saint wanted to recruit them as disciples, so they left with high-level Saints. The difference between Saints of different levels was incredible; the difference between someone who had just become a Saint and a high-level Saint was gigantic. Therefore, they were happy anyway.

"There are so many great emperors, their exam lasts much longer. But ten people at most will become core disciples," murmured the Diviner, looking over the great emperors.

"The majority of them are geniuses from Fortune City and the passing rate is still so low. Ten disciples in a year, the exam is so difficult," whispered Lin Feng.

"At the scale of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, ten years are nothing. Even a hundred years are nothing. It's a great opportunity for many people," the Diviner smiled. Lin Feng nodded. At his cultivation level, ten years were really short, sometimes he could practice cultivation and meditate in seclusion for a few years, and it felt as if a few days had passed. Some old members of the Fortune Shrine sometimes practiced cultivation for tens of thousands of years.

"Lin Feng, in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine keep oppressing us. They want to steal Da Yu City from us. We've already sent three high-level Saints to protect it. However, the two Shrines are determined too, they sent four high-level Saints,

eighteen low-level Saints, thirty-six Half-Saints, and an army of great emperors.”

“They sent such a terrifying army for a city?” Lin Feng was astonished. When two Shrines joined hands, things became even scarier. The Shrines weren’t fighting in one city only. There were explosive battles everywhere. The Shrines had probably asked all their Saints to come back for battles. They were getting ready for a great war.

“Indeed, the battles aren’t happening in the shadows, the battles are now in the open and they’re growing in size. For example, in the past, we used to try and keep Fortune City under control. Of course we were interested in surrounding cities, especially big ones, but now all the Shrines are trying to conquer new cities, especially those in which there are influential groups.”

“Da Yu City is an extraordinary city. It’s situated in the middle of the Fortune Shrine, the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine. Many geniuses come from that city. Many of them have become powerful and influential, many Shrines’ disciples are from Da Yu City. Some influential groups in Da Yu City are extremely powerful. Therefore, I hope we won’t lose it,” said the Diviner grimly.

Lin Feng understood. They needed to fight on all fronts. The battles were going to last for a long time, and they needed much energy. At the same time, they needed to be resistant, they needed to be able to survive until the end.

“Master, how may I help?” said Lin Feng.

“We don’t have enough fighters. Apart from the strong cultivators who are in the Fortune Shrine most of the time, we also called all our strong cultivators back. We had never done that before. But even like that, we don’t have enough fighters,” the Diviner said to Lin Feng, “Last time, I told you, peerless Saints would only get involved in the end. When they fight, it will be the

end of the chaotic era. Now, we're competing slowly, and high-level Saints are at the core of the battles. Therefore, I hope you can become a high-level Saint as soon as possible."

"At the level of high-level Saints, our fighters have the advantage in Da Yu City. But our Half-Saints and low-level Saints are facing difficulties. I need you to use another identity and go to Da Yu City to help. But first, let's wait for the three new recruits to become strong enough, then you'll take them there. "

"No problem. But how long will my fellow disciple and Jun Mo Xi need before being able to go to Da Yu City?" replied Lin Feng.

"Don't worry about that, the battles over the big cities will not end in a few years. Besides, I already told the fighters I dispatched not to fight. They can waste some time like that, we won't lose quickly that way. However, it also means that our enemies will send more and more strong cultivators there, they will have the advantage, and when you go there, things will be even more difficult. But at that moment, if we send people who can compete with all of them, we won't let any of them escape. Quality is better than quantity. That's why we're not afraid of waiting."

"I understand." Lin Feng nodded. At the level of Saints, even if some people lost, it didn't necessarily meant their enemies could kill them unless there was a huge level difference between them.

"You go back. When they're ready, I'll tell you."

"Alright," Lin Feng agreed. He left and headed to his own palace.

The Diviner was in charge of establishing the military strategies of the Fortune Shrine, the peerless Saints didn't seem to be doing anything. Lin Feng was wondering just how strong the leader of the Fortune Shrine was. And even though he was the leader, could he compete with the other peerless Saints of the Fortune Shrine? He didn't know yet.

Lin Feng didn't go far. He practiced cultivation calmly. He wanted to reach the next step of his God level. A year quickly passed, and the Diviner came to him and told him to change his face. He took him to meet Jun Mo Xi and Hou Qing Lin.

"They're coming, too?" asked Lin Feng. There were great emperors around, they had also passed the previous exam.

"Yes, they are core disciples now, take them to Da Yu City. After that, let Saint Qing Ye organize everything," said the Diviner.

"Alright." Lin Feng nodded and said to Hou Qing Lin and Jun Mo Xi telepathically, "Fellow disciple, Mo Xi, it's me, I need to hide my real identity. Call me Mu Lin now. "

The two were surprised, but then they understood that if the Shrines knew he was Lin Feng, they would encircle him and kill him.

"I transmitted you the location and map of Da Yu City. You can go," said the Diviner patiently.

"Alright." Lin Feng waved, and an ancient boat appeared. It was a medium-level Saint's Weapon, and its speed was incredible. It was perfect for the occasion.

"Let's go!" said Lin Feng. The group of people jumped into the boat and rapidly left. The Diviner watched them leave and smiled, "Qing Ye, that's all I can do for you. I hope you'll claim Da Yu City."

Da Yu City was gigantic, and there were many incredible Clans there. One of them was the Ye Clan. However, the Ye Clan had been completely destroyed, only ruins were left.

"That's the Ye Clan?" When the group of people flew above the Ye Clan in the boat, they were startled, as they only saw ruins.

"Yes. This is the place the Diviner marked on the map.

Something must have happened,” murmured Lin Feng.

A figure came out of the ruins and challenged them, “Where do you come from?”

“Who are you?” challenged Lin Feng sharply.

“You recognize this?” asked the person. His third eye twinkled, it looked like a Fortune Star. Lin Feng and the others recognized it, a Fortune Shrine’s disciple.

Lin Feng and the others’ third eyes also twinkled, that person nodded and said, “You came to help, right? The Ye Clan was attacked by surprise, come with me. ”

“Alright,” said Lin Feng and the others. Lin Feng asked, “How bad are the losses?”

“The battles here are direct. They know we’re everywhere here, so they don’t try and hide, they attack directly, mostly relying on strength. We suffered severe losses. Three of our Saints died. We also lost many great emperors. It’s a tragedy. The Ye Clan is completely destroyed. ”

Lin Feng and the others took a deep breath. The Ye Clan had been completely destroyed, that was a tragedy indeed.

“How is the Fortune Shrine’s disciple who’s also from the Ye Clan?”

“He escaped. He feels desperate, he wants to kill the enemies. They destroyed the Ye Clan because they didn’t want us to have a place to stay here.”

They destroyed the Ye Clan as an example to others, thought Lin Feng. How tragic. They had directly destroyed the Ye Clan.

Chapter 2437: Counterattack

The strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine used the Ye Clan as a headquarters because a member of the Ye Clan was also a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine. The Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine had decided to destroy the Ye Clan to show all other Clans that they better cut off ties with the Fortune Shrine.

When the Ye Clan was destroyed, Lin Feng and the others were already on their way. The strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine knew that so they had one disciple hide in the ruins to receive them. The disciple took them to an ordinary yet large courtyard. It looked ordinary from the outside and didn't attract people's attention.

Lin Feng sighed, the situation was difficult for the Fortune Shrine...

A group of figures arrived. When they saw Lin Feng and the others, their eyes twinkled. But they looked desperate, a middle-aged man said, "You're the only ones who came?"

Lin Feng was shocked. They were indeed only four Saints. Three of them were Half-Saints. No wonder the man was devastated and disappointed. These people wouldn't be able to change anything.

"Yes, you know that the Fortune Shrine is under pressure. Only the four of us could come," replied Lin Feng.

"Never mind. Let's go and see Officer Qing Ye," said that person turning around. During wartime, they called high-level Saints Officer. Saint Qing Ye was thus an Officer.

The middle-aged man brought Lin Feng and the others to a building in the depths of the courtyard to talk. A few people were standing there, the leader of the group was a clean and elegant middle-aged man. He looked at Lin Feng and the others and asked, "Mu Lin?"

“Greetings, Officer Qing Ye,” Lin Feng replied.

“Mu Zhen, go and tell them their tasks,” Qing Ye told the middle-aged man, pointing at the great emperors.

“Alright.” Mu Zhen nodded and left to assign different tasks to the great emperors.

“You saw what happened to the Ye Clan. We don’t have the advantage here. If they manage to kill us, they’ll take control over Da Yu City,” said Qing Ye to Lin Feng, “I’m touched and impressed you came at such a moment, but you have to be prepared psychologically, this war is very dangerous.”

“I understand,” said Lin Feng. It was a battle to death! “Officer Qing Ye, how many Saints are left on our side here?”

“Three high-level Saints, they aren’t injured. Seven low-level Saints. Seventeen Half-Saints, and that’s including you guys,” said Qing Ye to Lin Feng.

“Our enemies have joined hands. They have four high-level Saints, eighteen low-level Saints, and thirty-six Half-Saints, has anything changed?”

“Yes, they now control a few Clans, who have already submitted. They also took some of their strong cultivators to make them participate in the battles,” said Qing Ye. The enemies didn’t have fewer fighters, they had even more!

“I understand,” said Lin Feng.

“Why did the Diviner only send four people? It would have been better not to send anyone at all,” spoke up the woman next to Qing Ye. She looked heroic and valiant in her armor, but also annoyed. She was initially very happy, she had thought the Fortune Shrine would send many strong cultivators. In the end, they had sent only four Saints.

“Mo Yu, you know perfectly well how the situation of the Fortune Shrine is. Don’t be angry, you’re too old for that. Tell Mu

Lin and the others more about the situation of the Shrine,” Qing Ye ordered the woman. Mo Yu nodded. Even though she was annoyed, she knew things were complicated for the Shrine.

“Come with me,” Mo Yu told Lin Feng and the others. They moved over in front of a golden map. It was a map of Da Yu City.

“Mu Lin, we’re here now,” said Mo Yu, pointing at place on the map. Lin Feng’s heart twitched; they were stuck in a corner.

“This territory is already occupied by the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine; here, it’s the Hong Clan, here the Leng Clan. They are present in those nine places. They have probably dispatched great emperors everywhere in Da Yu City, first to see what’s going everywhere, and second because they are about to take control over the whole city.”

“This map is small, so it’s as if they had already taken over the whole city, but Da Yu City is gigantic, they’re still not altogether in one place,” said Lin Feng.

“The nine places they occupy already have teleportation portals. They can teleport themselves everywhere in the twinkling of an eye. They also have many empty space deployment talismans. Therefore, they dispersed in nine different places because they know they can easily meet anywhere. So attacking them is useless, as they will directly converge and attack us,” said Mo Yu.

“No wonder with the Empty Space Shrine,” said Jun Mo Xi. It didn’t look good for them.

“We can do the same. Give me some time and I’ll make some teleportation deployment talismans,” said Lin Feng.

“You can make teleportation talismans?” asked Mo Yu.

“Yes, I can,” said Lin Feng nodded. Making talismans was easy for him at his cultivation level, and he also controlled empty space type original strength. Therefore, his teleportation talismans were definitely going to be good.

“Good news then. If you can make teleportation talismans, even if they encircle us, if we use the talismans before they seal the area around us, we’ll be fine. If we want to seal the area around them, they’ll also use teleportation talismans immediately.”

No wonder. We didn’t have the advantage from the beginning, thought Lin Feng.

Mo Yu showed them where they could stay. Lin Feng made some talismans for a few days. He gave them to everybody, relieving them greatly. They hadn’t felt so assured for a while, but still, they couldn’t gain the advantage.

“Mo Yu, come with me,” Lin Feng said to Mo Yu.

Her eyes twinkling, she followed Lin Feng, as they arrived in front of the golden map, Lin Feng showed her the Hong Clan and said, “They have eighteen low-level Saints, they occupy nine places, therefore, each of their places has around two low-level Saints. Let’s go and destroy one of their territories. ”

“We can only attack once by surprise, and if we do, they’ll be very vigilant, they might even chase us. It’s a bad choice,” said Mo Yu shaking her head.

“Don’t exaggerate. The five of us can go, that’s more than enough,” said Lin Feng. Mo Yu was stupefied, “The five of us?”

She glanced at Jun Mo Xi and Hou Qing Lin. If the five of them went, it’d be extremely dangerous, and they would definitely not be able to defeat their opponents.

“Indeed, the five of us, you don’t trust me?” said Lin Feng to Mo Yu.

“It’s not that, but we’re such a small force, we can’t do anything,” said Mo Yu frowning.

“Let’s try and see. Don’t forget, we also have very powerful deployment talismans. You tried one, we can use them and leave instantly,” said Lin Feng smiled. “Don’t worry. I am not going to

put my life at stake recklessly. ”

Mo Yu was surprised, she looked at him and said, “Alright, Mu Lin. What kind of strength do you control? ”

“It’s quite complex to explain. You?” asked Lin Feng.

“Empty space sealing strength and world creation.” replied Mo Yu.

Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled as Mo Yu continued talking, “But it’s not very useful. We don’t have many people, so our enemies won’t let us escape. And if we aren’t able to destroy them quickly, even if they’re weaker than us, they’ll call their friends and they’ll be there instantly, and then we’ll be in danger. ”

“I know what to do. So just tell me: will you help or not?” asked Lin Feng, staring at Mo Yu. Mo Yu’s eyes glittered, and she nodded, “I’ll try and help you.”

“Alright, let’s go to the Leng Clan first,” said Lin Feng. He turned around and started walking away.

Mo Yu hadn’t thought Lin Feng would be so determined. She followed him and asked, “Why the Leng Clan?”

“There can never be too much subterfuge in war,” said Lin Feng calmly. He left the building and they flew into the air. After they left, three people appeared in the building, one of them Saint Qing Ye.

He watched them leave and smiled. “That’s the boy all the Shrines want. I wonder if he can prove himself on the battlefield of Da Yu City.”

“Mara-Deva had him come to Da Yu City, he has something in mind. Maybe that it’s to pave the way for him.” whispered the person next to him. They knew that Mu Lin was Lin Feng!

Chapter 2438: Illusion Finger

The Leng Clan was a Clan in Da Yu City. They were very strong.

Two people in the Leng Clan were seated under a pavilion in the garden, playing chess. Some people were standing next to them and watching.

“How long do you think we’ll need to take over Da Yu City?” asked a middle-aged man wearing a fire robe, while putting down his piece.

“I’m sure it’s feasible within three years, if they don’t hide the whole time,” replied his opponent. He was wearing fine golden clothes, and was also a middle-aged man. They were strong cultivators from the Empty Space Shrine and the Fire Shrine. The Leng Clan was one of the territories they had taken over.

“I bet we’ll need less than three years,” said the Fire Shrine’s Saint. “Last time, we already taught them a good lesson. If we have another opportunity to do the same a second time, they’ll leave of their own free will.”

“I would prefer it if they stayed here forever,” laughed the Empty Space Shrine’s strong cultivator laughing. He suddenly frowned and said, “There’s sword Qi.”

The Fire Shrine’s strong cultivator also sensed it. His eyes glittered as he heard a sound in the distance. Sword lights flew past his shoulder, breaking and snapping sounds spread in the air. The ancient palace next to them crackled, a fissure appeared, and with a loud roar, the palace exploded. A huge trail appeared on the ground leading right through it.

“Everybody, get ready to fight, inform the other military bases, and activate the teleportation portals,” said someone coldly. They released their godly awareness as they rose up into the air.

A few sword lights descended from the sky and moved in

different directions, more fissures appeared on the ground. The Saints in the sky looked furious; the Fortune Shrine was there to get their revenge?

“Only one person is attacking,” said the Fire Shrine’s Saint.

“Watch out and remain vigilant. Wait for the others to teleport here and then we’ll act together,” said another cultivator. Very quickly, the deployment portals twinkled and figures appeared. Saint’s strength filled the air. They moved forwards, but paused when they saw a figure in the sky.

He was smiling icily as he said, “Scoundrels, members of the Leng Clan, listen to me. The Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine decided to completely destroy the Clan where the disciples of the Fortune Shrine were; they are cruel and decided to act with utter disregard for principles. We will definitely get our revenge. From now on, if you continue cooperating with them, we’ll have no choice but to destroy you.”

Another sword light streaked across the sky, and a valley appeared through the very middle of the Leng Clan. The crowd was astonished. What a disaster for them! The Shrines were almost better off than those Clans!

“Capture him!” some people flickered. They broke their deployment talismans, and appeared around Lin Feng. However, at the same time, Lin Feng disappeared, all that remained was some pale undulating energy.

“Deployment talisman?” The group of strong cultivators frowned in astonishment. One of them said, “Follow the empty space strength and chase him. He’s alone. I don’t think he disappeared. ”

The one who had just talked also disappeared, following Lin Feng. He reappeared somewhere else in the sky, but then frowned. The undulating strength seemed to be even farther, which meant Lin Feng was even farther away.

He broke another deployment talisman. The group of people chased Lin Feng as fast as they could, but in the end, they still didn't find him.

“Inform the other bases and tell them to be careful, the Fortune Shrine is attacking us by surprise. Tell them the members of the Fortune Shrine also have teleportation deployment talismans,” said a strong cultivator. Everybody started contacting other people. Even though they hadn't lost any cultivators, it made them feel very nervous, especially since the enemy had tried to scare the Clans of Da Yu City by saying they would destroy them if they collaborated with the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine.

Very quickly, the Saints of the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine received messages about what had happened in the Leng Clan. They had been attacked by surprise, so they had to be careful.

The sky of Da Yu City turned rosy red, it was a beautiful sight.

Outside of the Hong Clan, a group was walking in the direction of the Hong Clan. Some people were staring at them. Threads of godly awareness appeared in front of them as they asked the group icily, “Who are you?”

“Fortune Shrine's members,” said Lin Feng smiled. The person who had just asked him that looked shocked, but then threads of death intent pierced through his body and he collapsed.

More threads of godly awareness appeared, but Lin Feng also released his godly awareness, covering the sky of the Hong Clan.

“I'll be right back,” said Lin Feng, breaking a deployment talisman. He reappeared somewhere else in the sky. Underneath him was a shimmering teleportation portal.

A terrifying sword Qi descended from the sky. Sword strength condensed all around him and slashed through the teleportation

portal.

“Stop him!” A group of people moved towards Lin Feng.

“Break!” shouted Lin Feng icily. He moved towards the teleportation portal, sword lights showering down. There was a loud explosion as the portal was blown apart.

“What a powerful attack!” The guards were astonished. The teleportation portal was extremely resilient. Low-level Saints couldn’t break it but he had, how scary.

“World!” said a voice icily. A gigantic light curtain appeared in the sky and surrounded the area. It was a sealing world strength.

“Five people, two low-level Saints.” The group of strong cultivators glanced at the intruders and finally saw them clearly. They didn’t use any deployment talismans. They used deployment talismans only when they faced enemies stronger than them. Since Lin Feng and the others weren’t stronger, they didn’t elect to escape.

“Hong Dong Liu, you and I fight against him. You guys fight against the others,” said an Empty Space Shrine’s low-level Saint, staring at Lin Feng. That guy’s sword attacks were powerful, two low-level Saints had to join hands to fight against him. Hee let the Fire Shrine’s low-level Saints fight against the woman. In total, there were three low-level Saints and six Half-Saints there.

“Finish them as quickly as you can!” said Lin Feng. Even though he had destroyed the teleportation portal, enemies could also come quickly, they had to fight and solve the issue fast.

Lin Feng looked at Hong Dong Liu; that guy was probably a Saint of the Hong Clan, which meant that he was unlikely to be very strong.

Lin Feng shot towards Hong Dong Liu, faster than the other would really believe.

“Illusion!” said Lin Feng. Hong Dong Liu was astonished.

Illusion?! Illusion strength filled the air, but he didn't feel like he was appearing in an illusion. Nothing happened?

The low-level Saint of the Empty Space Shrine threw a golden hand at Lin Feng, trying to grab him directly.

Lin Feng slapped the air in front of him, and energies rolled out towards the golden hand. The space around them shook violently. It contained earth strength and it was becoming more and more powerful. When it collided with the hand, the gigantic empty space hand exploded into pieces.

"Hong Dong Liu, die!" said Lin Feng, pointing at Hong Dong Liu. Hong Dong Liu withdrew, but sensed that he was slowing down. Lin Feng had released slow strength onto him and condensed fast strength in his finger. Hong Dong Liu looked a bit surprised.

"Die!" said Lin Feng. Hong Dong Liu was astonished. Lin Feng hadn't even gotten close to him and he was already attacking?

"Be careful!" Hong Dong Liu heard. He was stunned, something was ripping through his brain. His face paled as he stared at Lin Feng. He couldn't believe it. "How is that possible?"

His brain exploded and he fell from from the sky. He didn't even know how he had died.

It was an attack Lin Feng had practiced for years. He created an illusion, but the enemy didn't know he was in an illusion, it was as if nothing changed around them, and then suddenly, Lin Feng was in front of them.

Now Lin Feng had improved the attack because he had condensed even more sorts of original strength in his finger. The attack was shapeless, invisible, and intangible.

The strong cultivators of the Empty Space Shrine were astonished. How could a low-level Saint have been so careless? Lin Feng had definitely used a terrifying attack!

"Break free from this territory and disperse!" said the low-level

Saint of the Empty Space Shrine. They had to act promptly. They wanted to give up, he didn't feel like fighting against Lin Feng even if he was holding a Saint's Weapon!

Chapter 2439: Destroying a Stationary Point

After the strong cultivator of the Empty Space Shrine said that, their group moved back and dispersed.

The one who initially wanted to fight against Lin Feng was holding a halberd with three blades. Strength emerged from it. It was a Space Lacerating Halberd, it could cut apart space. Against people, it was quite efficient too, it could chop them up quickly.

The cultivator attacked Mo Yu's sealed world with the Space Lacerating Halberd. Fissures appeared and the world strength dispersed. But after that, the crowd sensed the space tremble, they had the impression they were going to explode.

Mo Yu was bathing in star lights, and suddenly the space turned into a star world, shattering the spatial ties. After the seal broke, dazzling stars appeared and surrounded everybody.

"Let's end the battle quickly, otherwise their people will rush over!" said Mo Yu. She looked nervous. Lin Feng had destroyed their teleportation portal, but the enemies who weren't there would realize it soon enough and then would rush over. Mo Yu and the others couldn't waste time.

"I understand," said Lin Feng. He then moved towards the Empty Space Shrine strong cultivator who was holding the Space Lacerating Halberd. At the same time, Hou Qing Lin and the others also charged towards their enemies.

Two people who had just become Saints moved towards Hou Qing Lin. Hou Qing Lin released reincarnation strength, startling them. Reincarnation strength was rare.

Reincarnation lights appeared as Hou Qing Lin released sword strength, six star-like lights appeared. The atmosphere was explosive, the reincarnation strength was corroding it.

“Six great divisions in the wheel of karma!” The two cultivator’s faces paled. That was the intent of the six great divisions in the wheel of karma! One of them raised his fist and threw a punch in Hou Qing Lin’s direction. The space turned into a gigantic fire giant, its gigantic hand shot towards Hou Qing Lin.

Hou Qing Lin raised his hand and reincarnation lights surrounded the giant and corroded its body away. At the same time, he grunted coldly, and raised both fists. The six great divisions in the wheel of karma surrounded the two cultivators, and they screamed, panic-stricken. One of them had half of his body stuck in the reincarnation strength, the upper half of his body still flailing outside.

“How could a Half-Saint be so strong? His Saint’s technique is already incredible. A really strong cultivator must have transmitted that Saint’s technique to him!” shouted one of them anxiously. Hou Qing Lin attacked again, six beam of lights intertwined in the space and attacked two enemies.

My Six Great Karma Wheel Divisions attack is a billionth of my teacher’s attack, thought Hou Qing Lin, sighing. After becoming a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine, he had left with the Reincarnation Priest, who had taught him a lot. In the end, Hou Qing Lin had acknowledged him as a teacher, not differently from his two teachers. His teacher had then taught him the Six Great Karma Wheel Divisions attack, but Hou Qing Lin’s attack was much weaker.

Hou Qing Lin had seen his teacher use the Six Great Karma Wheel Divisions. When his teacher used it, the earth and the sky emitted sad and plaintive cries. It could destroy entire populations, nobody could escape. Hou Qing Lin hadn’t even been able to see the intent inside because it was so complex.

Hou Qing Lin jumped forwards and killed him. At the same time, Lin Feng’s God’s Sword penetrated into the Empty Space Shrine’s low-level Saint’s forehead and killed him. The Fire Shrine’s low-

level Saint against whom Mo Yu was fighting was the only one left, and that battle wasn't difficult for Mo Yu.

At that moment, breaking sounds came from outside, alerting them.

“Oh no!” Mo Yu's face changed drastically, “The others arrived, they're attacking my sealed world!”

The Fire Shrine's low-level Saint retreated, the others moved back to the edge of the sealed world. If the sealed world broke apart, they'd be able to leave safely. Then, they'd counterattack and surround them!

“Everybody, come, let's get ready to disperse,” said Mo Yu. They gathered together. If the sealed world broke apart, they'd all leave together.

“It's not that easy, they may have sealed the area outside,” said Lin Feng. Mo Yu looked worried. Those people were really fast.

“But even if they did, those people are, at most, those who were near the Hong Clan's stationary base, so we don't have anything to fear,” said Lin Feng. He took out a spear, a medium-level Saint's Weapon. If he used his two other Saint's Weapons, people would recognize him. He had to use a different kind of Saint's Weapon.

The long spear shot towards the Fire Shrine's low-level Saint, who glared at Lin Feng anxiously.

The Fire Shrine's strong cultivator was desperate. Two low-level Saints had already been killed by Lin Feng, he was scared. He condensed fire original strength, and the space around him started burning as fire giants appeared all around him. At the same time, a fire god appeared around him, bathing him in flames. The earth and the sky started burning, too, turning everything glaring red.

“Die!” He shouted furiously, the fire giants stretched out their hands at Lin Feng. So many hands appeared all around Lin Feng.

A terrifying absorbing strength emerged from his spear, the fire

turned into a beam of light and was drawn into the spear. The spear turned bright red.

“That Saint’s Weapon contains absorbing strength!” The Fire Shrine’s strong cultivator pulled a long face. A terrifying dragon appeared and absorbed the energies around him. The spear continued absorbing the fire strength, and the fire giants slowed down as Lin Feng released slow strength. Lin Feng turned into a beam of light, he threw his spear and condensed fast strength in it, it was impossible to follow it with the eye.

The Fire Shrine’s Saint screamed defiantly. The giant behind him threw out his hand.

“Die,” said Lin Feng. His spear shot towards the other’s third eye. The Fire Shrine’s strong cultivator was astonished, he couldn’t believe it his eyes. How was this possible?!

Flames invaded the space around him. He was bathing in flames, but he had no time to release his full strength. His attack vanished into nothing. Lin Feng’s slow and fast strengths were incredible, and when he used such attacks against Half-Saints, they couldn’t do anything at all. They just died instantly.

“How strong!” Mo Yu shivered when she saw Lin Feng. She had hopes again! Maybe this Mu Lin could really change things in Da Yu City.

At that moment, her sealed world broke apart, and a group of people appeared outside. When they saw that their allies had disappeared inside, they were shocked.

“Come with me,” said Lin Feng. He released fast strength which surrounded the whole group, and they shot away. Lin Feng released earth and empty space original strength and condensed it into his spear. He accelerated and reached his maximum speed.

“Let’s go.” Lin Feng and the others sensed a terrifying energy fill the air in the distance. They broke talismans and disappeared.

“As expected, they have deployment talismans.” The strong cultivators didn’t chase them, as the strongest cultivators of the Hong Clan had been killed.

Very quickly, even more people gathered and pulled long faces. One of their stationary bases had been destroyed by their enemy, and none of their soldiers were left!

“We need to inform the four other Officers that a strong cultivator has shown up. He can easily kill low-level Saints in a short time, and even destroy a stationary base,” said one of them. They had to think of ways to protect themselves. They couldn’t let the same thing happen again!

Chapter 2440: Trap!

Lin Feng and Mo Yu arrived somewhere else. They had already used several deployment talismans. Once they were far enough away, they felt relieved. The enemies had four high-level Saints, after all. They couldn't protect themselves against those terrifying cultivators.

"Pfew..." Mo Yu took a deep breath. She was still wearing her armor and looking graceful in it. She smiled and stared at Lin Feng.

"What?" asked Lin Feng, smiling.

"I want to get to know you," said Mo Yu smiling. She put out her hand and smiled at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng smiled and shook her hand freely.

"At the level of low-level Saints, killing enemies is extremely difficult, even if the difference in strength is big. Usually, those who are defeated have the choice to escape. However, today, you proved me wrong. Your attacks looked ordinary, but you easily killed the enemy with them, even though they were at the same cultivation level as you. From now on, I'll stay with you," said Mo Yu. She knew that what Lin Feng had done was extraordinary.

She had also been amazed by Hou Qing Lin. He was just a Half-Saint, but his attacks were incredible, worthy of a legendary priest's disciple. His identity was extraordinary. Hou Qing Lin had come with Lin Feng, and Lin Feng looked like the leader. She could imagine that Lin Feng had a particular status in the Fortune Shrine.

"Following me can be dangerous. If the high-level Saints had come a moment ago, it wouldn't have been fun. It was the first time, next time will be difficult. We can't use the same strategy again," said Lin Feng. Mo Yu was impressed and nodded. Indeed,

they had killed three low-level Saints at once, it was a splendid and glorious victory, but it wouldn't happen again.

"So what do we do next?" asked Mo Yu. If they couldn't attack by surprise anymore, what could they do?

"I don't know. I need to think," said Lin Feng.

"Yes, everyone should think," said Hou Qing Lin nodding.

"What if we disappeared for some time and came back at some point?" asked Mo Yu. She was nervous.

"No," said one of the cultivators with them, shaking his head.

"Yan Qing, what's your idea?" asked Lin Feng. Yan Qing had passed the exam at the same time as Jun Mo Xi and Hou Qing Lin, he was also extremely strong.

"We should fish in troubled waters and reap benefit from confusion. The more confused the enemies are, the more chances we have to achieve what we want. If they are calm and serene, they will have time to set up a great defense strategy, and we won't be able to do anything anymore," said Yan Qing, shaking his head. "I have an idea, but it's dangerous."

"Tell us, then," said Lin Feng.

"Master Mu Lin, you're a low-level Saint, you kill strong cultivators of the same level quickly. Master Mo Yu and Hou Qing Lin can kill Half-Saints quickly. Jun Mo Xi and I can't do that. Jun Mo Xi and I can become bait. We can feign an attack, then when someone discovers us, we escape. It's a sensitive period, they definitely don't have a great strategy yet, they must be badly organized right now. It's an opportunity for you, but that strategy requires lots of deployment talismans to escape, and it's also very dangerous," said Yan Qing.

Lin Feng and the others looked thoughtful.

"I don't think it's that dangerous, it's only dangerous for those

who get attacked by surprise,” said Jun Mo Xi. After attacking, they could leave immediately.

“You can do that, I’ll attack alone,” said Lin Feng to the people.

“No. If there are many people, we can all disperse and move in different directions, which would be good to distract them. If you’re alone, they might set a trap and catch you. There are many Saints from the Empty Space Shrine among our enemies. They are experts at controlling empty space energy. They can seal the area anytime,” said Hou Qing Lin, shaking his head. He didn’t want to let Lin Feng take risks alone.

“It’s precisely the reason why I think it’s the best if I attack alone. The more people we are, the more dangerous it gets for us,” said Lin Feng. “Don’t worry. My goal is only to kill a low-level Saint. We can slowly kill their low-level Saints and then at some point, they’ll have as many low-level Saints as us. Then, we won’t be in a weak position anymore. ”

“Are you worried about me?” said Lin Feng smiling, “Let’s do it like that.”

“Alright, I agree,” said Mo Yu. “What do you want me to do? Feign an attack? Or attack? I’ll just listen to you. My life is your hands. ”

“Alright, I’ll protect you then,” said Lin Feng, smiling and nodding. Since they had already attacked by surprise once, they couldn’t attack a second time by surprise, so Lin Feng hoped the strategy would work. He hoped he’d manage to kill a low-level Saint, and two would be even better.

“Where do we act?” asked Yan Qing.

“The Leng Clan. Last time, we went there, but didn’t take anything from them. This time, it has to change,” Lin Feng grinned nastily. The others nodded.

“Alright,” said Yan Qing. They were all extraordinary people,

otherwise, they wouldn't have passed. They admired Lin Feng though, he could make deployment talismans, he had incredible fighting abilities, even Mo Yu admired and respected him.

"Alright, let's do it then, dear friends," said Lin Feng smiling, "We're done with the details I think, should we go?"

"Alright," everybody agreed. They wanted to help Lin Feng kill a low-level Saint, at least one, and if they succeeded, the Fortune Shrine would feel less pressured.

It was dawn in Da Yu City. After what had happened on the previous evening, the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine were extremely nervous, and even the Leng Clan was nervous. They had been attacked on the day before, but luckily, they hadn't lost any Saint, just some face. But the Leng Clan didn't know what to do; they were occupied by Shrines, what could they do? They couldn't say anything. Even if they hoped the Shrines would change their stationary base, they couldn't say anything.

The Continent of the Nine Clouds was in a state of chaos, all the Clans had their own ideas and none wanted to be destroyed. The relations they had with other groups was complex.

A few li away from the gate of the Leng Clan, someone appeared, walking slowly. That person was wearing ordinary clothes, a hat, and looked like a tourist. It was Lin Feng, about to attack the Leng Clan. He had gotten prepared. Mo Yu and the others were going to attack the Leng Clan by surprise, and then Lin Feng would attack once the situation was chaotic and try to kill a low-level Saint. That was his plan.

But as Lin Feng got closer to the Leng Clan, he didn't feel safe. The sensation was becoming more and more intense.

That kind of feeling, it's the intuition I get because of the

Celestial Dao Destiny Technique. It could be dangerous, thought Lin Feng, frowning. He didn't feel relaxed at all, and acted promptly. He took out a talisman and said, "Plan canceled. Disperse! "

"We're about to attack, how could we give up?" replied Mo Yu. At that moment, an attack descended from the sky and attacked the Leng Clan.

"Disperse, Jun Mo Xi, fellow disciple, Yan Qing, disperse!" said Lin Feng, contacting everyone personally. Lin Feng realized that the ground under his feet was golden. Lights surrounded his body. Those lights surrounded everybody li away, including the members of the Leng Clan.

What a powerful attack. The atmosphere is becoming chaotic. Only a high-level Saint could do that!, thought Lin Feng. He was petrified. He took out a deployment talisman and broke it. However, he didn't disappear. The atmosphere around him was in chaos, he couldn't control anything. Lin Feng pulled a long face... this deployment spell could constrict deployment talismans!

Mo Yu realized that, too. Mo Yu was stupefied. This time, they hadn't destroyed the teleportation portal, the situation was extremely dangerous.

"Officer Qing Ye, we're in the Leng Clan and we're in danger. Help us!" Mo Yu sensed danger and immediately contacted Qing Ye. The Leng Clan's teleportation portal kept flashing. Qi filled the air. Mo Yu saw strong cultivators moving towards them.

"Go!" shouted Mo Yu urgently. Jun Mo Xi, Hou Qing Lin, and Qing Lin dispersed.

"Come here!" A dazzling light streaked across the sky, it was Lin Feng, riding a Saint's Weapon.

Mo Yu was stupefied and said, "Moron! Who told you to show yourself!"

Lin Feng smiled at the angry Mo Yu and said, “You’re the moron, I told you I’d protect you.”

He shot towards Hou Qing Lin and said, “Come here!”

Hou Qing Lin, Jun Mo Xi, and Yan Qing weren’t very strong. If they stayed alone, they would be in danger, especially if they couldn’t use deployment talismans. They wouldn’t be able to escape!

Chapter 2441: Encircling A Furious Warrior

Lin Feng's boat moved extremely quickly. He didn't intend to battle at all, and flew away. However, they saw talismans appeared in front of them. A dazzling golden wall appeared and flashed unceasingly before them.

"Break!" Lin Feng threw his spear at the wall. It hit hard, but only a small hole appeared, it wasn't big enough. Lin Feng and the others pulled long faces. Bad luck!

"Their three high-level Saints seem to know a lot about deployment spells. After what happened in the Hong Clan, they cast such a gigantic deployment spell, and now we're inside it," said Mo Yu. She was very nervous. If the high-level Saints attacked them, they'd die quickly. They didn't stand a chance against high-level Saints, the difference between them and low-level Saints was gigantic.

"They're not in a rush, they're gathering strong cultivators. They don't want to take the risk to attack alone," said Hou Qing Lin, turning his head around and gazing into the distance. Their enemies knew they couldn't escape. After what had happened in the Hong Clan, their enemies had seen how strong they were. If they could kill low-level Saints in such a short time, they couldn't afford taking risks. They had to be very vigilant.

"The high-level Saints haven't shown up yet," Lin Feng said coldly when he saw that strong cultivators were gathering.

"More than ten low-level Saints. Even if their high-level Saints don't come, we will all die... unless our people arrive in time," whispered Mo Yu pulling a long face.

"Did you contact them?" Lin Feng asked her.

"Of course, I don't want to die," said Mo Yu.

"I know why the high-level Saints didn't show up." asked Yan

Qing. Mo Yu gazed into the distance.

“The Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine want to kill us all in one strike,” said Yan Qing. “They guessed the Fortune Shrine was going to send people to help us, so they thought of a solution to stop them.”

“If it were me, I wouldn’t miss that opportunity,” Lin Feng nodded. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine held the numeric advantage. They had four high-level Saints, the Fortune Shrine only had three. So even if all their low-level Saints showed up, it wouldn’t change anything since their enemies had more high-level Saints.

“A dozen low-level Saints is enough to get rid of us. What should we do now?” said Mo Yu. The enemies could already put pressure on them.

“Mo Yu, seal the three of them within a sealed world,” Lin Feng said to her.

Mo Yu was startled, and protested, “You’re crazy! There are a dozen low-level Saints there, all of them have powerful Saint’s techniques, and they all have Saint’s Weapons.”

“Trust me,” said Lin Feng. At that moment, he looked so calm it was scary. Hou Qing Lin and the others couldn’t fight against low-level Saints. That’s why Lin Feng asked Mo Yu to put them in a sealed world.

“Alright,” said Mo Yu. She looked gloomy. When she saw how determined Lin Feng looked, she sealed their allies in a world.

“During the battle, get ready to release even more sealing strength. Try to seal me and as few people as possible in the same world,” Lin Feng said to Mo Yu telepathically.

Mo Yu’s eyes twinkled. She was surprised, but replied, “Alright, I understand.”

“Stay away for now, I will stay in the front,” said Lin Feng,

flashing forwards. Their enemies were surprised at his bravery.

“Mu Lin, be careful!” Mo Yu called out. She was extremely nervous. If she wasn’t mistaken, the high-level Saints of the opposite army had probably gone to fight against the high-level Saints of the Fortune Shrine. That way, even if the high-level Saints of the Fortune Shrine wanted to come and help, they couldn’t. It was a very dangerous situation, as Lin Feng and Mo Yu couldn’t escape. At least, she was convinced it was impossible.

Lin Feng was firmly holding his spear. He had already fought against many low-level Saints in the past in the Star World, but then, the nine Bestial Saints were the most powerful of enemies. They disdained the examinees. Of course, at that moment, even though his enemies were not as strong as the Bestial Saints, they were still very strong, but Lin Feng was also really strong himself.

Lin Feng raised his spear and a special Qi appeared. Original strength filled the air.

“Be careful, the space contains illusion original strength. That guy can make people believe nothing has happened. We need to join hands and kill him as quickly as possible!” said a strong cultivator of the Empty Space Shrine. His eyes were golden, as if he could see through all things.

A dazzling light filled the air, it contained Saint’s strength. All sorts of original strengths started rising up in the air and stirring restlessly. The space started shaking. An invisible and intangible wind started blowing. But in the end, those whirlwinds all moved towards Lin Feng.

“Die!” shouted a strong cultivator extremely loudly. Dazzling golden lights streaked across the sky and turned into cage. Lin Feng was inside. At the same time, above Lin Feng, a gigantic hand appeared and descended from the sky with a rumble of thunder, flames blazing around it. It looked like a burning mountain falling from the sky, red as blood and fire. It burned away all the Qi in its

way.

A sharp golden sword also shot towards Lin Feng.

“Mu Lin.” Mo Yu’s face paled. The Saint’s attacks blotted out the sky and covered the earth. The low-level Saints didn’t get close to him, but they used their most powerful attacks to kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng flashed away and released a terrifying heavy strength. The atmosphere became heavy and oppressive. It was difficult to breathe.

“Slow!” said Lin Feng. Everything around him became slow. Then, Lin Feng put his spear in front of him. Illusory shadows appeared with three heads and six arms, ancient imprints appeared around them, and the golden cage tore apart. At the same time, the heavy strength turned into ancient imprints and struck all the attacks around him.

Some attacks continued moving towards him. Lin Feng raised his spear again and spun it. An explosive Qi emerged from his spear, the gigantic fire hand crackled, and Lin Feng stabbed the hand with his spear. He looked like a warlord, a god of war.

“Mo Yu, get ready to seal me and him in another space so that others can’t influence me,” said Lin Feng telepathically.

Mo Yu nodded. Lin Feng was even stronger than she had thought. He controlled many sorts of original strengths!

“Alright, but against those people’s attacks, my world strength is not very useful. They will be able to break it in a few seconds,” said Mo Yu to Lin Feng. She had to tell him clearly, otherwise things would be even more dangerous for Lin Feng. A small mistake could lead to his death.

“A few seconds is enough.” replied Lin Feng. Mo Yu looked at him admiringly. She was confident he could help.

“Interesting.” At that moment, a Saint looked at Lin Feng as if he were prey. He didn’t hurry to attack. Lin Feng was very strong, so

they had to be careful. The best thing was to disperse a little so that their attacks wouldn't have an impact on their allies. They had to get closer to Lin Feng to kill him by using their most powerful Saint's techniques. They had to act quickly, too.

“Empty space, bury!” said a voice coldly. Empty space strength suddenly blotted out the sky and covered the earth, surrounding Lin Feng. Lin Feng tried to move, but the strength constricted him. He was stuck in a small and narrow empty space tunnel, and the empty space energy was corroding his body.

Lin Feng's eyes glittered as he glanced at an old man with golden eyes. He was a powerful low-level Saint of the Empty Space Shrine.

Chapter 2442: Killing

Lin Feng was surrounded and buried by empty space strength. He understood that if the old man was a high-level Saint, he would have crushed him instantly, especially if his empty space strength had reached the maximum level.

However, the old man was still very strong.

Lin Feng's spear contained a powerful absorbing strength. He raised it, and it started absorbing the empty space strength around him furiously. The empty space strength went wild. The golden-eyed old man was startled, his eyes flaring. He raised his hand and an empty space tower appeared above Lin Feng.

"Go in!" said the old man coldly. The empty space tower descended towards Lin Feng. At the same time, more empty space strength surrounded Lin Feng and constricted him.

"A Saint's Weapon." Lin Feng was impressed. It was an extremely powerful Saint's Weapon that could imprison people. There was definitely a world inside.

When the others saw that, they didn't hurry to attack Lin Feng. If the old man managed to capture Lin Feng in his tower, they wouldn't need to continue fighting.

"Mu Lin, that guy's name is Xu Yu, he's a very powerful low-level Saint. He is also enigmatic and unfathomable. That tower is called the Holy Imprisoning Pagoda, it's a medium-level Saint's Weapon," said Mo Yu, her face stiff. The strong cultivator against whom Lin Feng was fighting was famous, his attacks and his Holy Imprisoning Pagoda were fearsome.

"Get ready to seal. When I tell you, seal him and me in the same world," replied Lin Feng telepathically.

Mo Yu was amazed, this guy was so self-confident. She ground her teeth and released an incredible Qi. She said, "Alright, when

you need me to do it, just tell me, I'm ready. It'll last for a few seconds."

"That's enough," replied Lin Feng. He released a terrifying sword energy, and the empty space strength which surrounded him crackled and broke apart. He eyed the Holy Imprisoning Pagoda. It was dazzling, and the space around it was chaotic. The Holy Imprisoning Pagoda moved towards Lin Feng, but it couldn't get any closer. Lin Feng had used his Great Empty Space Technique, he could use it not only on his own body, but on other things as well.

Lin Feng raised his spear. Xu Yu saw a rising dragon, his heart twitched, was he dreaming? It looked so real.

"He's using an illusion!" Xu Yu was startled.

Lin Feng said to Mo Yu, "Start!"

Mo Yu nodded. Suddenly, stars appeared around Lin Feng and Xu Yu, and the others' faces changed. "Oh no, kill him!"

After that, they moved towards the star world together and attacked. At the same time, Lin Feng jumped forwards, it looked like he was walking slowly, but actually, during those few milliseconds, his illusion was corroding his enemy's soul. Xu Yu retreated, covered with cold sweat.

Suddenly, another dragon moved towards him and opened its mouth. Xu Yu released as many empty space lights as he could, trying to crush the dragon even if it was an illusion.

However, at the moment the dragon pierced through the empty space strength and turned into a spear, it continued moving towards Xu Yu faster than the eye.

Xu Yu didn't have time to react, he was trembling as a wound appeared on his third eye and blood splashed.

Lin Feng waved his hands and sliced into his enemy's forehead, dispersing his soul.

Mo Yu was astonished and trembled. Lin Feng had killed a Saint again, the attack looked similar to his finger attack. The enemy had hallucinated, and then Lin Feng had killed him without giving him time to react. He was just too fast.

The sealing strength broke apart, and the others saw that Xu Yu was dead. They were astonished and had chills. That guy had killed Xu Yu in the blink of an eye. They knew how strong Xu Yu was, they had to do something against Lin Feng. When the sealed world disappeared, they all charged towards him. They wanted to crush Lin Feng!

“Slow, slow!” Lin Feng released as much slow strength as he could to slow them down. It was as if time and space had stopped around them. However, Lin Feng still felt under pressure. An empty space hand imprint crashed onto his body, he couldn’t stop it, and he coughed blood.

He looked furious. Many Lin Feng’s appeared all around and moved in every direction.

“Earth Burial!” said someone coldly. Earth original strength filled the air, meteorites started falling from the sky. Many of Lin Feng’s clones were destroyed. A strong wind started blowing and swept out. More clones exploded.

Suddenly, all the strong cultivators saw a different landscape, a dream created by Lin Feng. Then, they all had the impression he was running towards them personally to attack them. The cultivator against whom Lin Feng was really attacking was a middle-aged man. He controlled empty space original strength and two other kinds of original strength. He was very dangerous.

“Mo Yu.” shouted Lin Feng. Mo Yu released another sealed star world. Lin Feng and the middle-aged man appeared in a sealed world. Lin Feng was close to him so sealing them together was easy.

“Oh no!” the others suddenly sensed sealing strength and came

back to their senses. They looked at Mo Yu and said, “Kill that woman first!”

They suddenly started flying towards Mo Yu. She was astonished and grimaced. She raised her hand and took out a stick. It was a Star Stick.

“Break!” shouted Mo Yu. She was extremely sad to do that, her stick exploded and turned into gigantic stars. The stars turned into a firmly sealed ball with her inside.

Powerful attacks bombarded her sealed star world, it crackled, however, it didn’t break. It was extremely resistant.

“She used a medium-level Saint’s Weapon. We’ll have to attack a few times to break it,” said someone. At the same time, they continued attacking her sealed star world unceasingly. Dozens of powerful attacks continued bombarding it.

There was a crack of thunder as the star world broke. Mo Yu’s face paled. She wasn’t as strong as Lin Feng, and she didn’t control several sorts of original strength like him who could use slow, fast, and empty space strengths. So many low-level Saints surrounded her, they could easily kill her.

“You want to die!” sneered a voice coldly. It sounded like the voice of a demon. The crowd sensed a terrifying strength invade the space behind them. A cultivator was moving towards Mo Yu; he raised his hand, explosive energies appeared around him. Mo Yu looked devastated and hopeless, was she really going to die?

“Slash, slash!” Blood splashed on Mo Yu’s face, she closed her eyes. She sensed a terrifying sword Qi. When she opened her eyes, she saw a terrifying and dazzling sword Qi floating in front of her, it was protecting her.

Mu Lin was in the distance and surrounded by demon energies. He was holding a demon halberd, and looked like an ancient demon. There was a low-level Saint’s corpse hanging on the tip of

the halberd.

“Great Demon Halberd of Desolation!” A strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine stared at Lin Feng in astonishment. His face paled as he looked at Lin Feng and said, “It’s you, it’s you, Lin Feng!”

“It’s me,” said Lin Feng. His eyes turned black, it seemed like anything could drown in those eyes. They were filled with murder. He said coldly, “Today, you’re going to die.”

Pitch-black light beams emerged from his eyes, the whole crowd had the impression they were falling into an abyssal black hole.

The one who had just recognized Lin Feng didn’t even have time to react, Lin Feng beheaded him with his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. He looked astonished as he died unwillingly.

“Let’s go!” shouted the others desperately. They wanted to leave the illusion. Five low-level Saints were left on their side, and they didn’t dare fight anymore, they were too scared.

“Where are you going?!” That voice seemed to come from the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, and demons appeared all around. Lin Feng slowly walked forwards. He looked like a demon god, his enemies looked hopeless and dispirited. They had the impression they were carrying the whole world on their shoulders. How could they fight? Strong cultivators kept dying one after the other. They either disappeared or their corpses fell down to the ground when Lin Feng attacked them with his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation.

Mo Yu looked at the guy who looked like a demon god. That was Lin Feng, a cultivator many people talked about often in the Fortune Shrine!

Chapter 2443: Celestial Sealing Map

Lin Feng put his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation away, and his demon energies dispersed as his God's Sword went back into his hand. He looked at Mo Yu and said, "What's wrong?"

Mo Yu was still stunned. Lin Feng looked normal again, but his voice made her heart tremble. She couldn't calm down. She finally shook her head and replied, "Nothing. But this area is still a deployment spell cast by a high-level Saint, we can't break it, what do we do?"

Hou Qing Lin and Jun Mo Xi came out next to them, Mo Xi had released them already. They were all astonished by Lin Feng's abilities, especially Yan Qing, he hadn't thought Lin Feng was so strong.

"The area is sealed, the others probably didn't think Lin Feng would be so strong and could kill a dozen low-level Saints. But their allies will quickly find out they all died. If high-level Saints come, we're doomed," said Yan Qing.

At that moment, many people who had just become Saints appeared in the distance, but they stayed far away. They had seen the tragic battle a moment before. Lin Feng had killed everyone.

"They already told their allies about it," said Hou Qing Lin, glancing at those people, "We need to find a solution."

"I'll go and try," said Lin Feng. Then, he said to Mo Yu, "You take care of those Half-Saints."

"Alright." Mo Yu nodded. She was a low-level Saint, she could easily destroy Half-Saints, even if there were a lot of them.

Lin Feng took his boat and flew to the edge of the deployment spell. He shouted furiously and bombarded the deployment spell with his Ruler's Sword. However, it was useless. He couldn't break it. The original strength of a high-level Saint was too powerful for

him.

It seems like I have no choice, I need to ask a Bestial Saint for help, or we won't be able to break free. Or I could also gamble and hope that a high-level Saint of the Fortune Shrine comes. Then it'd mean that we'd have to wait and see which high-level comes first, ours or theirs, thought Lin Feng.

Lin Feng didn't feel like using another Bestial Saint though, as he could ask them for help only once.

—

As he had expected, the news quickly spread in Da Yu City. The Fire Shrine quickly informed the other Shrines. Lin Feng was different from the other enemies.

At the top of a celestial fire mountain in the Fire Shrine, a strong cultivator was seated cross-legged. In front of him, light curtains appeared, showing different Shrines' leaders.

"Why did you summon us?" asked a cultivator wearing an empty space robe of the Fire Shrine's leader. He looked unhappy.

"Haven't you heard the news? Lin Feng is in Da Yu City, and he killed a dozen of our low-level Saints," said the Fire Shrine's leader. The other was astonished.

Someone else asked, "So what?"

"Hmph! The Forbidden Body isn't the sole responsibility of the Fire Shrine. We're all responsible for getting rid of it. If you don't want to fight a war against the Fortune Shrine, it's your problem, but back then, we all agreed to get rid of the forbidden person. So many strong cultivators have died already, now the world is in a state of chaos, you know what it means? If a new god appears, you will all be crushed, even if you are a Shrine. You will have no choice but to acknowledge allegiance to him. You'll become a joke in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Maybe then, your lives will be in someone else's hands, maybe the Fortune Shrine will reign over

the world and will do whatever they want to you,” said the Fire Shrine’s leader coldly. “The Forbidden Body is there, and we have to kill him, unless you think the Fortune Shrine will forget about all these years of tensions?”

Everybody looked surprised. Their ultimate goal in life, as strong cultivators, was to become really peerless. They wanted to become stronger than anyone else in the world. They wanted to become THE single god. They wanted to be unreachable, so that nobody would be able to catch up with them. If they allowed anyone to surpass and oppress them, then it became impossible. It also meant they acknowledged that person as a god. How could they let the Fortune Shrine become so powerful?

“I’ve heard that some high-level Saints protect him, a very powerful one. Unless we send a peerless Saint, we can’t kill Lin Feng. The Fortune Shrine won’t just stand by and look on,” said a Shrine’s leader.

“The Empty Space Shrine has the Celestial Sealing Map, doesn’t it? Can’t you take it out? Seal all the members of the Fortune Shrine in Da Yu City, I’ll personally send a peerless Saint to kill Lin Feng,” said the Fire Shrine’s leader. “But I also hope that everybody will help and cooperate. Don’t stay on the side and watch. You also need to help. Otherwise, I don’t care, we’ll just let Lin Feng grow and become strong.”

“Is that so? But Lin Feng hates the Fire Shrine more than any other Shrine,” someone smiled.

“If you think the Fortune Shrine will be nice to the Ice and Snow Shrine if they become the ultimate leaders of the world, then just sit aside and watch,” replied the Fire Shrine’s leader.

“Your plan is that we take out the Celestial Sealing Map, you send a peerless Saint, the others help, and that way we can destroy the Fortune Shrine. But we need to get ready first,” said the Empty Space Shrine’s leader.

The Fire Shrine's leader smiled, "We'll all gather in Da Yu City."

In Da Yu City, Lin Feng couldn't do much, he had to get help from a Bestial Saint. Lin Feng was really annoyed. The Bestial Saint just came out and broke the seal, then left without doing anything. He had promised them they would only need to help once. There were only nine high-level Bestial Saints in the Star World, so Lin Feng only had nine opportunities. Regarding the three peerless Bestial Saints, they disdained him and didn't listen to him.

But Lin Feng understood. He was extremely weak in comparison to them. It was already difficult to convince the high-level Bestial Saints.

The Leng Clan had already been turned into a field of ruins. He had already killed all the Saints. Lin Feng was convinced that these were severe losses for the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine.

"I wonder how the other battle is going?" whispered Lin Feng.

"Should we go and see?" said Mo Yu.

"No need. We can't join the high-level Saints' battle. What just happened will quickly reach them. That way, I'm convinced the high-level Saints will know when to move back," said Lin Feng.

Mo Yu nodded. She was curious though, where did the high-level Saint Lin Feng had called come from? Why had he just broken the seal and then left?

She guessed Lin Feng had a treasure, but she couldn't ask him about that. Everybody had secrets. Lin Feng was just too mysterious.

Somewhere in Da Yu City was a teleportation portal. At that moment, it twinkled. Empty space strength rolled in waves around

it. Someone was coming from very far away.

Many people noticed it in Da Yu City, including Lin Feng and the others. The teleportation portal didn't twinkle only once, but several times. Lin Feng and the others frowned.

Mo Yu pulled a long face.

"There, it's a stationary base of the two Shrines. They possibly..." whispered Mo Yu. Her face stiffened.

"Maybe they teleported directly from the Shrines," said Lin Feng.

"Yes. I didn't think they would pay so much attention to the battlefields of Da Yu City, to the extent that they would make a teleportation portal in the Shrine to get here. The Fortune Shrine doesn't even have one," said Mo Yu. She was annoyed. "If strong cultivators can teleport directly from their Shrines, then they're probably high-level Saints. We must inform the Fortune Shrine's masters and tell them we need to leave Da Yu City."

"Leave?" Lin Feng was surprised.

"We should, temporarily at least. We can't do much if they keep sending in new troops," said Mo Yu. However, at that moment, in the distance, some dazzling lights appeared in the sky, and empty space strength appeared everywhere above Da Yu City.

"What's that?" Mo Yu was astonished. She shuddered with fear. A terrifying ocean of empty space was rolling in the sky. What was the Empty Space Shrine doing?

Chapter 2444: A Deal with the Peerless Bestial Saint

Lin Feng and the others raised their heads in awe. A gigantic web of lights appeared in the sky and covered the whole city.

“It’s a recording map,” said Jun Mo Xi, stunned.

“Celestial Sealing Map.” Mo Yu trembled even more violently, her face pale. That was the legendary Celestial Sealing Map of the Empty Space Shrine!

“Celestial Sealing Map?” Lin Feng looked surprised. He had read many books, he knew what the Celestial Sealing Map was. It was an empty space treasure, it could seal gigantic regions and at that moment, the Empty Space Shrine was using it to seal Da Yu City!

“The Empty Space Shrine wants to seal the whole town,” said Mo Yu. Her mouth was wide open in shock. Strong cultivators from Shrines had teleported to Da Yu City, and now they were sealing the city, Da Yu City was an almost insignificant battlefield to do such a thing. Maybe it was for Lin Feng!

“Lin Feng, what do we do? They’re probably coming for you!” said Mo Yu. She was panic-stricken.

Lin Feng frowned, and looked furious. The Shrines were doing all they could to kill him once again. They even used the Celestial Sealing Map!

“Let’s disperse,” said Lin Feng to Mo Yu and the others. He also thought the Shrines were looking for him. He couldn’t stay with Mo Yu and the others, otherwise, they’d be in danger, too.

“No, we need to ask the Fortune Shrine for help!” said Hou Qing Lin. The Fortune Shrine would definitely help if the other Shrines tried to kill Lin Feng.

“No time anymore. Brother, you don’t know how powerful the

Celestial Sealing Map is. Even if the Fortune Shrine sends some peerless Saints, they won't be able to break it," said Lin Feng. Hou Qing Lin pulled a long face. The Celestial Sealing Map was too powerful...

"Since the Empty Space Shrine has the Celestial Sealing Map, the Fortune Shrine must have terrifying items to resist as well," said Jun Mo Xi indifferently. The Shrines all probably had trump cards.

"Indeed," said Hou Qing Lin nodding.

"Let's not think about that for now. You guys find a place to hide, gather with the other strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine," said Lin Feng. He didn't let them talk, he continued, "Anyway, they won't find me easily."

After that, Lin Feng's silhouette flickered and he streaked across the sky. Mo Yu and the others were stunned.

"He doesn't want us to be put in danger," whispered Mo Yu, watching Lin Feng disappear into the distance. Hou Qing Lin clenched his fists. He felt powerless. He couldn't help his friend. On the contrary, if he stayed with Lin Feng, he would even be a burden!

—

At that moment, many people raised their heads in Da Yu City. Many strong cultivators knew that Da Yu City had just been sealed.

In a place where the Qi was thick and rich, someone who had invited people for a banquet sensed that the area was being sealed. He raised his head, and looked unhappy, "Who did that?"

"Master, I came to inform you, since you're a supreme cultivator, it's the Celestial Sealing Map of the Empty Space Shrine," said someone, standing up, "The Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine are fighting against the Fortune Shrine in Da Yu City for control over the city. You might be involved at some point, since you're a supreme cultivator. I didn't think they'd use the Celestial

Sealing Map though.”

“What does that have to do with me?” asked that supreme cultivator indifferently.

“The world is in a state of chaos. The Shrines need people, they need resources, they need strength. Therefore, they want to keep good relations with the local people and they want them to help if needed,” said that person with a smile.

The supreme cultivator nodded. He understood.

“I don’t want to have anything to do with them,” said that supreme cultivator indifferently. The others looked at him politely.

Regarding the Empty Space Shrine’s actions, many people in Da Yu City were unhappy, but what could they do? And what was going on in Da Yu City? Why were they using the Celestial Sealing Map?

Da Yu City was big, Lin Feng was on his boat and he flying away. He found a mountain range and sat down cross-legged. He immediately went into his Star World.

“Master Ox,” said Lin Feng to the old ox. He said, “Some peerless Saints might be coming to kill me. If I hide here, can they find me?”

“Of course, nothing can escape from peerless Saints’ godly awareness. If you hide in the praying mat which is the Star World, if a peerless Saint sees it, he will think there’s something strange and he will find you, unless he decides to ignore it,” said the old Ox.

Lin Feng’s face stiffened. Da Yu City was sealed, he couldn’t escape. If he went into his own world, the Qi could still be sensed outside, he couldn’t hide from a peerless Saint’s godly awareness.

“Do you have an idea? What could I do this time?” Lin Feng asked the old ox.

“In the Star World, there are three peerless Saints, convince them to help you,” said the old ox calmly.

Lin Feng frowned. The three peerless Saints didn't want to help him. How could he convince them?

“I have no choice but to try, I guess. Even if all the high-level Bestial Saints agreed to help, it'd be useless,” Lin Feng smiled.

He disappeared and reappeared in front of the three peerless Bestial Saints. They were all at the top of a mountain. Their eyes were closed, they didn't even look at Lin Feng.

The old ox appeared next to Lin Feng and smiled, “I myself can't even convince these three guys. I can't help you, either. Back in the days, when my Master recruited them, they were unwilling to submit until he became a very peerless cultivator, and nobody else was stronger than him anymore. After he disappeared, nobody has ever managed to get help from them.”

Lin Feng nodded and looked at them, saying, “Masters.”

The three of them were still seated cross-legged, they didn't even look at Lin Feng. He was annoyed.

“Guys, Lin Feng is the new master of the Star World, give him face,” said the old ox indifferently. One of them opened his eyes and glanced at Lin Feng. Lin Feng's soul shook under those eyes.

“Speak,” said that cultivator indifferently.

“Master, the Shrines might be sending some peerless Saints to kill me, I need you to help me,” said Lin Feng. Only peerless Saints could help Lin Feng in such circumstances.

“Why?” asked that cultivator in a cold and detached way.

Lin Feng replied calmly, “The Shrines have been chasing me because I have a Forbidden Body, and according to legends, it is said that if a forbidden person appears, the Continent of the Nine Clouds will sink into a state of chaos, and a new god might appear.

You guys are all peerless Saints, but you've been stuck at that cultivation level for a long time. If someday I become as strong as you or even stronger, I'll help you."

"A god is a concept you don't understand. Besides, it's not even sure you could become one, and if you did, it's not even sure you could help us. Even if you did reach that level, you wouldn't be willing to help anyway," said that cultivator indifferently. It made sense, but Lin Feng felt annoyed. Becoming a god was easier said than done. Besides, if someone became a god, would they be willing to help others become gods?

Lin Feng sighed and said, "Since it's that way, I'm off."

He sounded neither haughty nor humble, and turned around. They didn't trust him, and he couldn't convince them. If it was his fate to die, then he was going to die.

"Wait," that cultivator said suddenly.

Lin Feng turned back around and asked, "Master, how may I help you?"

"You're the new master of the Star World. If you become a high-level Saint, I'll help you," said that cultivator calmly. Lin Feng was stunned. Did he have time to become a high-level Saint? Da Yu City was sealed! Shrines' cultivators were coming! Did he have time to practice cultivation?

"I will do my best," said Lin Feng.

"If you don't trust yourself, why would we trust you?" said that person indifferently. He closed his eyes again. Lin Feng was stupefied.

Chapter 2445: People's Plans and Actions

Lin Feng left the Star World, looking calm and detached. The Empty Space Shrine's strong cultivators had decided to use the Celestial Sealing Map, so peerless Saints attacking were also a possibility. They had been a bit too careless this time when they had decided to attack the Leng Clan, they had underestimated the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine. Now Mo Yu and Hou Qing Lin were in danger too, and Lin Feng had also been uncovered.

Of course, Lin Feng hadn't thought the Shrines would do so much to kill him.

This time, Da Yu City is completely sealed. Peerless Saints could arrive anytime. All I need is time, thought Lin Feng. Even though peerless Saints could inspect the whole town with their godly awareness, Da Yu City was a big city. If they wanted to inspect the whole town, they would need time, too. Lin Feng needed to hide properly enough to save time.

The most dangerous place is a place nobody would consider a good place to hide, thought Lin Feng. He changed his face, body, and Qi, and then disappeared from there.

Da Yu City was sealed, and the strong cultivators from the Shrines who had teleported there were already looking for Lin Feng. Even if they couldn't find Lin Feng, they would try to find members of the Fortune Shrine to kill them. That way, they wouldn't waste time, but they'd also be able to take over Da Yu City. Peerless Saints didn't really care about such things. If it wasn't for Lin Feng, no peerless Saint would have come.

Peerless Saints were the most precious cultivators of the Shrines. Shrines didn't have many peerless Saints, they were extremely rare. Besides, they stood aloof from worldly affairs, and they didn't listen to anyone's orders. Everybody was very polite to peerless

Saints.

At that moment, Officer Qing Ye and the others were being chased. The battles were fierce. Mo Yu also fought against other people.

“Disperse, some people are coming to help them, we can’t fight forever,” shouted Officer Qing Ye to the members of the Fortune Shrine. The others retreated. However, their enemies continued chasing them. They were wasting time, and weren’t in a rush to win the battles. They followed Mo Yu closely.

“Mo Yu, seal!” shouted someone. It was Lin Feng’s voice. Mo Yu was surprised.

She nodded and sealed the area. The strong cultivator who Mo Yu was fighting against was surprised. He turned around and saw a dazzling sword. He didn’t have time to react and was killed. He had thought the sword wasn’t close yet.

“Lin Feng, how come you’re back already?” asked Mo Yu. She didn’t understand, and pulled a long face. Lin Feng couldn’t show up.

“Lin Feng will leave with his boat, help me do something,” Lin Feng said to her telepathically.

Mo Yu nodded and replied, “Alright, I hope you can deceive them.”

After that, the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine saw Lin Feng leave with his boat, which was an incredible Saint’s Weapon. It was extremely fast. Many people saw Lin Feng leave and chased after him. The order they had received was to kill Lin Feng!

Of course, some people stayed to deal with the members of the Fortune Shrine. Mo Yu was fighting against someone. She took out a Saint’s Weapon and said, “This Saint’s Weapon doesn’t have a

master anymore. It's a medium-level Saint's Weapon, and if you continue chasing me, it'll belong to someone else."

She withdrew. The man was surprised, and used his godly awareness to inspect the weapon. He was surprised, it was indeed a medium-level Saint's Weapon. How tempting!

That woman didn't care about anything anymore but her life, to the extent that she threw the weapon away to escape.

A medium-level Saint's Weapon is worth it!, thought Li Xiao. Killing Mo Yu wasn't that beneficial to him in comparison to a medium-level Saint's Weapon. That weapon would allow him to be that much stronger. In such circumstances, people chose what was the best for them.

Li Xiao flew towards the weapon and looked happy. It was a sword, and it didn't have a master. It was a sword. He smiled indifferently. He put it in his ring and then raised his head. Mo Yu had already disappeared. Li Xiao didn't mind, though.

The Fortune Shrine also learned that Da Yu City had been sealed. In the sky, some strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine were above the clouds and looking at the ground. They flew, but not in Da Yu City's direction.

The Shrines and the Supreme Animal World ruled over the Continent of the Nine Clouds. All the Shrines knew things which other people didn't know. They didn't allow other Shrines to show up in places where they could obtain information. They dared act insolently when other Shrines tried because of three reasons.

First, the Shrines sent Saints where they could obtain as much information as possible.

Second, the Shrines all had at least three peerless Saints. That was a principle in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Third, the Shrines all had extremely powerful weapons. The

Empty Space Shrine wasn't the only Shrine which had something like the Celestial Sealing Map. Every Shrine had something like that, including the Fortune Shrine. That's why there was a balance of power. Nobody dared take out their trump cards. If they did, other Shrines would attack them right after.

The Shrines were very cautious, but because of the Forbidden Body, the world had become chaotic. The strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine were flying in the direction of the Empty Space Shrine. Since the Empty Space Shrine had taken out the Celestial Sealing Map, then, they didn't need to be polite either. They had the opportunity to show the Empty Space Shrine which didn't have the Celestial Sealing Map anymore that it'd be difficult to deal with the Fortune Shrine's peerless weapon.

As the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine flew towards the Empty Space Shrine, the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine were already in Da Yu City. Qiong Fan was a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine who hadn't shown up for many years. He had had an ordinary life for a very long time, but he hadn't become any less strong or sharp. When he landed on the ground, oppressive energies filled the space around him. Many people felt pressured; they didn't know why, but they felt like kneeling down and worshiping him.

He was a peerless Saint, he had transcended worldliness. He was already among the strongest cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. At his cultivation level, only gods were stronger.

High-level Saints liked to say, "it's easy to become a high-level Saint, but it's difficult to become a peerless Saint". Of course, they were the only ones who said that, because becoming a high-level Saint was extremely difficult. Low-level Saints were angry when they heard that, but once they became high-level Saints, they understood. There were many high-level Saints in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, but there were definitely not many peerless Saints.

Qiong Fan rose up in the air, looking like a god. Many people sensed a fearsome godly awareness inspect them. Who dared inspect them with their godly awareness without the slightest scruple? In any case, nobody could say anything.

Many people raised their heads and looked at Qiong Fan, sighing at his strength. Why was that strong cultivator in Da Yu City? Why had the Shrine decided to use the Celestial Sealing Map? What were they looking for?

He moved his godly awareness extremely quickly, but Da Yu City was gigantic. Even if he was fast, he couldn't inspect the whole town that quickly.

"I found some people from the Fortune Shrine, send some people," said Qiong Fan indifferently. Then, some images appeared in the sky, those images were pictures of the place where Saint Qing Ye was. Their people were still chasing people from the Fortune Shrine, but Qiong Fan didn't care about that, he was looking for Lin Feng.

The sky became red, and the temperature in Da Yu City became scorching hot. Many people stopped looking at the sky and lowered their heads. They felt uncomfortable, but nobody dared say anything.

"Where is he!?" said Qiong Fan angrily.

Someone came to him and said, "Master, did you inspect the whole town?"

"Yes, including the mountains, rivers and deserts. He's not here. I can't find his Qi. My godly awareness was only stopped in one place," said Qiong Fan. That person looked worried, he knew what place that was. It was a place where there was a supreme cultivator, and they didn't know where he was from. The only reason why a supreme cultivator would have come to Da Yu City would be to invade it.

“What should we do?” asked the high-level Saint. The world was in a state of chaos, they didn’t want to offend an extremely strong cultivator!

Chapter 2446: Difference Between Cultivators Who Are High-Level Saints

Qiong Fan's eyes twinkled and he said, "Let's go and greet that supreme cultivator," said Qiong Fan, flying away. His people followed him. They also wanted to see the supreme cultivator who was in Da Yu City.

Usually, Ordinary the supreme cultivator was in a good mood. He wanted to settle in Da Yu City. Ordinary didn't care about the Shrines' battles. He was convinced the Shrines wouldn't dare attack him anyway, therefore, he had invited many old and new friends.

But Ordinary was annoyed because Da Yu City had been sealed, so some of his friends whom he had invited would probably be stuck outside. It ruined his mood.

"The Shrines really like to act without the slightest scruple. Not only did they seal Da Yu City but they also inspected the whole town with their godly awareness. And now they're coming to us," said Ordinary unhappily.

"Haha, Master Ordinary, the Shrines are arrogant and disdain people, since they rule over the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Anything that poses a threat to them must be destroyed," someone smiled. That person looked sharp, his Qi was powerful and golden lights twinkled around him.

"We're lucky we got out of that devilish place. We have mountains and rivers and we're drinking alcohol, that's awesome!" said another one smiling.

"Indeed. We should be happy, let's forget about them, cheers!" Ordinary smiled back.

After a short time, a loud voice sounded about them, "Qiong Fan from the Fire Shrine, I'm here to greet you, Your Excellency!"

“Since you’re here, come in,” said Ordinary indifferently. A group of strong cultivators came in, Qiong Fan leading the group. He glanced at them, smiled, and nodded at Ordinary, “Sorry for disturbing you during your banquet, Your Excellency.”

“Since you’re here, have a few drinks with us,” said Ordinary indifferently. Qiong Fan glanced at Ordinary and the others, hiding his surprise. Apart from Ordinary, there was a cultivator as strong as him, and there was Ao Cang Hai, too.

“Alright, thank you for your hospitality,” said Qiong Fan, looking for a place to sit. He had to give them a little face, as he disturbed them, after all and it was a sensitive period. He didn’t want to offend such people. He didn’t mind chatting with Ordinary, who was a supreme cultivator.

Li Xiao was there, too, but his social status was rather low, and he wasn’t strong enough. He stayed far away. He looked around and saw many strong cultivators. When facing peerless Saints, he had nothing to say, he had to obey when they talked.

At that moment, the person everybody was looking for was in Li Xiao’s ring.

The sword Mo Yu had given to Li Xiao was bathed in lights. Lin Feng was in the Star World. The solution Lin Feng had imagined was joining one of his enemies, hiding the Star World in one of his enemies’ rings! Finding him wouldn’t be easy there!

After going into the Star World, Lin Feng had gone into his own world.

So many years had passed, his soul world was perfect. There were all sorts of energies everywhere. There were many countries and empires, not just the Empire of Xue Yue, and more and more cultivators. There were many places to practice, and to become stronger.

And only a few decades had passed. If hundreds or thousands of years passed, then it'd become even better. Lin Feng had already established some rules in Xue Yue, he didn't allow people to kill others in the city center because he wanted the number of people to increase.

Lin Feng was in the sky, to become a high-level Saint, he needed to make one sort of original strength to reach the maximum level. Even though he was at the God Level, he had to do that too and now he was wondering what strength he should make study to make it reach the maximum level.

“Gold, wood, fire, water, earth, wind, empty space, death... I can understand any sort of original strength. And I can understand them even better in my spirit world. However, how to make an original strength reach the maximum level?” whispered Lin Feng. All sorts of original strengths were floating around him at that moment. The different sorts of original strengths all had their specific foibles.

“How could I understand God original strength?” whispered Lin Feng. Maybe he needed to experience things physically to understand.

When he thought about that, he left his own world and went back to the Star World. The nine high-level Saints appeared in front of him. He had never really fought against a high-level Saint, he wanted to see what it felt like now. He wanted to see in what way their original strength was different from his own. What was the difference between high-level Saints and low-level Saints?

“Everybody, I want to see the difference between high-level Saints' strength and low-level Saints'. Can you help me?” asked Lin Feng asked the Saints.

The old Ox appeared next to him and said, to help Lin Feng, “Since he wants to study, teach him a good lesson and show him how strong you are.”

The old Ox couldn't influence peerless Bestial Saints, but he could influence the high-level ones. The golden ape jumped forwards, "Alright, I'll show you!"

"I'm listening, Master!" said Lin Feng, rising up in the air. The golden ape also flew up. Lin Feng's body suddenly stiffened. An incredible oppressive strength surrounded him and gave him the impression he was going to explode.

Lin Feng grimaced. How terrifying! However, he still moved forwards and attacked the golden ape with his sword. But at that moment, apart from oppressive strength, heavy strength surrounded him and prevented him from moving forwards.

"That's..." Lin Feng noticed how incredible the difference between him and the ape was.

He was astonished. He released fast strength, and moved like the wind towards the ape while releasing sword strength.

The sword crashed against the ape's skin, which was as thick as an earth armor. It couldn't pierce through. At the same time, the ape raised his hand and moved it towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng could sense how oppressive the heavy strength was. It was extremely resistant, too. He accelerated, groaning with pain, feeling like his organs were going to explode as he coughed blood.

Lin Feng took a deep breath, he looked astonished. He was a low-level Saint and he could defeat them extremely easily. He hadn't thought the difference between low-level Saints and high-level Saints would be so incredible.

"So? Did you sense it? That's how powerful earth original strength is: oppression strength, heaviness strength, thick strength, defense strength, all those kinds of strength are earth original strength. And golden apes don't only control earth strength; even high-level Saints are like insects in front of him," said the old ox.

“Is the difference between high-level Saints and other high-level Saints bigger than the difference between low-level and high-level Saints?” asked Lin Feng to the old ox.

“Of course, things also depend on which strength you control. Now imagine if one cultivator has one original strength at the maximum level and another one has two original strengths at the maximum level... which one has the advantage? Among the high-level Bestial Saints in front of you, a few of them also use a fusion of original strengths, but because these kinds of original strengths are inconsistent with the criteria to become a peerless Saint, they’re still high-level Bestial Saints. So now, in your opinion, who is stronger: someone who controls two sorts of original strengths, or someone who uses a fusion of two original strengths?” the old ox said to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was speechless. Of course, fusions of original strengths were probably more powerful. In order to make original strengths fuse, a cultivator had to understand them really well, which meant they were stronger than others who just understood two types.

“A high-level Saint can be ten times, or even a hundred times stronger than another high-level Saint. A really strong high-level Saint can easily kill other high-level Saints, he can even defeat hundreds of them alone and at once,” the old ox smiled at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was astonished, “I see, that’s why the nine high-level Saints accepted to fight against me when I become a high-level Saint.”

“You only understood now?” asked the old ox casually. The nine high-level Bestial Saints looked at Lin Feng, seeming amused. They hoped that Lin Feng would quickly become a high-level Saint, and then they would teach him a good lesson!

Chapter 2447: Peerlessly Terrifying Old Ox

Lin Feng looked at the nine Bestial Saints' faces and burst into laughter. Since they really wanted him to become a high-level Saint to teach him a good lesson, good, he was precisely trying to become one! He didn't mind fighting against them a few times to study their original strength. It was a rare opportunity. Besides, the nine Bestial Saints were extraordinary cultivators with an advanced understanding of energies.

"Master Ape, use other kinds of original strength to help me study them," said Lin Feng to the smiling golden ape. He was surprised but grinned. That little boy wasn't afraid, he liked that.

"Use your full strength to attack me. No need to be scared," said the grinning golden ape. Lin Feng nodded. A dazzling golden armor appeared on the golden ape. It was gold original strength, probably extremely resistant.

Lin Feng raised his spear and attacked. His spear turned into a light beam and crashed onto the armor, and sparkles appeared. Of course, it couldn't pierce through.

"When your gold strength reaches the maximum level, your defense becomes incredible. It's better than a Saint's armor. Other people's attacks are too weak to pierce through. Of course, if someone's penetration strength is powerful enough, then they can pierce through my original strength," the golden ape said to Lin Feng.

"Penetration strength?" Lin Feng was surprised.

"Indeed. If your attacks are extremely powerful, as a low-level Saint, you can defeat enemies. But when you're a high-level Saint, direct attacks are not as efficient. Many high-level Saints use incredible treasures, and even without them, their physical defense is also incredibly powerful. So direct attacks become useless. I can make armors using a fusion of earth and gold

strength, ordinary high-level Saints can't do anything against me."

"How do I carry out an attack which has penetration strength?" asked Lin Feng.

"Many sorts of original strengths contain penetration strength. Earth original strength automatically has a sort of penetration strength expressed through pulsations. When using empty space strength, it's even more incredible, cultivators who use empty space strength don't even need to defend themselves," said the gold ape. An armor suddenly appeared on Lin Feng's body. The gold ape made it for him.

"Sense my earth original strength's penetration power," said the golden ape patiently. He put his hand on Lin Feng's armor. Lin Feng sensed a strength envelop his body, pulsating with power. The ape used more force, and Lin Feng groaned with pain. If the ape wanted, he could easily destroy Lin Feng's internal organs.

"Did you sense that? That's earth strength at the maximum level. You need to study a lot to make your original strengths reach their maximum level," said the ape impolitely. Lin Feng nodded. Indeed, he had to study a lot. The ape could actually use earth strength to become a part of the earth and didn't even need to worry about defense anymore.

"If you understand empty space strength at the maximum level, then you don't need to use earth original strength. You don't even need to worry about defense. When you use empty space strength to attack, the attacks attack the cultivator directly, and not their defense," said the golden ape.

Lin Feng looked thoughtful. Another Bestial Saint spoke up, "Alright, I'll show you what empty space original strength looks like at the maximum level. Come and attack me."

Lin Feng nodded. His silhouette flickered and he attacked. He raised his spear and attacked, however, when he attacked, the spear appeared next to the beast even though he hadn't moved.

“Empty space divergence.” Lin Feng was astonished. He raised his left hand and pointed his finger at the beast, whistling sounds spread in the air, and powerful death stamps moved towards the beast. However, the attack stopped in front of the beast and appeared in another space. Then, the beast raised his finger and Lin Feng’s attack moved aside.

“Pfew! How to fight in such conditions?” Lin Feng was stupefied. As expected, original strength at the maximum level wasn’t something so simple.

The old ox watched. All of them looked interested as they watched Lin Feng, their eyes glittering. Lin Feng was determined, they liked that.

After that, Lin Feng was attacked by an illusion original strength attack, he didn’t understand anything anymore. He moved back and took a deep breath when it finished. How scary.

“You sensed so many types of original strengths at the maximum level, but understanding original strength and reaching its maximum level is something else. And doing it in a short time is impossible,” said a Bestial Saint to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng’s face stiffened. It was true. He had experimented a lot but understanding original strength was another story, how difficult! Did he have enough time?

“If the old ox is willing to help you, he can save you a lot of time,” said the Bestial Saint. Lin Feng was surprised.

“Master Ox, you hoped we would help him, why don’t you help him yourself? You can help him more than us,” the Bestial Saint said to the old ox.

“I haven’t attacked for a very long time, I forgot how to attack,” said the old ox indifferently.

“I know our Master made you swear you wouldn’t do anything unless the new master reached a certain level. But you don’t

necessarily need to fight, attack, or whatever to help him,” said that cultivator with a smile.

Lin Feng didn't understand. He only knew that the old ox was the manager of that world. He could go anywhere in this world, just like Lin Feng. He had privileges in this world, maybe even more than Lin Feng.

“Little boy, you know what kind of strength Master Ox controls?”

“I don't know,” said Lin Feng, shaking his head. He was convinced the old ox was extremely strong, but he didn't know how strong.

“From what I know, four of his original strengths have reached the maximum level and he has already fused them together. You can't imagine how strong he is,” said that Bestial Saint with a smile.

Lin Feng frowned. A fusion of four original strengths?! How terrifying! He even controlled special kinds of original strengths, since he was a peerless Saint!

“Which ones?”

“A fusion of slow and fast allows a cultivator to make time and things move slower or faster. Have you ever heard of that?” asked the Bestial Saint smiling.

Lin Feng nodded, “I have.”

“With empty space strength at the maximum level, a cultivator can also modify time and space,” explained the Bestial Saint.

Lin Feng was shocked and looked at the old Ox. “Master Ox, you can modify the speed at which time passes?”

The old ox remained silent, but nodded. He admitted he could.

How strong. Slow and fast strength can really do that. How incredible!, thought Lin Feng, delighted. The old ox controlled

empty space original strength at the maximum level. It meant that he could make time pass slower or faster than in other places!

“Please help me,” Lin Feng asked the old ox. The Bestial Saints’ eyes twinkled. They wanted to see the old ox’ incredible methods, as making time pass faster or slower was something incredible to see. They would also be able to study it. Therefore, they tried to help Lin Feng.

“Alright, I will,” said the old ox. He released a mysterious kind of strength, which filled the air. Lin Feng suddenly had a strange sensation, but he couldn’t describe what it felt like. He raised his arms; he wasn’t moving faster or slower, it wasn’t like fast or slow strength, it was extremely strange.

“The speed at which time passes now has already changed. I will protect you from outside. One day in the outside world is like a dozen days here,” said the old Ox to Lin Feng and the others. “My master and I studied this kind of strength in Ganges Time. When you stay there for years and come out, you realize only two days pass in the outside world, but you don’t feel anything strange there. You just save time.”

“Ganges Time.” Lin Feng looked surprised. The old ox and the god had been to Ganges Time, and they had come out safe and sound. Ganges Time was a forbidden territory; some other people had also come out safe and sound. There was a legend in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, where some people went to Ganges Time and when they came out, they were already so old that they were about to die. No wonder! If time passed extremely quickly inside, everything was possible!

As Lin Feng was practicing cultivation with the high-level Saints, the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine arrived at the Empty Space Shrine. An empty space palace was floating in front of them. They looked furious and determined. That’s how the situation in

the Continent of the Nine Clouds really became explosive!

Chapter 2448: Chaotic Battles

The Shrines were the most powerful groups in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. They didn't need to protect themselves because nobody dared attack them in normal times. However, in times of turmoil, things were different and nobody could anticipate a world sinking into chaos.

When the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine landed in the Empty Space Shrine, the whole Empty Space Shrine was shaken. Some incredible strong cultivators were in the Empty Space Shrine to punish them!

In a very short time, corpses fell from the sky, one after another. A terrifying Qi filled the air. Everybody felt the pressure. Five people had appeared in the sky above the Empty Space Shrine; those five people looked like gods, especially the one who was holding a scepter from which destiny lights emerged. He looked like an almighty god.

"Fortune Shrine, what's this supposed to mean?" asked someone at that moment coldly. An ice-cold energy filled the air.

"The Empty Space Shrine used the Celestial Sealing Map to seal Da Yu City and to attack the disciples of the Fortune Shrine. We obviously can't stay aside and watch, right? So we came with the Scepter of Destiny," said the strong cultivator in the middle calmly. The strong cultivators of the Empty Space Shrine looked furious. Many people were shuddering with fear. The Empty Space Shrine was sinking into chaos and fear.

The Scepter of Destiny was a precious item of the same level as the Celestial Sealing Map. The Celestial Sealing Map could seal Heaven and Earth, the Scepter of Destiny contained the Destiny Heavenly Destruction technique.

"Everything is negotiable," said a strong cultivator of the Empty Space Shrine in a trembling voice. The five peerless Saints of the

Fortune Shrine had come with the Scepter of Destiny, they were just insane!

“When you sealed Da Yu City, you didn’t ask us if we wanted to talk,” said a strong cultivator of the Fortune Shrine coldly, “The world has sunk into chaos. Everything is allowed. Since you used the Celestial Sealing Map, we use a similar weapon and peerless Saints can attack as well, there are no rules anymore.”

After that, he raised his hand and threw out the Scepter of Destiny. It floated in the air and destiny lights appeared all around the Empty Space Shrine.

“Feel the strength of Destiny!” said a strong cultivator of the Fortune Shrine coldly. Destiny lights enveloped the Empty Space Shrine. The terrifying destiny strength kept rolling in waves all around.

“No!...” shouted someone furiously. The Empty Space Shrine was really going to sink into chaos!

The Fortune Shrine was crazy! They had decided to attack the Empty Space Shrine directly. They had come with the Scepter of Destiny and the Empty Space Shrine didn’t have the Celestial Sealing Map to protect themselves.

“Seal!” said someone coldly. Instantly, some golden lights appeared and flashed. They sealed the whole Shrine. However, the peerless Saints of the Fortune Shrine just smiled coldly. One of them raised his hand above his head and celestial star strength appeared in the sky and turned into a cosmic rain. Gigantic meteorites started falling from the sky, crashed onto the golden lights, and destroyed them.

Lights flashed, strong cultivators landed in front of the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine. The space became distorted, a vortex appeared and started absorbing the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine.

“Hmph!” The few Saints smiled coldly and simply dispersed.

“Condense!” said a strong cultivator of the Empty Space Shrine coldly. A Saint of the Fortune Shrine had the sensation as if he were trapped in moving sands. The space around him was being sealed. The strong cultivator of the Empty Space Shrine then teleported himself and reappeared next to the Fortune Shrine’s strong cultivators, he raised his finger and the space around him crackled.

The Fortune Shrine’s strong cultivators shouted furiously and attacked. The atmosphere kept crackling. The peerless Saints of the Fortune Shrine turned into light beams. The Empty Space Shrine’s strong cultivators didn’t feel relaxed at all. A mysterious strength surrounded the strong cultivator of the Empty Space Shrine.

“Break!” shouted that strong cultivator furiously. His body exploded and he turned into millions of pieces before vanishing. On the other side, there was a terrifying battle going on. The body of the peerless Empty Space Shrine’s Saint which had just exploded condensed again there. At the same time, the peerless Saints of the Fortune Shrine reappeared, moving together in perfect harmony. At that cultivation level, battles were unimaginably fantastic.

However, the space wasn’t sealed. The Scepter of Destiny flashed again. The strong cultivators of the Empty Space Shrine were deathly pale and shaking. That ancient Scepter of Destiny was a deadly weapon! It could defy the laws of physics and kill people. Many of the Empty Space Shrine’s strongest cultivators kept falling from the sky one after another.

“Have the Celestial Sealing Map come back!” shouted someone. At that moment, in Da Yu City, Qiong Fan was seated cross-legged and suddenly pulled a long face. His face paled.

“Qiong Fan, the Fortune Shrine came to our Shrine with the Scepter of Destiny! I need the Celestial Sealing Map to come back!”

shouted someone explosively. That voice reverberated everywhere in Da Yu City.

At that moment, people in Da Yu City raised their heads and looked at the sky, it was undulating.

Everybody was trembling. The Fortune Shrine had gone to the Empty Space Shrine with the Scepter of Destiny? How incredible! Would that bring the conflicts to the next level?

“No. The Fortune Shrine wants to protect Lin Feng at all costs, which means he is definitely in Da Yu City, besides, we can now be sure that he’s a forbidden person.” replied Qiong Fan. They couldn’t let Lin Feng live. The Fortune Shrine was going crazy because of him. They wanted to make the Empty Space Shrine bring the Celestial Sealing Map back.

“Hmph! We can’t fight on all fronts!” said a voice in the sky again.

“Since we all agreed on a plan, dear friends, all the Shrines should help. Since the Empty Space Shrine is helping in Da Yu City, send your strong cultivators to the Empty Space Shrine to help. The Fortune Shrine won’t be able to do anything if all the Shrines encircle them,” said Qiong Fan. “The Fire Shrine is really willing to help, so of course I will go there right now. If the others don’t help, then we’ll give up on Lin Feng.”

Qiong Fan disappeared and forgot about Lin Feng for the time being. As long as the Celestial Sealing Map was over Da Yu City, Lin Feng couldn’t escape. They had to help the Empty Space Shrine first.

“The Fortune Shrine is not afraid, and the Fire Shrine, the Empty Space Shrine, and many other Shrines are collaborating, it’s too dangerous.” Many people shuddered. If all the Shrines joined hands, wouldn’t they be able to destroy the Fortune Shrine easily?

People’s hearts were pounding. The Empty Space Shrine had

decided to use the Celestial Sealing Map because of Lin Feng, they wanted to kill him at all costs. And now the Fortune Shrine had gone to attack the Empty Space Shrine directly, also because of Lin Feng.

At that moment, a hole appeared in the Celestial Sealing Map and people left through it, disappearing from everyone's field of vision. Everybody understood that those were people who were teleporting to the Empty Space Shrine. After that, the Celestial Sealing Map shut itself again, and Da Yu City was sealed once more.

"I wonder what's happening in the Empty Space Shrine," murmured many people, gazing into the distance. There was probably a terrifying battle as fierce as the war in the ancient past. Since the end of the war in the old days, the Shrines had never fought again.

"The world is sinking into chaos more and more everyday," whispered an old man in Da Yu City, looking up at the sky.

—

Li Xiao and the others were astonished when they appeared in the sky of the Empty Space Shrine. After Qiong Fan had left, Ordinary had seen them off too. They were annoyed because even though they were Shrines' members, if Qiong Fan wasn't there, Ordinary wasn't willing to host them.

Next to Ordinary, Ao Cang Hai said, "The world has sunk into turmoil because of Lin Feng. I wonder how big the first Shrines' battle will be."

"Don't worry, you can't imagine how complex the Shrines' plans can be," said Ordinary, smiling as if he understood things clearly.

"What do you mean?" asked Ao Cang Hai.

"The Fortune Shrine wants to protect that cultivator called Lin Feng so they went to the Empty Space Shrine, and they must have

killed many strong cultivators there, but no peerless Saint will die. That battle isn't a decisive battle, its sole purpose is to annoy the Empty Space Shrine. After the others arrive, the Fortune Shrine will leave. Do you really think the Fortune Shrine would take the risk of getting destroyed? And do you think that other Shrines would take the risk of trying to kill the Fortune Shrine's peerless Saints?" Ordinary smiled. He was a peerless Saint so he understood that for a Shrine to kill a peerless Saint, they had to make great efforts, and they had to be willing to suffer incredible losses, too.

"Master, you're really farsighted, but if someone has the power to kill those peerless Saints and to break the balance, they will," said Ao Cang Hai. "I know Lin Feng, he's a good guy. He probably has a Forbidden Body. I wonder whether he will survive."

"Funny, I also know a little boy called Lin Feng," Ordinary smiled. "But breaking the balance is easier said than done. All the Shrines have precious items like the Celestial Sealing Map."

"Yes, such items are the Shrines' ultimate trump cards," Ao Cang Hai agreed.

Ordinary smiled and didn't say anything else, he just raised his glass of liquor. He was curious to see how the world would evolve in this time of chaos!

Chapter 2449: Discovered

Da Yu City had been sealed for a few days already. Local people were not going through happy times, nobody could guess how the situation was going to evolve. At the same time, Mo Yu, Hou Qing Lin, and the others were also stuck in Da Yu City. They were so worried that their hearts burned constantly. They had no news from Lin Feng, and they had no news regarding the Shrines' battle either. They didn't know where to go to be safe.

But the Fortune Shrine had gone to the Empty Space Shrine to kill people to protect Lin Feng. It was incredible. The Continent of the Nine Clouds hadn't been so lively since the ancient war...

—

Time passed. Lights appeared in the Celestial Sealing Map. A few people descended from the sky and landed in Da Yu City. The crowd was astonished, the Shrines' alliance was back so soon? How had the Shrines' battle ended?

Ordinary the supreme cultivator was still with his guests. He wanted to settle in Da Yu City, and had recruited some disciples. That's why he had invited some friends as well. It wasn't surprising.

"They're back. Cang Hai, how do you think the battle ended?" asked Ordinary with a grin.

"The Empty Space Shrine has lost many strong cultivators, including some high-level Saints. The Fortune Shrine went there, and probably didn't leave empty-handed," replied Ao Cang Hai, "Regarding the alliance, I don't think they will necessarily use precious items like the Celestial Sealing Map, but I think they will go to the Fortune Shrine. I'm convinced all sorts of Shrines are waiting outside of the Fortune Shrine even now."

"What you mean is that they won't allow the Fortune Shrine's

people to come out?” said Ordinary smiling.

“Indeed. They must have sent some peerless Saints to stay outside of the Fortune Shrine so the Fortune Shrine won’t bother them again while they try to kill Lin Feng. For them, killing Lin Feng is the best way to get their revenge.”

“Indeed. But, apart from that, the other Shrines want to kill Lin Feng and also, they hope the tensions between the Fire Shrine and the Fortune Shrine will deepen,” said Ordinary indifferently. Both of them burst into laughter.

—

Qiong Fan was back in Da Yu City. Apart from him, there was another peerless Saint in Da Yu City: Lu Yang from the Empty Space Shrine. At that moment, both of them were in the sky and inspected the city with their godly awareness. However, after a long time, they still couldn’t find Lin Feng. They were stupefied.

“Same as last time and this time, nobody prevented me from inspecting any area,” said Qiong Fan.

“Maybe he has an incredible empty space treasure which allows him to hide really well. We need to pay attention,” said Lu Yang. He was a Saint of the empty space illusion, he knew how extraordinary empty space strength could be.

“Yes. Maybe we need to break people’s rings,” said Qiong Fan. Breaking into people’s rings was one of the worst things cultivators could do in life, but they didn’t care.

“Let’s do it,” said the two people, closing their eyes. Their terrifying godly awareness enveloped the whole city. Qiong Fan’s godly awareness turned into a fire awl and Lu Yang’s godly awareness turned into an empty space sword. They started breaking people’s ring seals and breaking into them.

At that moment, someone pulled a long face in Da Yu City. He sensed that the seal of his ring was being broken and that

someone's godly awareness was penetrating into it. That strong cultivator could break the seal of his ring easily.

"It's them." When he thought of the Shrines, he pulled a long face. People's rings contained precious treasures. It was against all rules in the cultivation world. It was a blasphemy, but now, those people dared break their ring seals.

Very quickly, many strong cultivators sensed that the seals of their rings were being broken. They were furious, but they couldn't do anything. It was humiliating and infuriating. The Shrines dared do anything to find Lin Feng!

However, there were many people in Da Yu City, and inspecting people's rings was much more complex than just inspecting the city with godly awareness. Lu Yang and Qiong Fan also bumped into high-level Saints who sealed their rings properly, so it was troublesome for Lu Yang and Qiong Fan. They had to talk to the Saints telepathically and ask them to show their rings to make things simple. They accepted because they feared Lu Yang and Qiong Fan would kill them otherwise.

The two peerless Saints inspected people's rings for twenty days, but they didn't find Lin Feng.

"What's going on now?!?! Could it be that he's escaped from Da Yu City?" said Qiong Fan.

"Impossible. Nobody can escape the Celestial Sealing Map," replied Lu Yang, "Haven't we omitted someone?"

"Only our people and Ordinary and his friends," replied Qiong Fan.

"First, let's inspect our people's rings and then we'll go back and see Ordinary," said Lu Yang. Qiong Fan nodded. Their own people couldn't hide anything from them. They inspected the Fire Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine's strong cultivators' rings. Most people let them check their rings without protesting.

But they didn't find anything.

"If he has an empty space treasure, we can definitely find him. So it seems that he's with Ordinary," said Lu Yang indifferently. They both nodded and flew away. After a short time, they landed where Ordinary lived.

"Why did you come back? Da Yu City is sealed so some of my friends are stuck here, and some others can't come in. It's been a month," said Ordinary coldly. Da Yu City's people were annoyed, Da Yu City had been sealed by the Celestial Sealing Map for a month.

"Brother Ordinary, don't be angry, we have no alternative," Qiong Fan smiled. "We came back because we inspected the whole city and we didn't find the one we're looking for, so we thought he might be here. Brother Ordinary, could we inspect the area properly?"

"You already inspected the area using your godly awareness," said Ordinary coldly.

"We need to inspect people's rings," replied Qiong Fan. Everybody was astonished. Nobody was willing to let him inspect their rings!

"Apart from you, everybody here is my friend, they're all my guests, and I won't let anyone humiliate them. I hope you understand," said Ordinary, coldly staring at Qiong Fan.

They both stared at each other coldly. Ordinary was a supreme cultivator. If he gave way, he'd lose face.

"What if we really need to inspect your rings?" asked Lu Yang.

"Try and you'll see," replied Ordinary coldly.

Lu Yang remained silent for a few seconds and said to Ordinary, "We have no choice but to offend you today."

He released his godly awareness and started inspecting, then said

to Qiong Fan, “You go and inspect our people.”

They hadn’t inspected all their people’s rings. Those who had come the previous time and were still there hadn’t had their rings inspected yet.

“Alright,” Qiong Fan nodded. They didn’t want to offend Ordinary, but they had no choice.

In the Star World, Lin Feng had already been practicing cultivation for more than a year. The old ox hadn’t gone away. He had also made time pass differently for Lin Feng, to save time.

That year, Lin Feng practiced cultivation really hard. He fought against the Bestial Saints, he studied, he practiced alone, and when he didn’t understand, he asked. The Bestial Saints and Lin Feng slowly became friends. They liked people like Lin Feng.

Lin Feng knew he couldn’t be too greedy though. He needed to progress step by step. He needed to progress with one sort of original strength, and he chose earth original strength.

Lin Feng was seated cross-legged. He was calmly studying earth strength pulsations. It felt like a heart with veins and arteries, a very strange sensation. He knew that he made lots of progress, but he hadn’t become a high-level Saint yet.

At that moment, the old ox next to him frowned. He sensed that someone was inspecting the ring and watching them.

Chapter 2450: Ox

“How much longer do you need?” asked the old ox.

Master Ox, I’m almost done, I just need a little bit more time,” said Lin Feng. He could sense that something was happening. He didn’t know why he had chosen earth strength, maybe it was because he was always standing on the ground.

“Alright, I’ll give you some more time. Hurry,” said the old ox. He released an ominous Qi.

—

In the outside world, Qiong Fan was staring at Li Xiao, his eyes glittering. Li Xiao was startled.

“Take that sword out,” Qiong Fan said to Li Xiao. Li Xiao nodded hastily, and a sword appeared in front of him. He was very nervous, wondering why Qiong Fan was staring at that sword.

“Where did you get it?” asked Qiong Fan coldly.

“A member of the Fortune Shrine threw it away while we were battling, I took it and she was gone already,” said Li Xiao honestly. He didn’t dare lie to a peerless cultivator.

“Moron!” said Qiong Fan coldly. He was furious. He had been looking for Lin Feng for such a long time and surprisingly, one of his people had him. He unsheathed the sword and dazzling lights flashed.

Lu Yang also arrived and inspected the sword. “Strange, there must be a hidden world inside.”

“We can’t look inside, it doesn’t work,” said Qiong Fan.

“See if you can find a solution, let’s take it to the Shrine. If he’s hiding in there and we take it to the Shrine, he will never be able to escape,” said Lu Yang coldly.

—

At that moment, Lin Feng was in his spirit's world. His eyes were closed and he was seated in the sky. He visualized an empty world with earth only. He could sense every inch of the ground of the whole world. He could sense the pulsations of the veins of the earth. He was fusing together with the world.

In my own world, I can feel things more accurately. When I made my own god intent fuse together with earth strength, it works. In my own world, my earth strength has already reached the maximum level, but it seems that I didn't break through, thought Lin Feng, opening his eyes. He felt annoyed. In the end, it seemed that he was still at his god level, he still didn't have a normal cultivation level like he had in the past, so he couldn't become a high-level Saint.

But my original strength has reached the maximum level, so I am like any other high-level Saint, thought Lin Feng. A wall appeared in front of him, he had made it himself. Not only could he use original strength to fight, he could also create proper things.

Thanks to my god strength, even if my other types of original strengths haven't reached the maximum level, I can still make my earth original strength turn into other types of strength. That's an advantage, but it's still not enough, and in the end, it remains earth strength. When my other kinds of original strengths reach the maximum level, I'll be able to destroy high-level Saints, he thought.

He went back to the Star World and arrived in front of the three peerless Bestial Saints. "Masters, my earth original strength has already reached the maximum level, but because of my strange body, I can't become a high-level Saint."

One of them opened his eyes and said to Lin Feng, "Release your original strength and show me."

Lin Feng nodded, then he released earth original strength. Explosive earth strength churned in the air, it blotted out the sky

and covered the earth. It moved towards the peerless Bestial Saint. He looked ferocious as he shook his hand and destroyed it instantly.

“Indeed, it has reached its maximum level. I’ll go out with you,” the peerless Bestial Saint nodded.

Qiong Fan and Lu Yang tried all they could to inspect the sword, but nothing worked. “What an incredible treasure. We can try and seal it with the Celestial Sealing Map to bring it back to the Shrines.”

“No need,” said a voice at that moment. Qiong Fan was stupefied, then two people came out of the precious item, which disappeared.

They frowned, that item could really hide people. It really was another world!

Li Xiao’s face paled. Lin Feng had really been hiding in the precious item. He had been used by Lin Feng. The two peerless Saints had been looking for him for more than a month!

Qiong Fan glanced at them coldly. Surprisingly, Lin Feng was with a peerless Saint.

“Good little boy,” said Ao Cang Hai. His eyes were twinkling as he smiled happily. It really was Lin Feng!

Ordinary the supreme cultivator and the peerless cultivators next to him all recognized Lin Feng, as well as the Bestial Saint next to him. It was one of the three peerless Bestial Saints of the Star World. When they were in the Star World, fighting against those three beasts was part of their exam!

“You really think highly of me,” said Lin Feng, smiling at Qiong Fan and Lu Yang. He was privately amazed; two peerless Saints just for him!?

Suddenly, a dazzling light streaked across the sky, the space

around Lin Feng flashed, and he disappeared.

“How fast!” The people around frowned. How incredible! It was a quick attack and the other side had reacted quickly, too. A moment before, Lu Yang had attacked Lin Feng, he could have killed him instantly but one of his allies teleported him next to Ordinary and the others.

“Can I have a glass too?” asked the Bestial Saint, smiling at Ordinary.

Ordinary smiled and said, “Lin Feng is my little friend, of course you can have a glass with us! Come, sit!”

Then, he looked at Lu Yang and Qiong Fan and said, “Are you done causing trouble here?”

“Brother Ordinary, this is the Shrines’ business, please don’t get involved,” said Qiong Fan.

“You tried to inspect our rings with force, you humiliated me, and in the end, one of your own guys helped him hide, you’re ridiculous. Lin Feng is our friend and guest today, you can talk to him next time, when he’s not my guest,” said Ordinary coldly. “I’m not seeing you off.”

“Are you sure you want to get involved?” asked Qiong Fan coldly.

“You consider everyone else beneath your notice, don’t you?” Ordinary smiled. His eyes looked ice-cold. Nobody had ever threatened him and lived.

“Help me watch him,” said the Bestial Saint to Ordinary. Ordinary and the Bestial Saint had already fought, he knew how strong Ordinary was, so Ordinary was perfectly capable of taking care of Lin Feng.

“No problem,” replied Ordinary easily.

“It’s been a long time since I fought for real. It’ll be good to train again,” said the Bestial Saint casually. He looked at the peerless

Saint next to Lin Feng, who was also one of the four supreme cultivators who faced the old Ox back in the days with Lin Feng, Sa Leng the supreme cultivator.

“What do you want to do?”

“Lin Feng is also a little friend of mine. Perfect, today we’ll have an opportunity to train,” said Sa Leng with a grin. They looked at Qiong Fan and Lu Yang together, and an incredible strength emerged.

“I don’t believe you can protect him,” said Lu Yang, releasing empty space strength. He was also a peerless Saint, who could protect Lin Feng against him?

He flashed forwards and disappeared. After a few seconds, Lin Feng sensed danger. However, at the same time, an incredible earth strength surrounded him and he disappeared. He was in the ground and when he reappeared, Ordinary the supreme cultivator had taken him high up in the air.

Brother Ordinary is using the pulsations of the earth, so he can obviously sense what other people do since they move through the world. Now he’s taking me away, thought Lin Feng. At that moment, the peerless Bestial Saint appeared in front of Lu Yang and stared at him. In Lu Yang’s eyes, many silhouettes of the Bestial Saint appeared. Lu Yang was astonished because he couldn’t recognize which one was the real one.

“Die!” said Lu Yang, stretching out his hand. A strong wind started blowing and sweeping everything away. However, the empty space strong wind dispersed when it reached the Bestial Saint, and then his many silhouettes moved forwards.

“It’s an illusion, a real illusion. Even empty space strength is caught in the illusion!” whispered Ordinary when he saw that. He was amazed. Sa Leng also started fighting against Qiong Fan.

Lin Feng looked at Ordinary and whispered, “Thank you very

much, brother.”

“It’s nothing, really. Just a slight effort. Back then when we arrived in front of the old ox, we were already four of the strongest supreme cultivators. We can easily defeat the peerless Saints of the Shrines. Sa Leng controls a fusion of dark-light strength, he’s a real murderer,” said Ordinary with a smile. “But we also need to be careful when they attack you by surprise, because you can’t compete with them.”

“Indeed,” said Lin Feng, nodding. He looked at the members of the Shrines and said, “But those people really want to kill me, so I have to teach them a good lesson.”

The members of the Shrines were startled. Lin Feng wanted to fight against them?

The members of the Shrines looked at him with murder in their eyes.

Lin Feng shot towards the other members of the Shrines. Instantly, a few people released deadly energies, it was an opportunity to kill Lin Feng!

A terrifying empty space strength moved towards them. They smiled coldly; he wanted to attack them with such a weak empty space strength?

Suddenly, the empty space strength turned into an incredible earth strength and started burying them. At the same time, Lin Feng flashed towards Li Xiao.

Li Xiao was staring at Lin Feng. He wanted to regain his lost face.

Lin Feng stopped in front of him and pointed a finger at him. Li Xiao groaned coldly. He released empty space strength to surround his body. However, Lin Feng’s finger pierced through and Li Xiao’s organs were suddenly badly injured. His face paled.

Lin Feng put his hand into the golden empty space strength, his Hell finger penetrated into Li Xiao’s body and destroyed him!

Chapter 2451: Killing A High-Level Saint!

“Earth pulsations!” Ordinary, a supreme cultivator, was astonished when he saw Lin Feng’s attack. His attack had the same pulsations as the earth, which made his attack extremely heavy and powerful.

That little boy progresses really quickly. No wonder that the old ox thinks highly of him. He’ll definitely reach my cultivation level in the future!, thought Ordinary. A low-level Saint attacked Lin Feng, but was stopped by a stone wall out of nowhere. Ordinary was amazed.

Empty space strength and earth strength rotate, first empty space strength invades the space and then it turns into earth strength!, thought Ordinary. How beautiful! Lin Feng punched his enemy’s head, and killed him instantly and easily. Low-level Saints didn’t pose a threat to Lin Feng anymore. They were just too weak now.

“I’ll kill him!” said someone coldly. The crowd moved away to let a high-level Saint of the Empty Space Shrine pass, as he stared at Lin Feng. His name was Rong Qing. His empty space strength had reached the maximum level, and he had become a high-level Saint three thousand years before. Now, two of his original strengths had reached the maximum level, the second one being water original strength. Even though he still hadn’t managed to fuse his original strengths together, he was still very strong.

“I saw you during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Back then, I never thought you’d fight against me mere decades later. I didn’t think the Shrines would need to send such forces to fight against you, either. You’re an exceptional fighter in the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” Rong Qing said to Lin Feng slowly. “But you have to understand that even if three peerless Saints are helping you, you won’t be able to survive today. The Shrines want to kill you... not one Shrine, several. You will die today.”

Lin Feng knew he was in danger. Da Yu City was completely sealed, so he couldn't escape. The Shrines wanted to kill him, he knew it was a critical situation. But he wasn't weak, either. Brother Ordinary and Brother Sa Leng were helping him, the old ox and the others had also set high expectations and hopes on him. He knew it, even if the old ox was always cold and detached.

Many people couldn't wait to see him become stronger, how could he die? He would leave Da Yu City, even half dead!

Brother Ordinary and Brother Sa Leng were helping him. By helping him, they had offended the Shrines. Even if they didn't care, Lin Feng cared.

"There are many things you hadn't imagined back in the days. Maybe you never thought the Empty Space Shrine would get wiped off the maps of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, either," replied Lin Feng coldly.

"Is that so? You look quite calm. You don't know how to evaluate danger. Don't blame me for bullying younger people!" retorted Rong Qing, smiling coldly. He released empty space strength, which fused together with the space around him before moving inside.

"Earth!" said Lin Feng. He took a deep breath and calmly sensed the pulsations of the earth. Every inch of the earth pulsated in his veins and arteries.

Bright lights appeared in front of him and pressed towards him.

"Slow!" said Lin Feng, while moving backwards. He wasn't frightened at all. He had been fighting against the nine Bestial Saints on a daily basis for a long time, they were much stronger than Rong Qing. The empty space strength turned into a sword and continued shooting towards him. However, Lin Feng just tilted aside and the empty space strength flew past his shoulder.

"Freeze!" The space became ice-cold as Rong Qing started

freezing the space around them. Lin Feng was surprised at the chill. He countered by releasing earth strength, which turned into an armor.

“Hmph!” Rong Qing grunted coldly. He slowly walked towards Lin Feng, releasing empty space strength which penetrated into his body without breaking the ice.

“Eh?” He frowned. He realized that his attack hadn’t reached Lin Feng’s body, as if he wasn’t inside.

He waved his hand and golden lights appeared in the ice. A terrifying empty space thunder descended from the sky.

“Break!” Rong Qing attacked the frozen earth, and the ice and the earth broke apart at the same time. The terrifying empty space thunder descended from the sky, anyone who was frozen would be killed. The crowd around them moved away.

Rong Qing frowned. He looked down at his feet, where the ground was pulsating.

A gigantic piece of ground trembled, rose up, and buried him. A figure appeared in the mud in the ground. It was Lin Feng, who had become an integral part of the earth. The ground was his body. He could sense things clearly, especially Rong Qing’s strength in the ground.

Lin Feng turned into a beam of light and moved towards Rong Qing. He raised his hand and released strength, his strength pulsing at the same pace as the earth. The ground exploded loudly, and his attack reached Rong Qing, whose face stiffened. He was on the verge of collapse!

“Opportunity!” Lin Feng shouted furiously, and threw his fist at Rong Qing’s head. His fist contained an oppressive and heavy earth strength which shrieked as it tore space.

In the end, he didn’t aim at Rong Qing’s head, and instead punched his chest. However, he wasn’t smiling. On the contrary,

his expression suddenly changed.

“Water!” Lin Feng had the impression he had punched water. Rong Qing’s body was extremely soft; it was pierced through, but nothing happened. as if he had punched water. It was a particular defense of people whose water original strength had reached the maximum level.

“Die!” said Rong Qing, smiling coldly. He already considered Lin Feng dead. Lin Feng’s arm started freezing. Rong Qing drove his fist at Lin Feng’s head. It contained an incredible empty space thunder. If his fist reached Lin Feng, he was definitely going to die!

“Slow!” countered Lin Feng, releasing slow strength. He slowed his opponent down, and at the same time, he released stone strength, burying his enemy again... but Rong Qing’s fist continued moving towards him.

Lin Feng waved his arm, and it turned into a stone which pulsed at the same pace as the earth, but did he have time to dodge? He started to evade Rong Qing’s attack.

Ordinary was impressed. Lin Feng’s strength was already not bad. One of his original strengths had already reached the maximum level, but Rong Qing had two strengths at the maximum level. Lin Feng might not be strong enough to compete with Rong Qing. Ordinary was getting ready to get involved.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng at that moment suddenly. The ground trembled. Soundwave and illusion strength smashed into Rong Qing’s head, even as Lin Feng released earth strength. The soundwave strength was inside the earth strength, so it made Rong Qing’s head shake unceasingly even as illusions appeared in Rong Qing’s mind. He had the impression he had already attacked Lin Feng and failed!

“Acceleration!” Lin Feng released fast strength in his arm, and threw his fist at Rong Qing. At the same time, Rong Qing’s fist was getting closer and closer to his head.

Lin Feng's fist moved far faster, the soundwave strength continuing to resonate. Rong Qing had the impression he was carrying the whole world on his shoulders. When he came back to his senses, he realized he hadn't killed Lin Feng yet, and was momentarily startled.

But he was a high-level Saint after all, so he said coldly, "I didn't think you could control so many sorts of original strength. Even though they haven't reached the maximum level, it's an advantage. You used earth, soundwave and cursing original strengths, not bad. But you can't kill me. You will die."

He was trying to demoralize Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng just looked at him in a cold and detached way. Rong Qing controlled water original strength at the maximum level, was he really invincible because of that? There had to be a solution even if his body was as soft as water. He needed to attack every single part of his body to defeat him, that was it.

Lin Feng didn't flinch. He attacked again. Rong Qing smiled coldly. Lin Feng was acting recklessly. Did he really want to fight a second time?

He was staring at Lin Feng as he condensed empty space strength, he wanted to defeat Lin Feng in one attack. He couldn't give Lin Feng any opportunity!

Lin Feng also moved. His speed became incredible. He reached his maximum speed, moving in an eyeblink towards Rong Qing.

Lin Feng raised his fist, in which he had condensed fast strength. Rong Qing's body turned into water, and his body became incredibly soft. He wanted Lin Feng's punch to pierce through him, but this time, Lin Feng stopped his fist inside the water.

"You can't kill me!" said Rong Qing. smiling coldly.

"Nobody is invincible," replied Lin Feng. He waved his hand and attacked the soft water body again. He condensed fast strength in

his hand as well as pulsing earth original strength. Each time the earth strength pulsed, the water rolled in waves. A terrifying sword energy suddenly invaded the water, and god strength swept everything away.

Rong Qing's smile suddenly stiffened. His body was starting to disintegrate!

“How is that possible?” Rong Qing's face turned deathly pale. He didn't understand. A destructive sword Qi tore through him, and Rong Qing turned into dust and disappeared in the empty space.

Lin Feng smiled coldly. Had Rong Qing really thought he was invincible?!

Chapter 2452: Change

When Lin Feng killed Rong Qing, everybody was astonished. Then, several sorts of Qi shot towards Lin Feng from all directions. Several people were attacking him at the same time.

“Hmph!” Ordinary grunted coldly. He flashed forwards, the ground undulated and earth strength pulsed at the same pace as everybody’s heart. He said. “What are you doing?”

Their faces stiffened. If Ordinary attacked, their hearts would explode. His strength gave them a strange sensation, and they were all convinced he was strong enough to destroy them. He was a supreme cultivator, after all!

“Brother Ordinary, it’s alright,” said Lin Feng smiling. Five Bestial Saints appeared in front of him, including the golden ape.

“Brother Ape, thank you very much,” said Lin Feng, smiling at the ape. They had agreed that the Bestial Saints would help him only once, but this time, it was the second time the golden ape helped him!

“My hands feel itchy, hehe!” the golden ape smiled, glancing at the enemy.

“All the Shrines want to kill me so bad, we don’t need to be polite anymore. Kill them,” said Lin Feng. A ferocious and wild Qi burst forth. The Bestial Saints looked bloodthirsty, ferocious, and excited!

The golden ape ran forwards, and the ground collapsed loudly under his feet. Stone walls appeared all around, he wanted to confine and kill them in a small and narrow area.

The people outside were aghast. These Bestial Saints’ Qi was incredible. They were all high-level Saints! This time, the Shrines’ strong cultivators were really unlucky!

Lin Feng took out his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and

moved like the wind towards a low-level Saint. When the low-level Saint saw Lin Feng, his facial expression changed drastically, his face turned deathly pale. Lin Feng had killed Rong Qing, a high-level Saint so a low-level Saint couldn't compete with Lin Feng. He moved back, he didn't want to fight against Lin Feng.

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation absorbed a terrifying Qi. The enemy was far away, but he sensed an incredible strength penetrate into his head. Blood sprayed, Lin Feng waved his hand and his enemy's body exploded.

Lin Feng flashed forwards and looked around, like a predator looking for a prey.

At the same time, the five Bestial Saints attacked. The Bestial Saints of the Star World were all incredibly strong, understanding several sorts of original strengths at the maximum level. Their attacks were fast and powerful. Strong Shrine cultivators collapsed and died one after another.

On the other side, the four peerless Saints were still fighting. The powerful Bestial Saint who controlled a fusion of illusion original strength forced Lu Yang into an illusion. He didn't know what to do anymore. Sa Leng was fighting against Qiong Fan, the crowd was astonished. Qiong Fan was in a critical situation!

How unexpected! The Shrines had joined hands, the Empty Space Shrine using the Celestial Sealing Map to seal Da Yu City to kill Lin Feng, yet now everything was different from what they had expected. Lin Feng was a Forbidden Person, all the Shrines feared him and wanted to kill him as quickly as possible, but at this moment, Lin Feng had the advantage. There were many strong cultivators helping him!

But the crowd also understood that it was just temporary. The Shrines hadn't sent all their strongest cultivators to kill Lin Feng. They had just sent two peerless Saints because Lin Feng used to be a low-level Saint, and two peerless Saints was more than enough to

kill Lin Feng!

At that moment, Ordinary frowned thoughtfully. He raised his head; Da Yu City was sealed by the Celestial Sealing Map, so staying there wasn't a solution, and their options were limited here, after all. If the Shrines really wanted to kill Lin Feng, they could send many, many more peerless Saints, and then they'd all be in danger.

At that moment, empty space strength undulated.

"The Celestial Sealing Map?" The crowd raised their heads and were startled. The Celestial Sealing Map was rippling. Golden energies appeared and condensed, forming a golden map. A terrifying Qi emanated from it, it was definitely the Celestial Sealing Map!

"Is the city unsealed?" the crowd didn't understand. How come the Empty Space Shrine was taking the Celestial Sealing Map back?

Ordinary sensed something was wrong. They were taking the Celestial Sealing Map back, it could mean only one thing: someone had come!

"Lin Feng, get ready to leave!" Ordinary shouted to Lin Feng. Lin Feng was alert and retreated, but at the same time, in the distance, empty space lights flashed towards him.

A powerful empty space light flared, and a figure appeared in the sky. It was a golden figure, holding the Celestial Sealing Map.

"The Shrines all have precious items and their leaders control them. That person is the Empty Space Shrine's leader, he must have noticed that the two peerless Saints couldn't capture Lin Feng, so he decided to act personally," thought the crowd when they saw that. The man was wearing an empty space robe and looked like a king. He didn't even glance at Lin Feng.

"Ordinary, I'll give you one opportunity. Do you want to be our enemy, or do you want to protect that guy?" the Empty Space

Shrine's leader asked coldly. "My Shrine doesn't to be enemies with you. If you wish, we can even be friends and cooperate. Forget about Lin Feng. You can't protect him, and you'll get in trouble if you continue trying. If you refuse to understand, I won't be polite anymore."

Ordinary was staring at him. He knew that all the Shrines wanted to kill Lin Feng, and he couldn't fight against all the Shrines on his own. Lin Feng was now the master of the Star World, in which there were many extremely strong Bestial Saints, but could they protect Lin Feng against all the Shrines?

Lin Feng and the others also stopped fighting. The peerless Bestial Saint and Sa Leng also moved back, bringing Lin Feng next to Ordinary. They glanced at each other; the Shrines had already lost so many strong cultivators.

"The same applies for all of you. We can all be friends. I am willing to forget what just happened and not bear recriminations," said the Empty Space Shrine's leader to the peerless Bestial Saint and Sa Leng indifferently.

"Ordinary, what do you think?" Sa Leng asked Ordinary.

Ordinary took a deep breath and smiled. "I've been stuck in a world for so many years, I hadn't thought things would turn out to be this way outside. But I've lived for many years, and many people have tried to threaten me. I continued moving forwards with indomitable will. It's the first time someone has threatened me since I've become a peerless Saint, but I still want to try."

Ordinary felt relaxed. He was friends with Lin Feng, and those Shrines were now his enemies!

"Besides, Lin Feng is my friend, I will protect him. If you, members of the Shrines, leave, I'll do the same, I will forget about what happened and won't attack you," Ordinary smiled.

"I'm with you," Sa Leng said coldly. The two supreme cultivators

were Lin Feng's friends and wanted to protect him.

“Alright, it's your decision. We'll see how you intend to protect him,” said the Empty Space Shrine's leader coldly. In times of chaos, the Shrines weren't willing to offend peerless Saints either. Of course, they didn't fear anyone either!

Today, Lin Feng had to die. Nobody could protect him!

Chapter 2453: God's Heir

When the Empty Space Shrine's leader had sealed Da Yu City with the Celestial Sealing Map, he had sent two peerless Saints, and hadn't thought Lin Feng would survive. Nobody had. But things went beyond expectations. Now the Empty Space Shrine's leader had had no choice but to show up personally.

On Lin Feng's side, there were three peerless Saints; Ordinary the supreme cultivator, Sa Leng the supreme cultivator, and a peerless Bestial Saint. They could definitely prevent Qiong Fan and Lu Yang from killing Lin Feng, but the Empty Space Shrine's leader was different. Not only was he incredibly strong, but he also controlled the Celestial Sealing Map and could prevent other peerless Saints from entering Da Yu City.

"Lin Feng, go back to the Star World to hide," said the peerless Bestial Saint to Lin Feng. The Empty Space Shrine's leader controlled the Celestial Sealing Map, so they couldn't guarantee Lin Feng's safety anymore.

"Alright." Lin Feng knew he was in danger.

At that moment, many people appeared and landed in different places. They had arrived a while before, but they hadn't been able to enter Da Yu City because it was sealed. Now, the Celestial Sealing Map had disappeared, so those people could come in. Many of them were from Shrines who hadn't gotten involved before, such as the Earth Shrine and the Celestial Sound Shrine.

The situation was critical for them, too. Usually, there was a balance of power in the world, but then a Forbidden Person had appeared. They actually would prefer Lin Feng never existed. The Earth Shrine had good relations with Lin Feng because of Chi Lian Shan. They also didn't want the Fortune Shrine to be destroyed, as if some Shrines joined hands, then they had to have allies too!

"We're on the Fortune Shrine's side," said someone from the

Earth Shrine.

“We’ll get in trouble. It’s difficult!” whispered the leader of the group. “We’ll see. There’s a mysterious influential group in Da Yu City, I don’t know where they’re from.”

“Lin Feng is a good guy. If he becomes a god someday, he won’t do anything to us,” declared a strong guy. It was Chi Lian Shan, he knew Lin Feng.

“Shut up,” said his father, standing next to him. Surprisingly, Chi Lian Shan dared talk without thinking in such a place.

“Chi Lian Shan, you don’t understand what’s going on and why the Shrines want to kill Lin Feng. At our scale, we don’t want anyone to surpass us. The Fortune Shrine and the Shrines live in peace with each other because they are equally strong. If the Fortune Shrine becomes stronger than us, you think they will let us live peacefully? If the Fortune Shrine becomes our enemies, who will Lin Feng help?” said the leader of the group indifferently.

Chi Lian Shan’s heart twitched. Things were not as simple as they seemed. Indeed, if anything happened, who would he help?

The Empty Space Shrine’s leader raised his hand and the map flashed. Lin Feng and three peerless Saints looked nervous.

“The Empty Space Shrine’s leader personally came to Da Yu City, Lu Yang and Qiong Fan are here, too. At the same time, they sent three peerless Saints who were guarding outside. Only one peerless Saint must be left in the Empty Space Shrine,” said someone at that moment.

Many people heard that and raised their heads. That person made the Empty Space Shrine understand their enemies had a new option.

The Empty Space Shrine’s leader raised his head and gazed into the distance, his Celestial Sealing Map suddenly lighting up. An empty space sword streaked across the sky and space crackled; he

wanted to make the one who had just spoken up stand out.

Golden lights flashed. An illusion faded and many, many figures appeared in the sky, blotting out the sky and covering the earth, before they suddenly dispersed. Those people were the mysterious influential group the Earth Shrine had talked about.

“Who are you?” asked the Empty Space Shrine’s leader coldly. He had noticed them, but he hadn’t paid attention to them. He hadn’t thought they would get involved as well.

“Empty Space Shrine’s Leader, you’re ignorant and ill-informed,” said a voice again. An ancient coffin appeared in the sky.

“I’m not ignorant and ill-informed, you’re from the World Clan, which disappeared a long time ago. But you shouldn’t be so strong now, yet you all look extremely strong,” said the Empty Space Shrine’s leader. The crowd shivered... the World Clan?

Lin Feng was startled too, how come the World Clan was getting more and more mysterious? Last time he had realized they were enigmatic and unfathomable, as they had dared offend the Fire Shrine. Now, they were standing in the Shrines’ field of vision.

“Back in the days, the World Clan was prosperous. The Shrines were unscrupulous and insolent. I would have never thought the Empty Space Shrine’s leader would have become so insolent and condescending. Since it’s that way, watch!” said a voice.

In front of the coffin, world lights flashed. They streaked across the sky, and a vortex appeared, swirling into a celestial curtain, and something appeared on the curtain: a Shrine!

“The Empty Space Shrine!” Many world coffins had appeared around the Empty Space Shrine. They came from the ancient past, and were floating around the Empty Space Shrine. Some strong cultivators rose up in the air there and stared at the world coffins in shock. They didn’t dare act blindly.

“Interesting, the World Clan dares attack the Empty Space Shrine,” said Ao Cang Hai with a smile. Even though only one peerless Saint was left in the Empty Space Shrine to protect it, they also had allies, and the other Shrines might send some peerless Saints there to help. But now, the World Clan had surrounded the Empty Space Shrine, and considering their faces, the strong cultivators of the World Clan were probably incredible strong.

“Very good,” said the Empty Space Shrine’s leader. “I never thought the World Clan would reappear and would want to be our enemies. Why are you attacking the Empty Space Shrine?”

“I just want to tell you not to think of attacking Lin Feng. Even though we’re not the strongest cultivators in the world, we have the means of putting pressure on you, and destroying the Empty Space Shrine. At least, we could weaken you and kill many of your people, imagine what would happen to a weakened Empty Space Shrine?” asked a voice which came from the world coffin. “Our request is simple: Leader, go back with the Celestial Sealing Map.”

The Empty Space Shrine’s leader looked composed, but on the inside, he was struggling, he was going crazy. The plan was a total failure! It would be difficult to have another opportunity like this! All their allies who were Shrines had agreed to help this time!

“Today, Lin Feng is definitely going to die. I don’t think the Empty Space Shrine’s leader should give up.” Someone appeared, and around him, the space froze. It was a peerless Saint of the Ice and Snow Shrine!

“Three Shrines, the Empty Space Shrine, the Fire Shrine, and the Ice and Snow Shrine.” Lin Feng looked at them, wondering which Shrines wanted to kill him apart from them.

“Indeed, if the Empty Space Shrine’s leader attacks Lin Feng, he might die. But if the Empty Space Shrine is weakened and Lin Feng the Forbidden Person dead, then the Empty Space Shrine won’t pose a threat to the Ice and Snow Shrine anymore. How perfect,”

said a voice coming from the world coffin.

The strong cultivator of the Ice and Snow Shrine said coldly, “Nonsense!” He waved his hand, and the space around him froze.

However, a dazzling world light emerged from the world coffin and blocked the ice energy.

“I don’t care, if any Shrine tries to help the Empty Space Shrine kill Lin Feng, we will destroy them,” said the peerless Bestial Saint next to Lin Feng, releasing a terrifying Qi. He looked like a god. “I’ll tell you one thing! Last time, the Godly Grave was opened and everybody came out because the historical remains of the Godly Grave appeared. The historical remains were a god’s legacy. I am one of the protectors, a Dhammapala, and Lin Feng is the god’s heir! If you want to see how powerful a god’s entourage is, give it a try!” roared the Bestial Saint extremely loudly!

Many people trembled. A god’s heir? And the peerless Bestial Saint was one of the protectors, a Dhammapala? How scary, impressive, and majestic!

Chapter 2454: Shrines' Agreement

“The Forbidden Person is now confirmed...” When the Shrines heard the Bestial Saint, they were convinced Lin Feng was a legendary Forbidden Person. He might become a god. Now the Godly Grave had disappeared because of him. What would happen if a god appeared in the world?

Now, the Forbidden Person was a god's heir, extremely bad news for the Shrines!

But if the Empty Space Shrine attacked Lin Feng, the peerless Bestial Saint, the World Clan, Ordinary and Sa Leng the supreme cultivators, and the Fortune Shrine would all destroy the Empty Space Shrine. They would do all they could to protect Lin Feng. They had set high hopes on him.

“Empty Space Shrine's leader, think carefully. Don't do anything risky because other people want you to,” said the voice coming from the world coffin.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader glanced at the peerless Saints of the Fire and the Ice and Snow Shrines. He was trying to think of a solution.

“A few big Shrines got involved today. If we give up, the Shrines won't be happy. If the Empty Space Shrine continues, we will be destroyed. Therefore, I'd like to come to an agreement with everybody, what do you think?” the Empty Space Shrine's Leader asked the peerless Bestial Saint slowly.

“What agreement?” asked the peerless Bestial Saint, rather surprised.

“First, no rush. I contacted the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine already, I asked them to come to talk. Besides, the Fortune Shrine also wants to come to an agreement,” said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader. He wanted to wait for the Fortune Shrine's

cultivators.

The peerless Bestial Saint was surprised. Was the Empty Space Shrine's Leader trying to waste time because he had contacted more strong cultivators from their alliance?

"Don't worry. Accept. If anything strange happens, the World Clan will attack immediately," said the voice from the coffin.

The peerless Bestial Saint nodded. "Alright, I'll wait. We'll see what kind of agreement you have to offer."

The atmosphere was still oppressive, and people just whispered. The Forbidden Body? A legendary god's heir? A protector? It had been a very long time since something as incredible had happened in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

After a long time, some figures appeared in the sky. They were all peerless Saints, standing high up in the sky. In ordinary times, people never or seldom saw such cultivators. Today, a whole bunch of them had appeared!

The Fortune Shrine's Leader was there, too, holding the Scepter of Destiny. When he saw Lin Feng was safe, he was relieved and said, "Empty Space Shrine's Leader, you can talk."

"Today, the Shrines are unwilling to let Lin Feng off. The Empty Space Shrine would like to come up with an agreement. We forget about what happened today, and in one year, we all come to Fortune City and we solve the issue. What does everybody think?" the Empty Space Shrine's Leader asked the crowd calmly.

He wanted everybody to bear the responsibility for what was happening. The members of the Fortune Shrine didn't look happy when he said he wanted everybody to come to Fortune City. If the strongest cultivators of the Shrines gathered at Fortune City, it would be extremely dangerous for the Fortune Shrine. Was the Empty Space Shrine's Leader trying to find a strategy to destroy the Fortune Shrine?

“And then?” inquired the Fortune Shrine’s Leader coldly.

“The battles today all happened because of Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng just watched. I think he should solve the issue himself! He should be fighting! On the day of the agreement, all the Shrines can select a high-level Saint who will fight against Lin Feng in a battle to death. If we win, Lin Feng will be dead, and if you still try to protect Lin Feng, we’ll have no choice but to destroy the Fortune Shrine.”

“Ridiculous! One year! How Ridiculous!” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader coldly. He had faith in Lin Feng’s talent, but one year was nothing. How could he fight in one year?

If the Shrines selected strong cultivators, they’d choose people who controlled several sorts of original strengths at the maximum level, terrifyingly strong high-level Saints. The difference between high-level Saints could be much more incredible than between high-level Saints and low-level Saints: someone who understood one sort of original strength at the maximum level was a high-level Saint, someone who understood several sorts of original strengths at the maximum level was also a high-level Saint, and someone who understand several sorts of original strengths at the maximum level and could make them fuse was also a high-level Saint!

Of course, there could incredible differences between peerless Saints too, it depended on which kind of original strengths they fused. It was impossible to assess the strength of a peerless Saint before having seen them battle.

Therefore, one year was ridiculous. It was too short.

“Not to mention you said you wanted to gather in our city. If anything happens, the Fortune Shrine will be destroyed.”

“You don’t have a choice. You either give up Lin Feng and you leave, we won’t do anything to you if you do, or you accept. If Lin Feng doesn’t die, we’ll gather in the Fortune Shrine,” said the

Empty Space Shrine's Leader firmly. The crowd understood that the Empty Space Shrine's Leader really wanted Lin Feng to die. He also wanted to destroy the Fortune Shrine, and he didn't need to act alone because he had support.

"If you don't trust me, you can invite all the Shrines when the time comes. If Lin Feng dies, then the Fortune Shrine will have nothing to fear anymore. If he doesn't, the Fortune Shrine will get destroyed. You can choose," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader slyly. If Lin Feng was defeated, Ordinary and the others would probably protect Lin Feng and take him away. That way, the Fortune Shrine would definitely get destroyed.

If the Fortune Shrine didn't want to get destroyed, they had to let Lin Feng die!

He didn't need to worry about the protectors and the others on Lin Feng's side, because if all the Shrines of their alliance gathered in Fortune Shrine, at least it would prove they did it with good reason, and they had the advantage in terms of strength. He was convinced that his opponents would make the right decision. When in danger, it was better to be selfish!

The Empty Space Shrine was convinced that the situation would be perfect for them a year later. For the time being, they couldn't kill Lin Feng.

Another possibility was if Lin Feng didn't show up, things would be even easier. They would immediately destroy the Fortune Shrine, and then Lin Feng wouldn't need to show up again.

"What if Lin Feng wins?" asked the peerless Bestial Saint.

"If Lin Feng wins, we will all disperse," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader.

"And then you'll be able to continue chasing Lin Feng. No matter if Lin Feng wins or loses, for you, everything will remain perfect. If he dies, it's justified, if he wins, you'll find an excuse to destroy the

Fortune Shrine, and then you'll chase Lin Feng and kill him," said the peerless Bestial Saint coldly.

"Don't be so pessimistic. You saw what happened today. The Shrines won't easily give up," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader coldly.

"Hehe, that agreement is alright. I can invite some extremely strong cultivators of the Supreme Animal World to come and watch, they can also act as referees. What do you think, Empty Space Shrine's Leader?" said Ao Cang Hai smiling.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader was surprised and said. "If our dear friends from the Supreme Animal World agree, no problem."

"But one year is too short. In one year, low-level Saints should fight against Lin Feng. To fight against stronger cultivators, you need to wait for at least fifty years," said Ao Cang Hai indifferently.

"No. You saw how quickly he progresses. He has a Forbidden Body. Fifty years is too short. I'm sure nobody would agree."

"Twenty years then. You know it's already short," said the peerless Bestial Saint.

"Three years, that's all we can propose," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader coldly.

"Three years is too short," said the peerless Bestial Saint, shaking his head. If the old ox helped, twenty years would be good for Lin Feng, he'd have time to study several sorts of original strengths. But with only three years, even if the old ox helped, it was still too short. It was difficult to understand one kind of original strength at the maximum level already.

Lin Feng needed to fuse some original strengths together to at least stand a chance against his opponents. He needed to fuse at least four original strengths together. The Shrines would definitely choose extremely strong opponents to fight against him.

"I have requirements as well," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader.

The crowd turned to him.

“Three years is too short. Agreeing would come down to killing Lin Feng right now. And we can’t put all the pressure on Lin Feng, either. If you want us to agree on three years, we need to organize other battles, three battles, Lin Feng can do the one at the level of high-level Saints, but we also need to organize battles for Half-Saints and low-level Saints,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader. The geniuses of the previous Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were probably good choices to battle.

The Empty Space Shrine’s Leader looked at him. He couldn’t trust the Fortune Shrine entirely since the members of the Fortune Shrine had some techniques which made their intuition better and helped them guess what could happen in the future.

“Five battles. A high-level, low-level, halves, two more battles, and two years,” said the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader indifferently. Five battles... He knew that the Fortune Shrine was alone, and the number and strength of the cultivators they could select was limited.

“Two years.” The Fortune Shrine’s Leader pulled a long face. Two years was nothing for them, it was way too short. Lin Feng didn’t stand a chance that way unless they won three other battles.

“Chu Chun Qiu, Kong Ming, Zhou Rong Man, and Hou Qing Lin could be the four others, will the lights of destiny illuminate their bodies?” whispered the Fortune Shrine’s Leader. He closed his eyes, seeing a beam of light illuminate the darkness.

“I accept,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader. He agreed even though the agreement wasn’t fair at all.

Chapter 2455: Plan

The Fortune Shrine had accepted the agreement. The peerless Bestial Saint could only sigh. Two years was nothing. Even if Lin Feng was talented, he wouldn't stand a chance at all. The peerless Bestial Saint had seen many high-level Saints in his life, and he knew the differences between them could be gigantic.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader left with the Celestial Sealing Map. All the Shrines' members left Da Yu City. Da Yu City had been destroyed by all the battles, there were ruins everywhere. The strong cultivators hadn't fought to the extreme, otherwise it would have been completely destroyed!

"Lin Feng, are you coming back to the Fortune Shrine with us?" the Fortune Shrine's leader said to Lin Feng. The Shrines had put aside all considerations for face, but Lin Feng's safety wasn't ensured.

"Yes, let's go back," said Lin Feng nodding. Then, he turned around and looked at the crowd.

"We also need a place to stay," said Ordinary smiling indifferently.

"Brothers, come to Fortune City," said Lin Feng. Ordinary and Sa Leng had offended the other Shrines to protect him. They might try to kill them if they stayed in Da Yu City.

"Lin Feng is right, come to the Fortune Shrine, dear friends, please be our guests," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader.

"Since it's that way, thank you for your hospitality," Ordinary smiled. Going to the Fortune Shrine was a good idea.

The group of people flew up and left. Ao Cang Hai also went with them, but not because he was afraid of the Shrines. They wouldn't dare offend the powerful Dragon Clan of the Supreme Animal World.

After they left, Da Yu City calmed down again. However, it was still damaged because of the battles. The news of what had happened in Da Yu City spread everywhere in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Many people couldn't wait to see the battles two years later. All the Shrines would gather in Fortune Shrine, there would be magnificent and grandiose fights.

The Fortune Shrine, the Fire Shrine, and the Empty Space Shrine forgot about invading and taking control of Da Yu City. The battles two years later would be more important than taking control over cities. They would determine the fate of several Shrines.

Lin Feng was seated cross-legged in Fortune City, inside the Star World. The peerless Bestial Saint had gone back too. He was at the top of his mountain, not far from Lin Feng. Lin Feng said, "Master, thank you for protecting me."

"Don't take what I said too seriously. For us, it doesn't matter whom we protect. If you're too weak, the old ox can find a new master for the Star World. I just said that to scare them. The two others wouldn't necessarily help you," said the peerless Bestial Saint in a calm way and then he closed his eyes. It was like he had completely changed.

"I understand," said Lin Feng, smiling and bowing before the peerless Bestial Saint. He withdrew. The old ox at his side remained silent.

"Master Ox, can you help me save time during the next two years," said Lin Feng. Two years was indeed too short. He didn't know what kind of enemies he'd have to face, but they would definitely be extraordinarily strong.

"I will do my best, but in such a short time you won't be able to progress that much. Get ready to be defeated in two years," said the old ox indifferently. He wasn't afraid of shocking Lin Feng or putting pressure on him. Even if Lin Feng had ten or fifty years, it

would be unlikely for him to break through.

“Maybe. I’ll do my best anyway,” replied Lin Feng. The old ox didn’t say much and continued walking.

“I’m off. I need to sort some things out, and then I’ll come back and meditate in seclusion. When I come back, thanks for helping me with time,” said Lin Feng, and then he left the Star World.

Ordinary and Sa Leng were watching Lin Feng. Ordinary smiled and said. “What a strange world. You can hide inside. I never thought the world we were stuck in for so long would look so tiny,” said Ordinary, pointing at the prayer mat.

Lin Feng smiled and replied, “Brother Ordinary, it’s only the historical remains of the Godly Grave, you were not stuck in there. It’s a god’s world, do you want to go and see?”

“It’s alright. I’m afraid that if I go in, I won’t be able to come back out,” said Ordinary smiling. Then, he asked, “Lin Feng, isn’t there a peerless Saint’s weapon, like the Celestial Sealing Map, in the god’s world?”

Sa Leng’s eyes twinkled. If they had such weapons, the Shrines wouldn’t act recklessly. They would be able to fight against the Shrines’ leaders who had incredible weapons. Without incredible weapons, the Shrines’ leaders might be able kill them.

Lin Feng smiled and shook his head.

“Are there peerless Saint’s weapons, though?” asked Ordinary. His eyes were still twinkling.

“Brother Ordinary, there must be peerless Saint’s Weapons, but because I’m too weak, I can’t access the room in which they are held. I guess I can only get high-level Saint’s Weapons, which are useless to you,” Lin Feng told him.

“What? You don’t even have access to all the rooms if you’re not

strong enough? How annoying!” Ordinary protested.

“I believe that they don’t want me to obtain such weapons if I’m too weak, otherwise people could kill me and take them from me. So, the stronger I am, the less chances I have to get killed,” Lin Feng explained.

“Right, the god anticipated any kind of situation,” Ordinary nodded. “So what are you going to do during those two years?”

“I want to meditate in seclusion for a year and see if I can become stronger,” replied Lin Feng.

“Alright. Good, if there’s anything you don’t understand, you can ask me.”

“Definitely,” said Lin Feng smiled.

“Lin Feng!” called out someone. Lin Feng turned his head and saw the Diviner.

“Teacher!” shouted Lin Feng. The Diviner landed on the ground, nodding at Ordinary and Sa Leng.

“Lin Feng, I was scared to death. It gave me chills. I didn’t think the Shrines would send such terrifying cultivators to fight against you. I’m sorry. If you died, it would have been my fault,” said the Diviner.

Lin Feng shook his head. “I was too careless. My true identity was uncovered, it had nothing to do with you.”

“Anyway, let’s forget about it. The Shrines only gave you two years, the battle will be extremely complicated for you. The Shrine is trying to find people to fight the four other battles. Come with me,” said the Diviner, leaving with Lin Feng.

—

They arrived in the depths of the Shrine, all the high-level Saints of the Shrine were gathered there.

“Lin Feng, you became a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine

because you're extremely strong, but you haven't had the opportunity to meet the other core disciples. Today you can meet them," said the Diviner, taking Lin Feng in front of a crowd.

The Shrine's leader looked at Lin Feng and said. "Lin Feng, we started calling disciples and telling them to come back, including the ones who participated in the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds back in the days with you. They all might be selected to fight in two years. Anyone you would like to recommend?"

"I can't recommend anyone unless I know how strong they are. Hou Qing Lin can defeat anyone at the same cultivation level as him, though," said Lin Feng. With his reincarnation strength, Hou Qing Lin could indeed defeat most people at the same cultivation level.

"Hou Qing Lin is quite strong, but he doesn't have enough trump cards and he hasn't been a Saint for a long time. I don't know how powerful his reincarnation strength will be in two years," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader, looking at the Reincarnation Priest.

"Two years is too short. The enemies will only select geniuses amongst geniuses. We have to fight the strongest fighters. Lin Feng, you will probably lose your battle," said the Reincarnation Priest. He didn't underestimate Lin Feng, but two years were just nothing. Even fifty years weren't enough in their opinion. A high-level Saint sometimes needed hundreds of thousands, or even millions of years, to break through.

"In one year, I will organize a competition in the Fortune Shrine. The strongest ones will be chosen. At the same time, we need to contact some Shrines and establish good relations to them, including the Supreme Animal World," said another peerless Saint. The crowd nodded. They were in a hurry. Those battles would be extremely important, but they knew they wouldn't win all of them, or at least, that was very unlikely.

"Yes, we'll need to go to the Supreme Animal World and to the

Shrines,” said the Shrine’s leader.

“I’ll go,” said the Diviner.

The leader smiled. “Mara-Deva, now that your two bodies have fused together again, I’m not worried about you, you’re strong enough. You’ve been managing the Shrine’s internal affairs for so many years so yes, you’re a perfect candidate for this task.”

“Alright, I’m going. Lin Feng, I’ll take you to your old friend,” said the Diviner. Lin Feng left with him.

——

They quickly landed at a big palace. Lin Feng saw someone walking towards him.

“Haha, little boy! I never thought you’d become so famous. No wonder you’re stronger, with a teacher like me!” said the old Taoist Priest, smiling and walking towards them. Then he continued, looking ferocious, “I’ve heard that you have killed many Saints. Perfect, I’m doing research about weapons, show me some.”

Chapter 2456: Pressure

Lin Feng looked at the old Taoist Priest speechlessly. That guy was still saying Lin Feng had become so famous and strong thanks to him!

Lin Feng took out some Saint's Weapons and gave them to the old Taoist Priest. "Old buddy, take them. You're a Saint now, what do you intend to do?"

"Hehe!" The old Taoist Priest just laughed and took the Saint's Weapons impolitely. He said, "I'm a powerful Saint now, so you're finally nice. These Saint's Weapons are perfect, they will allow me to help the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan rise again. When the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan stands at the top of the Vast Celestial Ancient City and becomes the first powerful group there, I will travel around the world and go to other worlds. I want to see what's different in other worlds!"

"Alright, good. The Celestial Evolution Holy Clan is important to you, so it's normal you want to make it rise," said Lin Feng. Even though Yan Di had never said he was worried about the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan or he wanted it to come back to life, Lin Feng knew how important it was to him. Now he was strong enough to make the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan stand at the top of the Vast Celestial Ancient City, which was only a city in the lower world.

"Alright, I waited here because I wanted to see you, I'm off now," Yan Di smiled.

Lin Feng was surprised. "Why the rush?"

"You want to chat longer?" asked Yan Di, smiling and turning around casually. "We're walking on different paths now, we can't stay together the whole time, and the past already seems like a dream. If you have time, come to Vast Celestial Ancient City to see me, my friend!"

He disappeared into the distance. Lin Feng just sighed. Indeed, it felt like a dream. Now, the old Taoist Priest couldn't help him anymore, so he just left and went off to help his Clan rise.

“Old buddy, I hope you will never die! If you need anything, feel free to ask me!” shouted Lin Feng running forwards.

“Don't worry, I don't mind asking you for help when I'm in need!” laughed a distant voice.

Lin Feng smiled. He turned to the Diviner and said. “Teacher, I'm going.”

The Diviner nodded, and Lin Feng left. The Diviner raised his head and rose up in the air. Lin Feng wanted to meditate in seclusion to get ready for the battles in two years. He also had things to do; he had to travel the world to meet people and get ready for the battles. The five fighters wouldn't be the only ones involved.

Time passes without anyone noticing it when everything is fine, but when you have problems, it seems like you never have enough time.

——

During those days, Lin Feng practiced cultivation like a madman. He didn't take any break. Sometimes, he thought about his family and it gave him strength. Half a year passed in the blink of an eye. In the Star World, Lin Feng was fighting against the golden ape, the space trembling around them.

The golden ape raised his hand, and the sky became dark. He tried to catch Lin Feng, but Lin Feng could sense the earth pulsing as if it were his own body. He moved so fast it was like he was teleporting.

“Earth Burial!” shouted the golden ape. The ground under Lin Feng's feet rose up, trying to bury him.

Lin Feng turned into empty space Qi again and disappeared. His

opponent's attacks couldn't reach him.

“Not bad, you're able to dodge my attacks now. You're not wasting your time,” the golden ape said, as he stopped attacking.

“But it's still not enough. Your opponents will probably control several sorts of original strengths. You're too weak. Your attacks are also too weak,” said the golden ape. He attacked Lin Feng again.

My earth and empty space strengths are now at the maximum level. I also use wind and fast strength to move faster, but it's not enough, thought Lin Feng, annoyed.

“Not bad, when one of your original strengths reached the maximum level, you're already equal to a high-level Saint. Most people need over ten thousand years to do that. Some people never even manage to break through. I helped you modify time so in here, ten years have passed and you already have two original strengths at the maximum level,” said the old ox patiently from where he was watching. “But it's still not enough. You're definitely going to lose.”

“What if I fuse original strengths together first?” said Lin Feng asked the old ox.

“Fusing original strengths together is even more difficult than understanding an original strength at the maximum level. There are limits. If you only practice cultivation here, your progress will be limited, too,” said the old ox. “If you really want to try, try and fight against those three. Imagine that they will be your opponents in a year,” said the old ox, pointing at the last three Bestial Saints.

The six others had already fought against Lin Feng many times. However, of those three, only two had already tried and fight against Lin Feng, but they hadn't taken it seriously. The last one had never fought against Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at the last one, he was probably the strongest of

all. According to the old ox, those three were as strong as the enemies he was going to fight a year from now.

“If I win against him, does it mean I’ll be able to defeat my opponent?” said Lin Feng to the old ox.

“If you can defeat him, you will be fine. But I don’t advise you to try for now, because he has a really bad temper,” said the old ox seriously.

Lin Feng looked at him and walked forwards. The others looked at him excitedly.

Lin Feng then moved as fast as lightning. He raised his finger which pierced through space towards the Bestial Saint. The Bestial Saint suddenly opened his eyes, which were pitch-black, like those of a demon. The air crackled as the Bestial Saint moved, and an aggressive Qi filled the air. Lin Feng was nervous and felt oppressed.

The Bestial Saint raised his fist and an aggressive Qi smashed into Lin Feng’s body. He crashed onto the ground and a crater appeared around him. He had the impression his organs were going to explode.

Lin Feng abruptly stopped moving forwards, disappearing and reappearing somewhere else. However, the space contracted as an incredible Qi invaded it. Lin Feng had the impression he was being born. It was an incredible sensation, he felt tiny and at the same time he had the impression he was on the verge of collapse.

Lin Feng groaned with pain. He was struck violently and hurled backwards. He felt extremely unwell. The Bestial Saint glanced at him indifferently and closed his eyes again. He looked calm and composed again, as if nothing had just happened.

“Demon, earth, and illusion original strengths at the maximum level.” Lin Feng was astonished. That Bestial Saint could be described using only one word: aggressive! The difference between

him and all the others was gigantic.

“You sense those few, not bad. But he only used a little bit of strength, he could actually kill you instantly if he wants to,” said the old ox indifferently. Lin Feng’s body already felt sore. That Bestial Saint had probably practiced for tens of thousands of years. He had an advanced knowledge of original strength.

“Lin Feng, you can’t even force us to use fused original strengths yet,” said the golden ape. Lin Feng nodded. When they used a fusion of original strengths, their attacks were overwhelming. Back then, the golden ape had killed a high-level Saint extremely easily, and the last Bestial Saint could easily kill the golden ape.

“I’m going out,” said Lin Feng, and then he left. He arrived in his own spirit’s world. Meng Qing was in the Empire of Xue Yue with his family members.

Lin Feng wanted to rest for a few days, he had practiced like a madman for a while, maybe taking a rest and some nice moments would be helpful.

In the outside world, the Shrines continued competing over territories and so on. The Diviner had been to the Supreme Animal World and was now back with some news.

Chapter 2457: Godly Phoenix Clan

In the Fortune Shrine...

A group of people was seated cross-legged in a starry place. The Diviner was present.

The Shrine's Leader's eyes were closed, he was moving his fingers, starlight illuminated him. Suddenly, he opened his eyes and looked at the stars. He looked surprised and asked, "Mara-Deva, which clan has an incredible genius in the Supreme Animal World?"

"The Godly Phoenix Clan," said the Diviner. He initially wanted to tell the leader about it, but it seemed like the leader had already guessed it.

"After the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Destiny Wheel rotated and our stars are now different. There are many destiny lights I can't understand anymore," the Fortune Shrine's leader sighed.

"Leader, you already saw that an incredible genius had appeared in the Supreme Animal World. That's already very rare, and divination is not easy," responded the Diviner.

"How's the genius of the Godly Phoenix Clan?" asked the Shrine's Leader.

"She was in a forbidden territory, in the Mythological Animal Mausoleum. She was acknowledged by a god. She's been named the Goddess," replied the Diviner.

"Goddess... things are getting more and more interesting. The forbidden territories are mysterious places. And in times of chaos, many incredible geniuses rise. Lin Feng was acknowledged by a god in the Godly Grave. Chu Chun Qiu came out of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell alive, and has changed, too," murmured the Shrine's Leader. "Anything else?"

“Some strong cultivators are joining hands and forming alliances in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Some of them want to become Shrines,” said the Diviner.

“That’s normal,” said the Shrine’s Leader calmly. “Anything about the battles in one year?”

“The Shrines’ situation hasn’t changed. The Hell Shrine doesn’t get involved in the affairs of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Life Shrine doesn’t like to fight. The Light Shrine still doesn’t seem to exist. The Soul Shrine manages things smoothly and tactfully. The Thunder Shrine won’t get involved. The Celestial Sound Shrine and the Earth Shrine hope the Fortune Shrine won’t get destroyed. Apart from them, the Fire, Ice and Frost, Dazzling, Empty Space, Wind, and Demon Shrines all want to destroy us,” said the Diviner dispiritedly.

“Not bad. Back then, ten Shrines expressed themselves. Now there are four more Shrines,” said the Fortune Shrine’s leader, smiling.

“The Soul Shrine and the Thunder Shrine care only about themselves. The Celestial Sound Shrine and the Earth Shrine are scared because they are quite weak compared to all the other Shrines, and now seeing us on the verge of collapse, they’re even more worried they could become like us. That’s why they support us. If we become stronger, they will become stronger. The Light Shrine doesn’t seem to exist. It’s a difficult situation for us,” said the Diviner. The fifteen Shrines had been able to live together in harmony for such a long time, it was already a miracle.

“The Fire, Ice and Frost, Empty Space, Dazzling and Wind Shrines are not the strongest Shrines, especially the Wind and Dazzling Gold Shrines, what do they want to do?” asked the Shrine’s Leader coldly.

“Who knows? All the Shrines have their own plans. Only they can know what their real plans are,” the Diviner sighed.

“What about the Supreme Animal World?” asked the Shrine’s Leader.

“The Dragon Clan agreed to come. The Roc Clan will come too, but the Roc Clan won’t necessarily come in peace. The Unicorn Clan will come too, I don’t know what they want, same for the Godly Phoenix Clan, I think Lin Feng should go to the Supreme Animal World,” said the Diviner.

The Shrine’s Leader was surprised. “Interesting. Don’t tell anyone about that,” said the Shrine’s Leader.

“I know. The Godly Phoenix Shrine agreed, too.” replied the Diviner. “Maybe they want to see who’s better, Lin Feng who has a Forbidden Body, or their Goddess who will become a real god.”

When the Shrine’s Leader heard the Diviner, he smiled and said. “Interesting, I’ll go and ask Lin Feng directly.”

“Alright,” said the Diviner, before he left. The other people who were still seated cross-legged remained behind.

A peerless Saint asked, “Leader, what do you think about the Goddess?”

“I’m not sure. In times of chaos, anything is possible. Maybe other gods and goddesses will appear in the future. It’s getting cloudy, and the clouds prevent us from looking at the stars.” The Shrine’s Leader raised his head and looked at the sky, the stars were dazzling. There were no clouds. What did he mean?

——

The Diviner went to Lin Feng and asked him what he thought. Lin Feng was surprised. He hadn’t thought the Godly Phoenix Clan would want to see him.

“Is it urgent?” asked Lin Feng.

“I don’t think so. You don’t need to go if you don’t feel like it. I am just curious to know what the Godly Phoenix Clan thinks,” the

Diviner smiled.

“Let’s go, then. If I could make friends with them, it could be useful in a year,” said Lin Feng. The Fortune Shrine didn’t have many allies. They needed to form a good alliance. If it was possible, it would be great.

Lin Feng headed back to the Supreme Animal World. The previous time he had been there, it was to go to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. This time, only the Diviner went with him.

The Godly Phoenix Clan was in the Phoenix Valley of the Supreme Animal World. The valley had the shape of a phoenix from the sky. The buildings there didn’t look as luxurious as those in the human world. They were simple, but still looked beautiful.

Lin Feng was facing a beautiful palace dozens of meters tall, containing an incredible Qi. Many people were waiting outside, watching Lin Feng and the Diviner. Their eyes looked sharp, especially the eyes of some young people in the crowd.

“Lin Feng, haha, you’re here too!” exclaimed someone, laughing wholeheartedly at that moment. Lin Feng glanced over and saw Ao Cang Hai.

“Brother Ao, what are you doing here?” asked Lin Feng curiously.

“You ask, even though you already know the answer,” said Ao Cang Hai smiling at Lin Feng. “After what happened in Da Yu City, many things happened in the Animal World as well. During this year, someone who might be as incredible as you emerged in the Supreme Animal World in the Godly Phoenix Clan.”

“He’s Lin Feng!” Many people looked at Lin Feng sharply. After what had happened in Da Yu City, Lin Feng had become even more famous in the Supreme Animal World, because many peerless

Saints had gotten involved just because of him.

“Maybe the Forbidden Body is nothing much, people just exaggerate as time passes,” said someone coldly. There were two people there, one who Lin Feng had already seen before. It was Zong Gan, who had chased him in the past. He was extremely strong, a great oriental greenfinch roc. There was someone else next to him, who much younger than him. Of course, it was impossible to determine someone’s age from their appearance.

“Father!” exclaimed someone happily. It was Aomo. He jumped over next to Lin Feng and Lin Feng clapped his shoulders in greeting.

“Father, I’ve heard about your awesome adventures in Da Yu City; too bad I wasn’t there!” said Aomo excitedly.

“I almost got killed. Is that an awesome adventure?” protested Lin Feng, while shaking his head and smiling. Even though peerless cultivators had fought because of him, Lin Feng didn’t feel like it was a glorious thing, he had almost been killed!

“They like to bully weaker people! How could peerless Saints try and do anything to you? A few decades ago, you were just a Half-Saint, and now you’re still progressing at the speed of light!” said Aomo, glancing at Zong Gan impolitely. The Dragon Clan and the Roc Clan weren’t friends.

“Hmph!” Zong Gan grunted coldly. He knew that Aomo was right, but he was a supernatural bird, he couldn’t submit, he was too proud. Besides, beasts were proud in general and showed their emotions openly.

“Cultivation speed doesn’t prove anything. Maybe the Forbidden Body is not that powerful,” said Zong Gan.

Lin Feng ignored him. He looked at the Saints around. They were from the most incredible Bestial Clans, the most outstanding cultivators of the Supreme Animal World. The majority of beasts

preferred the Goddess since she was also from the Supreme Animal World. They also knew how terrifying the Mythological Animal Mausoleum was.

“So you’re the Forbidden Person,” said someone, slowly walking towards Lin Feng. His eyes were filled with flames.

“It’s him,” noted the Diviner.

He smiled sharply and said, “You don’t look as sharp as before.”

Chapter 2458: Fighting Against a Godly Beast

The Diviner smiled and said, “Beasts and humans are different. You all look sharp. Humans are not like that. But it doesn’t mean we’re weaker.”

“Mara-Deva, many years ago, you were famous. We know that. Lin Feng is different from you, though. He’s very young, not even a hundred years old yet. He has a Forbidden Body, and now he’s so strong, he should be sharp-looking.”

“Meaningless,” the Diviner smiled dismissively. The Godly Phoenix Clan wanted to see Lin Feng, was it to make such useless statements?

“Anyway, you’re our guests. The Godly Phoenix Clan is interested in the Forbidden Body. Even if he’s not sharp-looking, it doesn’t change anything, we like Lin Feng. Now that we have a Goddess in our Clan, maybe it’s the will of Heaven,” that person smiled. He turned and said as he left, “By the way, find any place you like to stay, as long as it belongs to nobody.”

People were stupefied. Lin Feng frowned. Many people were looking at him sharply. Lin Feng understood what Ao Cang Hai had told him, the Goddess of the Godly Phoenix Clan was outstanding. Now they had organized a meeting there, what was the purpose?

What that person had just said was just to make Lin Feng look less impressive in front of the crowd.

“Teacher, what is that supposed to mean?” asked Lin Feng to the Diviner telepathically.

“I don’t know. Last time I came, many people were here. They had never seen the goddess, so they wanted to see her. Now that you are here, the Phoenix Valley is probably doing that to provoke

people. Maybe they want to see how strong you are and how strong your physical body makes you. They want to compare you with the Goddess. But you're very young, and one of your original strengths just reached the maximum level," replied the Diviner. He was annoyed too. He didn't know what they wanted.

Ao Cang Hai looked at Lin Feng with a smile that wasn't a smile and tapped his shoulder. He said telepathically, "Even those people understand, they won't give you face."

"I understand," replied Lin Feng. "Teacher, let's find a place to rest."

"Alright," said the Diviner nodding.

"Slow down," said someone at that moment. Lin Feng turned around and looked at the young man next to Zong Gan. His Qi looked extremely sharp. A king Qi emerged from his body and oppressed Lin Feng.

"Dirty little birds are annoying," said Ao Cang Hai with a smile.

The young man looked at him and said coldly. "Ao Cang Hai, you often open your filthy mouth. You haven't fought for so many years, let's see how strong the fourth prince of the Dragon Clan is!"

"Anytime, Zong Lin!" replied Ao Cang Hai airily.

"I'll go and fight against him," said Zong Gan sharply. They still hadn't settled accounts for their previous battle. He wanted to fight Ao Cang Hai.

"Since you all want to fight, let's have some fun!" said Ao Cang Hai coldly. He rose up in the air, the beasts around all looked bloodthirsty and excited because fights were going to happen. A big battle was going to happen, Ao Cang Hai was very provocative today.

"Go!" Zong Gan and Zong Lin's figures flickered. They both moved, two golden beams of light streaked across the sky. No wonder they were the best beasts in terms of speed.

“Those Roc Clan members are incredibly fast,” murmured the Diviner. He also flew up into the air.

“Speed is useless. Dragons like their food well roasted,” said Aomo. His eyes twinkled. The beasts all looked proud.

Some figures flew into the sky above the Phoenix Valley. The air began to hum. Some people also passed nearby, but didn’t seem to care. Very quickly, the group of cultivators landed at the top of a mountain.

“Who wants to fight first?” asked Ao Cang Hai, pointing at Zong Gan and Zong Lin coldly.

“Me,” said Zong Gan. He started flying forwards but Zong Lin said, “Not you. Ao Cang Hai is proud, but he’s really strong. I’ve heard that he can control several sorts of original strengths at the maximum level, and he also controls the Dragon’s strength. He’s much more difficult to defeat than a human being. I’ll go.”

Zong Lin was a great oriental greenfinch roc, too. He wasn’t any more polite than Zong Gan.

Beasts are really arrogant, but they’re stronger than human beings, so it’s an advantage, thought Lin Feng. Even Aomo had some incredible techniques. Lin Feng had read a book about beasts’ techniques. Beasts from Godly Beast Clans were much stronger than ordinary beasts and humans.

“Teacher, can you recognize all the beasts?” Lin Feng asked the Diviner telepathically. Many people were watching. All of them had an enigmatic and unfathomable Qi. If a human’s life Qi could be compared with a lake, theirs could be compared with furious oceans. Godly beasts’ blood was extremely precious.

“Godly Dragon Clan, Roc Clan, you already know those two; the Godly Phoenix Clan; the middle-aged man there is from the Unicorn Clan; the one there who looks like a child is from the Godly Turtle Clan, but they call themselves Tortoise Clan. The one

there with the gloomy Qi, can you guess?” asked the Diviner.

“Yes, that young man’s Qi looks ominous indeed. He looks poisonous,” said Lin Feng.

“He’s a legendary flying snake, his wings contain a cold gloomy Qi. Legendary flying snakes are very dangerous,” said the Diviner.

Lin Feng nodded. At that moment, the legendary flying snake almost seemed to have heard them even though they were talking telepathically. He instantly looked at Lin Feng, Lin Feng didn’t feel well.

None of them can be underestimated, thought Lin Feng. The one who looked like a child looked sleazy and nonchalant and surprisingly was from the Tortoise Clan. The worst was that when someone looked like a child like that, they were usually fake if they were incredibly strong, and were usually quite old.

“Will they cast greedy eyes on the Goddess?” asked Lin Feng. He was curious. The legendary flying snake and the one who looked like a child looked... inappropriate.

“Nobody cares about age in the cultivation world, all people care about is strength. Nobody knows what they want to do to her....” replied the Diviner with a hard smile.

Ao Cang Hai and Zong Lin were having a fierce battle. Zong Lin understood wind, empty space, and gold strengths at the maximum level. His speed was explosive. Trails appeared in the sky behind him when he was flying. Lin Feng couldn’t even follow him with his eyes.

Ao Cang Hai stood steadily like a mountain. His punches looked simple, but they were incredible and made the space tremble each time, their power terrifying. The great oriental greenfinch roc didn’t seem to have any flaw though, and his attacks were all incredible as well.

“Filthy little birds only know how to rely on speed to attack by

surprise, that's all."

"Insolent!" said Zong Gan. He grunted coldly, dazzling golden claws which looked like swords streaked across the sky. Lin Feng looked at him coldly. Rumbling and explosion sounds spread in the air. The sword lights dispersed.

"Come here!" said Zong Gan, pointing at Lin Feng. He wanted to fight.

Lin Feng flashed forwards, he also wanted to see how strong godly beasts were. Even though godly beasts had inherent talent and abilities, at a certain cultivation level, those things didn't matter as much anymore. The nine Bestial Saints he had in his Star World were incredibly strong, but they weren't necessarily godly beasts.

Lin Feng heard a subtle sound. Zong Gan moved and almost disappeared. However, Lin Feng didn't hesitate to attack. He used earth original strength and could sense the pulsations of the earth, so he knew right where his opponent was.

The Celestial Dao strength around Lin Feng turned into earth strength. An ocean of strength appeared in the vault of Heaven and the air began to vibrate. The ground trembled. Blood appeared on Zong Gan's face. Lin Feng's attack was too powerful, he had taken a heavy blow.

Chapter 2459: Two Forbidden Territories

Zong Gan scratched his head, and lights twinkled. A golden light rotated around him and his injuries healed. However, he was grimacing and staring at Lin Feng. He split into two bodies. That was the Roc Clan's cloning technique. The two Zong Gan's looked furious and ferocious.

Lin Feng stared at him coldly. He was a bit nervous because Zong Gan's speed was so astonishing, so with two of them he was under pressure.

The two figures disappeared at the same time and shot towards Lin Feng. It was like two golden thunderbolts were moving towards him.

"Heavy strength!" shouted Lin Feng coldly. Instantly, the atmosphere became incredibly weighty.

"Slow!" shouted Lin Feng. Everything around him became slower. The golden thunderbolts slowed down greatly. Heavy and slow strengths used together was incredible.

A sharp sound spread in the air, and the two bodies accelerated. Two extremely sharp golden claws dove towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng released even more slow strength and some empty space strength, it was like he could teleport as two blades flew past his shoulders. Zong Gan drew closer.

Lin Feng raised his fist and threw it out. The space around him trembled. Zong Gan looked at Lin Feng disdainfully as his claws collided with Lin Feng's fist.

A terrifying strength rolled in waves around their hands. Lin Feng sensed a terrifyingly sharp energy on his fist. It was very painful, but it didn't distract him. His fist became flared with light and a vortex appeared around it. Absorbing strength emerged and surrounded his opponent. He wanted to absorb the great oriental

greenfinch roc.

“Corrosion!” said Lin Feng coldly. Zong Gan’s Qi was being corroded. It was a strange feeling, Lin Feng’s absorbing strength was draining his Qi.

“Piss off!” Golden lights surrounded Lin Feng. Lin Feng was startled, but empty-space stone walls appeared around him and surrounded one of the opponent’s bodies.

The empty space stone wall broke apart. The other roc looked at him coldly and became even more gigantic, flapping his wings even faster.

Lin Feng moved like the wind, withdrawing as fast as he could. Zong Gan’s two bodies chased him. Their speed was just astonishing. He was the symbol of speed, the fastest species in the world!

Lin Feng released wind strength to surround his body and continued retreating. He could sense the pulsations of the land, his enemy was so fast they could reach him anytime.

“Fast!” Lin Feng released even more fast strength, as well as wind strength. Zong Gan was surprised. Lin Feng’s figure flickered, his speed was astonishing. He flew straight past Zong Gan.

“Beautiful.” Aomo was amazed. How incredible! He was surprised by Lin Feng’s speed. Zong Gan was extremely fast, and Lin Feng could dodge his attacks!

Zong Gan immediately attacked the beast who looked like a child, the one behind Lin Feng who was from the Tortoise Clan.

“Piss off!” said a gloomy voice. The two great oriental greenfinch rocs were stupefied, as he said coldly. “Insolent!”

“So you want to fight against me now?” said the Tortoise, smiling coldly. Why was Zong Gan attacking him now? He raised his claws. At that moment, a gigantic shell which was as hard as stone appeared around him. Zong Gan’s claws crashed onto the

shell, and nothing happened.

Zong Gan wanted to retreat, but the tortoise didn't let him. He released a terrifying Qi which constricted Zong Gan and a vortex appeared around him.

"I told you to piss off!" said the tortoise who looked like a child. Thunder crashed, and Zong Gan's two bodies were blown away at the same time as blood splashed.

"Original strength fusion." Lin Feng was surprised. That Tortoise was extremely strong!

—

On the other side, Ao Cang Hai and Zong Lin were still fighting, it was difficult for either of them to win because Ao Cang Hai's attacks were too powerful and Zong Lin was too fast. They didn't use any trump cards, however.

"How beautiful!" At that moment, the legendary flying snake saw a phoenix arriving without haste. She was so beautiful, and really looked like a goddess.

The Phoenix Clan's Goddess, Goddess Xuan!

Goddess Xuan glanced at the crowd, she looked at Lin Feng for a few seconds and then turned her head. "Why is everybody in our valley? What do you want here?"

"Goddess Xuan, of course!" the legendary flying snake smiled. Even though the others didn't say anything, they agreed.

"Is that so? Then, come with me," said Goddess Xuan calmly. She turned around and walked away. Everybody became silent and followed after Goddess Xuan.

—

After a short time, they arrived in front of a teleportation portal, a Phoenix Portal.

"Are we going to the Godly Beast's Mausoleum?" Ao Cang Hai

was startled. Goddess Xuan had just shown up, and now she immediately wanted to go to the Godly Beast's Mausoleum? That place wasn't fun.

"Yes. If you don't want to come, you can leave," Goddess Xuan said to the crowd. Lin Feng was delighted. Goddess Xuan was funny, she had taken all those beasts there and now she was telling them they could leave if they wanted to. But beasts were proud, how could they leave?

"Teacher." Lin Feng looked at the Diviner, he didn't know what to say.

"I'll wait for you in the Phoenix Valley," the Diviner smiled. He had faith in Lin Feng.

"Alright, I will come back for the agreement. Aomo, head back to the Dragon Clan."

"No, Father, I'm coming with you," said Aomo, shaking his head. "This time, I don't want to be away from my Father."

Lin Feng was surprised and looked at Aomo. He slowly nodded and said, "Alright, it's the Godly Beast's Mausoleum, so I hope you'll be able to help there."

"Let's go," said Goddess Xuan. The crowd had a bad premonition, it all felt so sudden. What was Goddess Xuan's purpose? Why had she suddenly appeared? Why did she suddenly want to take them to that place?

But they still followed her.

Lin Feng sensed a wild bestial Qi rise up around him. It was powerful.

"How pleasant. It's a pure bestial Qi," said Aomo, taking a deep breath. He felt at home there. This place was even better than the Supreme Animal World for beasts.

"According to legends, this place used to be a genuine beast

world. Then, something happened and it turned into a mausoleum. It probably has to do with the ancient war of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” said Ao Cang Hai.

Goddess Xuan led the way and people closely followed her. Nobody knew where she was taking them.

“It’s dangerous.” Lin Feng had a bad premonition, his intuition told him danger was lurking.

A dark energy shot towards them. It looked like Qi.

“It’s death original strength. You can’t touch it. It’s the purest death original strength in the world. It can corrode our lives and kill us,” said Goddess Xuan. The crowd moved away in surprise.

“Hurry up. We’ve too many people,” said Goddess Xuan, making a detour. After a short time, the crowd faced a gigantic place where there was water original strength. The energies in that place were extremely pure.

“It makes me want to jump inside!” The Tortoise and the legendary flying snake looked excited. They wanted to jump in, but Goddess Xuan didn’t seem like she wanted to stay there, and continued walking. She seemed to know the place really well. She had probably been there many times before.

“It is said that Goddess Xuan was acknowledged by a god. It’s probably true. She knows the place so well. Even though there are many sorts of original strengths, it doesn’t seem to be dangerous.”

“Yes, she knows the place really well,” replied Lin Feng, nodding when he heard Ao Cang Hai.

—

Finally, they arrived in front of a long illusory corridor. It was Goddess Xuan’s target destination. That corridor looked like an illusory passage with a mysterious Qi.

“Lin Feng,” said the old ox suddenly. Lin Feng looked astonished

and said. “What’s the matter, Master?”

“Lin Feng, I can sense the Qi of Ganges Time,” said the old ox. Lin Feng stiffened. Weren’t they in the Bestial Mausoleum? Why was there Qi from Ganges Time?

Chapter 2460: Unforeseen

The Mausoleum and Ganges Time were connected, and Goddess Xuan knew the place really well. She knew how to avoid danger here, and had successfully led them in front of a bright corridor.

“I can smell some time determination. Goddess Xuan, where are we?” asked someone.

“The Godly Beast’s Mausoleum is inside,” said Goddess Xuan. The crowd was stupefied. A bestial god was buried in there?

“Since you’ve been here before, why do you want to bring us there?” asked the legendary flying snake coldly. He had doubts about Goddess Xuan’s true intentions. Why did she want to bring them to a beast’s grave?

“It looks like a time corridor, and it seems to be rotating, which means that each time I come here, it’s in a different place. It’s difficult to find. I fear that if I go inside alone, I won’t be able to come back out. Therefore, I want to go inside with everybody,” said Goddess Xuan.

Aomo looked at Lin Feng and said. “Father, the Phoenix Valley harbors evil intentions. They know you have a Forbidden Body and that you’re lucky, so they invited you to come along.”

“Everyone here is outstanding. They’re all from godly beasts’ clans. We can’t be sure of anything.” replied Lin Feng. “But since we came here, we have to be very careful.”

“Alright.” Aomo nodded.

Goddess Xuan was already in the corridor. A mysterious strength surrounded everybody as they followed after. The corridor seemed endless, nobody knew where it led. Many lights passed next to them.

“Be careful. Don’t touch those lights, and don’t blame me if you do. I warned you,” said Goddess Xuan. That place contained a

mysterious Qi.

“Master Ox, do you know or sense anything?” asked Lin Feng.

“It’s the Corridor of Space and Time. Be careful, those lights are violent time whirlwinds. Don’t touch them, otherwise, anything could happen. In Ganges Time, time is in a state of chaos. You could suddenly end up in a tornado and you would never be able to come out, or maybe you’d come out a thousand years later,” the ox said to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng heard some sounds, his heart trembled. Indeed, in a time storm, a cultivator could be stuck in there for ten thousand years and outside it’d be like a few seconds, and the opposite was possible, too, ten thousand years could pass outside while inside, it’d feel like a few seconds. It was a terrifying thing.

The group was extremely vigilant.

“Be careful. There’s a time storm.” In front of them was a violent windstorm. The crowd looked nervous, moving aside and staying close to the walls. The storm flew past the crowd. They didn’t even dare to release Qi.

“Let’s continue,” said Goddess Xuan calmly. She was already used to it. Without realizing it, the crowd walked for two days in the corridor. At some point, the corridor split apart into many roads.

“Goddess Xuan, are we going to continue indefinitely without a goal?” asked the Tortoise.

“We can only rely on luck. If we’re lucky, we might find some incredible treasures. If we’re unlucky, we might get stuck inside forever,” said Goddess Xuan. The crowd sighed.

At that moment, some bright lights flashed past, and tablets appeared.

“There’s someone!” said someone suddenly. The crowd realized that there really was someone there. That person was lying on the ground motionless, but they were alive. That person was holding a

Saint's Weapon, an extremely powerful one. The Qi which emerged from it shook people's hearts.

"A peerless Saint's Weapon!" The crowd was amazed. Zong Gan flapped his wings. He wanted to take the peerless Saint's Weapon.

"Don't take that risk," said Zong Lin.

"I'm alright. I'm so fast, nothing could happen to me," said Zong Gan. He then split in two. One of his bodies turned into a roc and flapped his wings, before turning into a beam of light.

He raised his claws and reached towards the Saint's Weapon... and a powerful wind surrounded him!

Zong Gan tried to move as quickly as possible, but he was suddenly extremely slow. His other body frowned.

"Oh no!" he said. The roc body immediately appeared in the tornado, struggling. Quickly, the time lights took it away.

"How scary. He couldn't do anything." His other body suddenly turned around and he came back, glaring at Lin Feng coldly.

"You stole my luck!" Zong Gan said to Lin Feng coldly. Lin Feng looked at him strangely. Stealing someone's luck? What a strange thing to say!

"You're ridiculous!" said Lin Feng coldly. He couldn't be bothered. They continued walking forwards and discovered many time storms. The crowd saw figures and treasures in the tornadoes, but didn't know what kind of people or treasures were stuck inside.

"Found it," said Goddess Xuan suddenly. She sounded happy. In front of her, some dazzling white lights had appeared.

"I can get inside thanks to it," said Goddess Xuan, pointing at the white lights. The others didn't understand.

"The first I came here, I was careless and that white light took me somewhere. There, I saw a godly beast's grave. Are you coming?"

asked Goddess Xuan.

“Sounds interesting. Let’s go!” said someone. People followed after her

“Everybody, hold hands to go inside so that we don’t lose one another. Alone, we might die,” Goddess Xuan smiled. The white lights illuminated her face and made her look even more beautiful.

“Alright.” The crowd continued walking forwards. They all wanted to get really close to Goddess Xuan. However, Goddess Xuan stretched out her hand and held hands with Lin Feng on one side and the Tortoise who looked like a child on the other, and smiled at them.

“Father, Goddess Xuan seems to believe you and the Tortoise’s child are lucky,” Aomo grinned. Lin Feng walked forwards, holding hands with Goddess Xuan and Aomo. They entered the white lights at the same time.

Suddenly, they started rotating.

“Time corridor.” Lin Feng and the others saw many different landscapes. They were traveling through time. Battles appeared in their field of vision. Figures flickered. It was like they were watching a movie.

After that, destructive lights also appeared and passed next to them, it gave them goosebumps. They contained a mysterious Qi.

“No!...” Lin Feng suddenly shouted furiously. His face was deathly pale.

“Father?!” shouted Aomo ,staring at Lin Feng. “Father, what’s wrong?”

“No, no...!” shouted Lin Feng, he was trembling. He let go of Goddess Xuan and Aomo’s hands, and jumped forwards.

“Father.” Aomo grabbed Lin Feng’s hand again, he didn’t want to let him go.

Lin Feng wanted to get rid of Aomo's hand, but Aomo firmly held him.

"Since you want to go, I'll help you out," said someone. Some gigantic wings grabbed Aomo and Lin Feng and pushed them.

Lin Feng suddenly turned around and saw Zong Gan. He looked at him coldly and then raised his fist. He shouted to Ao Cang Hai. "Take care of Aomo!"

Lin Feng suddenly turned around and jumped away. Aomo shouted furiously. "Father!"

The place was extremely dangerous. Maybe Lin Feng would die there. The crowd was astonished. They didn't know what Lin Feng had seen.

——

Lin Feng jumped into the white lights and then walked ahead slowly. Destructive lights kept appearing around him. However, his expression didn't change. He continued walking forwards.

"Lin Feng, you're crazy," said the old ox. This was Ganges Time! His master had been stuck here for a very long time back in the days.

"I saw my children inside!" replied Lin Feng. He had seen Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng. They were in a tornado, they were together and were in danger.

Those two little bastards, they met and now they came to Ganges Time, thought Lin Feng. If Meng Qing and You You knew this, they would have gone crazy. At least their jade talismans hadn't broken, so Lin Feng knew they were still alive!

Chapter 2461: Time Difference

Lin Feng continued walking forwards, lights appearing all around him. It was very difficult to move forwards, this world felt empty.

“How was a place like Ganges Time created?” he wondered. He realized how terrifying this place was. It was a world in which time itself was in turmoil.

“Lin Feng, time is already different in the place where you are. We just don’t know how different time here is from time in the outside world,” the old ox said to him. Lin Feng sighed and hoped time in here was slower. If time outside was faster, then the date of the agreement would arrive more quickly!

Lin Feng had spent a few seconds in a storm a moment before while looking for Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng. He had the impression he had been looking for them for a very long time, but he couldn’t find them. He had also tried to contact them, but the jade talismans didn’t work here. It was like the link to their godly awareness had been cut off from the talismans.

Lin Feng raised his head as a black wind descended from the sky. Lin Feng felt an icy cold, piercing to the bones. He continued walking forwards, having the impression he had lost track of time, and that he had spent a very long time in here.

White lights appeared, they looked like water. Lin Feng quickly dodged. However, the white lights became wider and filled the area. Lin Feng pulled a long face, and released as much strength as he could, attacking one place in particular. A hole appeared in the white lights and Lin Feng jumped through it.

His heart was pounding violently. That place was indeed really dangerous.

He suddenly sensed a few original strengths move towards him.

He focused on the pulsations of the earth and the sky and closed his eyes. Some water original strength still reached his arm. Steam appeared around his arm as it were burning. It was extremely painful, but he could only grit his teeth.

His wound felt numb.

“That’s water original strength, it’s so cold, but it feels as if it were burning as well. How painful.” Lin Feng released life original strength to heal and at the same time, he continued walking forwards cautiously.

——

His beard slowly grew out. His clothes were torn. His hair was long and messy.

“Master Ox, how much time has passed?” asked Lin Feng.

“Twelve years!” replied a voice in Lin Feng’s brain. He hoped the Fortune Shrine was fine.

During these years, Lin Feng asked himself why genuine life strength could be that powerful and why the Celestial Dao strength they studied couldn’t. He was the god of his own world so he had his own original strength, but was he walking on the right path? What would his future look like?

“Lin Feng,” said the old ox at that moment. Lin Feng’s face stiffened. An exit had appeared in front of him in a hurricane... it was the place where Lin Feng had seen Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng!

“Your two children were there, you don’t know whether they’re dead or alive, do you really want to go in?” asked the old ox. What would happen inside?

“Yes,” said Lin Feng, heading towards the hole. No matter what would happen inside, Lin Feng had to find Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng!

“I will try with a clone,” said Lin Feng. Clones appeared and

jumped into the hole. Lin Feng's clones quickly saw what was going on there; it was dangerous, and his ordinary clones had no strength so they couldn't fight at all there.

After a long time, Lin Feng said, "My two children are not dead. Maybe they found a safe place. I will open the way with a clone, that way my real body will be safe."

Many of his clones jumped into the hole, and Lin Feng followed. Danger lurked all around. A terrifyingly dangerous illusion appeared. However, because his clones scouted the way, Lin Feng was more scared than hurt.

After a short time, Lin Feng appeared somewhere else. He looked around in surprise.

It was a place with fertile soil, but it was covered with white lights.

Lin Feng sensed life everywhere in that fertile soil. There were many people here, and everybody was very strong.

"There are small worlds in Ganges Time!" he exclaimed to himself. Someone came up to him quickly. He was wearing plain and simple clothes, his hair was messy but he looked clean. He looked at Lin Feng and said, "A newcomer, how did you get here?"

"There was a hole in a hurricane, I jumped in," said Lin Feng.

"A few hundreds of years ago, two young men did the same. You're lucky," that person smiled. Lin Feng frowned; two young men, hundreds of years before?

"As expected, time passed, but I didn't realize it." Even though Lin Feng was surprised, he remained calm and asked, "Where are they?"

"With Mister Time, you know them?"

"I know them. Please bring me to them," said Lin Feng.

"Alright, come with me." The man brought Lin Feng to a low-

ceilinged hut. An old man and two young men were there, chatting.

“Zhe Tian, Qiong Sheng!” shouted Lin Feng. Their hearts twitched and they raised their heads. When they saw Lin Feng, their eyes became red.

“Father!” shouted Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng at the same time. They rolled up their sleeves and jumped in front of him.

“Hundreds of years passed, and finally, you’re here, Father!,” Zhe Tian sighed. He looked more mature than in the past. Lin Feng was completely astonished by his cultivation level – Zhe Tian had become a high-level Saint, just like him!

Lin Feng smiled strangely. He had been their father for hundreds of years, but he hadn’t spent that much time with them. It felt strange.

“Good, you’re both alive and safe!” Lin Feng was relived. Zhe Tian had become a high-level Saint and Qiong Sheng had become a low-level Saint. They were both extremely strong.

“You’re both going to surpass me in terms of strength!” Lin Feng smiled.

They both grinned. Zhe Tian explained, “Mister Time helped us. Without him, we wouldn’t be this strong.”

Lin Feng looked at the ordinary looking old man, who looked unfathomable and enigmatic. It was impossible to see how strong he was. Lin Feng walked towards him and bowed, “I’m Lin Feng, thank you very much for taking care of these two young men, Master.”

“No need to thank me. They’re just talented, otherwise, I wouldn’t have been able to help them at all,” said the old man smiled. “Zhe Tian has an inherent original strength body. He can study and understand original strength very easily. I was delighted when I found that out.”

inherent original strength body?

Lin Feng looked at Zhe Tian, his son already understood all sorts of strengths when he was a child, he was very talented.

“Enjoy your time with your father. I have things to do,” said Mister Time smiled politely.

Lin Feng looked at Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng. He asked, “You’ve been here for so long, haven’t you tried to leave?”

“We wanted to, but Mister Time said it wasn’t the right time.” replied Qiong Sheng. “Father, this place is a precious treasure all by itself. Come with us!”

—

After that, his sons brought Lin Feng to another place. After a short time, Lin Feng saw many well-lit corridors. There were different places in all those corridors. There were all sorts of natural original strengths and destructive strengths.

“We practice cultivation here. When we don’t understand something, Mister Time helps us and the others. That’s how we became so strong. Father, Zhe Tian understands several original strengths at the maximum level,” said Qiong Sheng smiled. “I’m not as talented, but I practice cultivation really hard. Don’t worry about me, I will definitely be able to compete with you at some point!”

“Yes, we will!” agreed Zhe Tian, nodding and smiling.

“Good sons! You’re grown-ups now. Let’s go and see your mom,” said Lin Feng, tapping their shoulders. He smiled and took them into his own world. Meng He and You You were extremely happy to see them. Lin Hai and Yue Meng He were also extremely happy to see their grandchildren. Spending time with family was something wonderful.

Empress Xi was there too, watching Lin Feng and the others. She was influenced by Qiu Yue Xin and Xin Ye, her aloofness was

weakening with time.

“You still want to fight against me?” Lin Feng asked her.

Empress Xi had mixed feelings. She stared at Lin Feng and closed her eyes, then shook her head. “I don’t hate you anymore. Brother Netherworlds is free now. I hurt him.”

“So let it go now, it’s time,” Lin Feng smiled. It was time to forget about their tensions.

Chapter 2462: Cheated

Time in Lin Feng's world passed at the same pace as whatever place he was in. In his own world, Lin Feng started creating many useful things. He even made a place with Saint Luck. Zhe Tian and Meng Qing practiced cultivation together. Lin Feng went to see Mister Time.

"Master," said Lin Feng, bowing before Mister Time politely.

"Young man, what do you want from me?" asked Mister Time, smiling at Lin Feng.

"Master, you said my children were just very talented, I don't believe you. You taught them everything. I'm not going to ask you for details, though. I just want to ask you... what is the difference between time here, and time in the outside world?" asked Lin Feng.

"You look quite ferocious. You're facing a disastrous situation," said Mister Time. He didn't reply to Lin Feng's question. He said, "Go. Don't ask too much. I won't tell you anything."

"Master, it's important..." pressed Lin Feng nervously.

"You can leave, then," said Mister Time indifferently. Lin Feng frowned. He was speechless. Mister Time stared at Lin Feng and said, "Little oxie, why don't you come out to play when you see me?!"

Lin Feng's face stiffened. His heart started pounding violently. Little oxie?

Lights flashed. Without Lin Feng doing anything, the old ox appeared and looked at the old man in a respectful way. "Hello Mister Time."

"Haha, so many years have passed, long time no see! You've become so strong, little oxie," Mister Time laughed. Lin Feng's heart pounded even more furiously. The old ox had told him that

his master had been stuck in Ganges Time for many years before, and had understood time strength here. Now Mister Time had said to the old ox, “Long time no see”! So Mister Time already existed back then...

The scariest part was that the old ox was incredibly strong, and yet he looked at Mister Time in a very, very respectful way...

“Master Ox,” said Lin Feng to the old ox telepathically.

“Don’t use telepathy. You can’t hide anything from Mister Time,” said the old ox straightforwardly. “Lin Feng, don’t worry. Don’t ask anything, either. Just go.”

Lin Feng was extremely nervous. He nodded and withdrew, but his heart was pounding furiously. Was that the secret of Ganges Time?

—

After Lin Feng left, the old ox walked closer to Mister Time and crouched down. “Mister Time, I understood time strength thanks to you back in the days, thank you so much. Now, will you help Lin Feng?”

“Help?” Mister Time frowned and shook his head, “I didn’t show him the way here. His children were lucky to arrive here, too. I always help people who don’t die in Ganges Time and make it this far, just like that little girl, but I don’t care about that young man.”

“Goddess Xuan from the Phoenix Clan came here, too?” asked the old ox, curious.

“No. She went elsewhere, a place where I like to rest. I transmitted some knowledge to her. I wouldn’t have thought she’d come back. She’s greedy,” replied Mister Time, smiling and shaking his head.

“What about Lin Feng? Are you not going to take him out?” asked the old ox.

“He came here, so what? I love his kids. I hope they will stay here with me. Sometimes, they can go and have a walk to discover some new things if they wish,” said Mister Time, looking amused.

“Mister Time, are they your disciples?” asked the old ox. His heart was racing. He was thinking Lin Feng’s children were really lucky, extremely lucky, beyond imagination. That kind of opportunity was just too... indescribable. They were even more lucky than his own master!

“I never said that. I only had one disciple in my life, but he was too disappointing. He surprisingly escaped. He wanted to have a free and unfettered life in the outside world. If I saw him again, I would break his legs.” Even though Mister Time talked that way, he smiled happily in reminiscence.

“I have one last question, is my Master still here?” asked the old ox, shivering. That was one thing he had wondered for a very long time.

“I said I wouldn’t say anything,” said Mister Time smiled. “Don’t try to get a word from me. I want to see some agitation.”

The old ox sighed. He wouldn’t get an answer. It was just like the last time he had come. This time, Mister Time wouldn’t answer questions about his master. His master had left in a fit of pique. His master used to be such an incredible cultivator.

“Actually, I can tell you some things,” said Mister Time at that moment. The old ox had some hopes again.

“I didn’t lie to that young man. He’s less and less lucky. He will face a disaster, but disasters help people grow up and become mature, right?” said Mister Time, frowning as if he were seeing things.

——

Lin Feng didn’t know what the old ox and Mister Time were talking about. He didn’t know who Mister Time was. Zhe Tian and

Qiong Sheng didn't tell anything to Lin Feng, of course, he didn't blame them. Mister Time was extremely strong, even the old ox seemed to respect them a lot. They had to be careful, including when they were talking to their own father.

Lin Feng walked along a time corridor. According to Zhe Tian, he had to be only a little bit careful inside but apparently, their lives weren't in danger while in there. After a short time, Lin Feng arrived in front of the water original strength. Spluttering sounds spread in the air. He couldn't move further.

"Original strength, which really comes from the earth and the sky." Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and looked at the water.

"Water flows, it's soft, it doesn't have a shape. But water can freeze. Water can harm people. In my previous life, when water boiled, it could also be very dangerous and burn people. And getting burned by boiling water is worse than being burned by fire," murmured Lin Feng.

Water couldn't be divided. A drop of water could turn into several drops of water. Water could also become one again, too. When two drops of water were together, they became one drop. When billions and trillions of drops were together, they could turn into a waterfall or a lake.

"I need to understand all the specificities of water to understand it at the maximum level," murmured Lin Feng. He closed his eyes and studied water. He turned water into drops and then he fused them together again.

—

Lin Feng calmly studied. Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng were at the entrance of the corridor, watching Lin Feng as their eyes twinkled.

"Zhe Tian, why did Mister Time help us, but doesn't want to help our father?" Qiong Sheng asked telepathically.

"You can imagine who Mister Time is. We can't understand him,

everything we experienced here feels like a dream,” replied Zhe Tian telepathically.

“Yes, Mister Time looks like someone who’s down to earth, but actually he almost never gets involved in worldly affairs. Last time, you almost died, and he didn’t do anything.”

“Not almost, he’s never gotten involved in worldly affairs,” said Zhe Tian. His eyes were twinkling. “Qiong Sheng, we should continue practicing cultivation. I want to see if I can make original strengths fuse together in less than a hundred years.”

“Alright, good,” agreed Qiong Sheng. The two of them left.

Life in Ganges Time was simple. Lin Feng eventually understood water original strength at the maximum level. He went to his own world and created more Saint Luck, and helped his people study. They had all studied the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. Every ten years, Lin Feng gave lectures about what it was like to be a Saint. He also supported the most outstanding ones.

Within fifty years, a Saint emerged in Lin Feng’s spirit world...

Lin Feng was in a time corridor, gazing into the distance. There was an illusory river, a river of time. Each time Lin Feng was there, he could sense time intent.

“Fast, slow, in the end, they’re both time. How to control time strength? Time strength is when you can make things unlimitedly fast or slow. Time is just an aspect of speed.”

I wonder how many years passed in the outside world, Lin Feng sighed. He turned around and left that place. However, every three days, Lin Feng came back to that place and looked at the time river.

Time passed ruthlessly, without caring about people. Meng Qing, who had become a Saint came there with Lin Feng. She put her head on his shoulders and smiled, “Time passes, but there are things time can’t change.”

“Things time can’t change?” Lin Feng was surprised and looked at Meng Qing.

“Yes, you think time can change anything? In a thousand or even ten thousand years, will you give me up?” said Meng Qing, smiling at Lin Feng.

“Never, time can’t change that,” said Lin Feng suddenly. Indeed, there were things time couldn’t change. The speed at which time passed could be different, but attacks were the same no matter what.

Time, time!

Lin Feng’s heart raced. Then, he smiled. He had been cheated! He had cheated himself!

Chapter 2463: Understanding Time

Lin Feng looked at the time river and smiled, “Master Ox, you cheated me.”

The old ox appeared behind Lin Feng, still looking unperturbed, and asked, “You understood?”

“I understood,” he replied.

“Let me tell you though, since you know it. Before, you went to study, and you studied to check that you were wrong. That was wrong, you understood you were wrong, but then, realizing your understanding was erroneous and it turned out to be a great thing in the end, right?” murmured the old ox.

“I understand. Time isn’t a kind of strength, it’s not something you use to attack. Time doesn’t change anything, and it can’t kill people either. It just makes people grow old, that’s all,” said Lin Feng. “Time can’t change things. It’s just something that exists. Water, fire, earth and so on exist too, but they have strength, time doesn’t have strength. It exists, it doesn’t change anything, and that’s all.”

Lin Feng then pointed at the time river and said, “There, time passes because Ganges Time is time original strength itself. Ganges Time is original strength itself. It contains time original strength.”

Meng Qing shivered. Ganges Time was original strength?

“Time is not a fusion of original strength, and decay is something that helps people understand time original strength. This place is pure time original strength, and it’s as powerful as other kinds of original strengths we can study. But this place was created by the earth and the sky themselves,” said Lin Feng.

The old ox smiled and said, “You came here every day to watch the time of the outside world pass, to understand time?”

“No. Time doesn’t change anything. I need to understand slow

and fast and make them fuse together with time,” said Lin Feng.

The old ox smiled happily and complimented, “You really understood!”

“Master Ox, you can modify the speed at which time passes because you made fast fuse together with time original strength. Therefore, you can make time pass faster, just like you can make fast fuse together with any other kind of strength to make it faster. Even if the enemy is extremely strong, it doesn’t change anything unless they also understand time strength.

“Ganges Time has the most natural time original strength because it was created by the earth and the sky. It also contains the purest original strengths. With time, original strengths fuse together, slow and fast strengths are an example and that’s why time can pass faster or slower in different places. What I wonder now is... what kind of place is Ganges Time for real?” Lin Feng sighed.

It was a forbidden territory which contained a perfect time strength, and all sorts of original strengths.

“I don’t know, either,” said the old ox smiling, “What do you intend to do now?”

“Sense the strength, of course,” said Lin Feng. He was holding hands with Meng Qing and said, “Meng Qing, you go to Zhe Tian, I’m going out.”

Then he walked away and jumped into the time river.

“Lin Feng!” Meng Qing called out.

The old ox said, “Trust him. Back in the days, it took me thousands of years to understand. He’s stronger than me, trust him.”

“Very well,” Meng Qing smiled. She trusted Lin Feng, of course!

Outside of the time corridor, Mister Time was seated on the grass. In front of him were Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng.

“Your father is patient,” said Mister Time smiled.

The two were surprised and asked, “Mister Time, what’s wrong with our father?”

“He jumped into the rivers of time,” said Mister Time smiled. “It must feel great. You should also go there. It would be a new place.”

Actually, Lin Feng didn’t feel great at all. After jumping into the time river, he laid there and closed his eyes. He was all alone, lonely.

Lin Feng didn’t sense slow or fast. When original strengths fused together, it was impossible to sense them individually. Time was the main aspect.

“Fast and slow,” murmured Lin Feng. He wanted to fuse original strengths together. First he had to reach the maximum level, and he had the impression that his slow and fast original strengths weren’t far from reaching the maximum level.

“If my slow and fast original strengths reached the maximum level in time strength, and that I fused them together with earth, empty space, and water original strengths at the maximum level, I would definitely be able to win the battle. However, so many years have passed, how many years have passed in the outside world?” Lin Feng didn’t know. After all, he couldn’t leave Ganges Time.

The atmosphere in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds felt like a dream. People understood that the agreement might change the fate of the whole world. So many strong cultivators were gathering at the Fortune Shrine.

They were from everywhere: the Supreme Animal World, the

Continent of the Nine Clouds, etc. They all studied the buildings and fortresses of the Fortune Shrine. Would they stay there forever, or would they get destroyed at some point?

However, news spread that Lin Feng might not be able to show up at the most crucial moment. There were also rumors from the Supreme Animal World that Lin Feng had gone to Ganges Time and was maybe dead. The Fortune Shrine didn't say anything, so people could say whatever they wanted.

—

In the Fortune Shrine, a group of core disciples gathered. One of them looked at the Shrine's leader and asked, "Hasn't Mara-Deva come back yet?"

"He's still in the Supreme Animal World," said the Shrine's leader.

"Any news from Lin Feng?"

"Nothing. He's in Ganges Time. He's probably stuck in there," replied the Shrine's leader. The disciples were astonished. Things were changing quickly. Many strong cultivators had gathered there, and if Lin Feng didn't show up on the day of the agreement, the Fortune Shrine would be destroyed. It was an excuse the other Shrines had put in.

The Fortune Shrine could only wait for Lin Feng.

—

Meng Qing was waiting for Lin Feng at the end of the corridor. Tang You You came and said, "So many years have passed. Why isn't he coming back?"

"I know, right?" answered Meng Qing, turning around. She smiled, "He's like that. He doesn't care about danger. He's natural and unrestrained. But it's also because he's worried about us."

"He's always like that when he's under pressure," said Tang You

You, shaking her head, “But now our young men are grown up. I hope they can help him a little.”

“What are you talking about?” asked someone at that moment. Meng Qing and Tang You You raised their heads and smiled broadly. Someone had appeared in the time river and was smiling at them.

Meng Qing and Tang You You’s beautiful eyes twinkled. They asked, “You don’t know?”

“You missed me every day, I had to come back,” said Lin Feng slowly walking towards them. He grasped their hands.

“Who missed you? You You?” asked Meng Qing, rolling her eyes.

Tang You You groaned proudly. “It’s probably you, Meng Qing!”

“Is that so?” said Lin Feng, smiling and caressing their hands softly. They pinched his hands and Lin Feng took a deep breath.

Lin Feng went to the old ox and said, “Master Ox, I’m going to leave Ganges Time.”

“How?” asked the old ox, “Mister Time won’t help you.”

“I’m sure there’s a way to leave in the time strength,” said Lin Feng smiled.

The old ox nodded, “Alright, you understood. You seem so confident.”

—

Lin Feng went to see Mister Time. Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng were there as well. Lin Feng said, “Mister Time, I’m leaving with my sons.”

“No,” said Mister Time, shaking his head. Lin Feng was startled and asked, “Why?”

“No why. They’re not leaving,” said Mister Time. Lin Feng was speechless.

“Lin Feng, since Mister Time says that, they’re staying here,” said the old ox.

Lin Feng remained silent for a few seconds and then nodded. He said to Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng, “Take care.”

“Father,” said Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng, looking at Mister Time. They looked at him in an imploring way.

“I won’t let you,” said Mister Time patiently.

“Take care. You will have the opportunity to come out at some point,” said Lin Feng. He knew that Mister Time was an extraordinary person. He bowed and said, “Thank you for taking care of my children, Mister Time.”

Then, he turned around and left. His sons watched him leave.

Chapter 2464: Back to the Shrine

Back in the time corridor, Lin Feng turned around and looked at Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng. He smiled and said, “Go back and practice cultivation hard with Mister Time.”

“So you knew, Father!” said Qiong Sheng, looking at Lin Feng.

“You think your Father is stupid?” Lin Feng laughed. Then he glanced at the old ox and said, “Master Ox, you’ve been here before, it means you know how to leave.”

“I followed my Master back then,” replied the old ox.

“This time, you will follow me.”

“You know how to leave Ganges Time?” asked the old ox, flowing into his original form.

“I spent years bathing in time lights. I also discovered a secret of Ganges Time. If you follow a certain kind of time which works according to the same patterns, you will be safe,” said Lin Feng, grinning at the old ox, “It means that among the people who come to Ganges Time, only those who understand time and time patterns can leave from its depths.”

The old ox smiled, but said nothing. He galloped forwards. “Let’s leave.”

“Yes.” Lin Feng looked at You You and Meng Qing, who didn’t want to leave Qiong Sheng and Zhe Tian. He shouted, “Meng Qing, You You, they’re with Mister Time and they’ll be fine!”

Meng Qing and You You didn’t want to leave their children, but in the end they went back into Lin Feng’s world. Lin Feng and the old ox flew through the corridors of time.

“Master Ox, I want to go back to my world to practice cultivation. Can you lead the way?” asked Lin Feng.

The old ox replied, “What? You want to stay on my back?”

“Master, you know it’s not what I mean. I just can’t afford to waste time,” Lin Feng shrugged.

The old ox said, “Alright, jump on my back.”

“Thank you very much, Master!” He jumped onto the ox’s back. Then he asked, “Master Ox, since we understand time and time patterns now, does it mean we can come back as we wish?”

“Yes, if you want to come to Ganges Time and drift in the rivers of time, you can. I just don’t know how long you’ll need to get out. Finding Mister Time is impossible. You were just extremely lucky this time.”

Lin Feng smiled wryly. Indeed, how long would he need to get out? Sometimes some people stayed in here decades, sometimes centuries. People had to be patient inside. Lin Feng had never spent so much time in one place as in Ganges Time.

Lin Feng was on the ox’s back and closed his eyes. He went into his own world.

Now, his world had become much bigger. There were five Saints Lin Feng had raised. But still, there were few strong people in his world. Apart from those he had brought in, great emperors were really rare, but Lin Feng didn’t mind. He sensed the time in his world. He could now control the time there.

“Now that I can fuse slow or fast together with time, I can make time pass slower or faster, but now I can only increase or decrease time speed by eight times. When I understand it better, it will be a hundred times, or even a thousand times! When I manage to do that, it’ll mean that one thousand years in here will be like one year in the outside world! My world will expand that way.”

Lin Feng grinned at the thought. His world would be absolutely perfect someday, but first he needed to sort out some things. Once his world was perfect, Lin Feng wouldn’t intervene anymore. He would let nature take its course.

There were many different time rivers in Ganges Time. Each river contained a specific sort of time with specific patterns. Some rivers had the same patterns, and so as long as a cultivator stayed in the rivers which had the same patterns, they were safe. Lin Feng had been drifting in the rivers of time for hundreds of years, comprehending the secrets of Ganges Time. Back in the days, the old ox and his master had been there and understood the secrets of Ganges Time as well. However, nobody could know how long they would stay there. Lin Feng didn't know, either and he had no other choice, anyway.

A dozen years later, many strong cultivators appeared at the entrance of Ganges Time in the Supreme Animal World. Ganges Time was the most mysterious forbidden territory of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. There were many legends about it. Some people said there were other worlds in there... of course, they were just guessing.

“Look over there, there's someone in Ganges Time,” said someone in surprise. The group of strong cultivators gazed into the distance and saw a young man on a golden ox's back. He was drifting on the rivers of time.

“An ox and a man. They look terrifyingly strong!” murmured the crowd. The ox was running along, traveling across time. Very quickly, he came out of Ganges Time.

“There are cultivators.” Lin Feng stared at the crowd. His eyes twinkled. The old ox came out, and Lin Feng asked, “Where are we?”

The people were dumbstruck, wondering if this man and ox from the ancient past.

“Master, we're in the Supreme Animal World, southern part,”

someone finally answered respectfully.

Lin Feng was happy, “Finally, we’re finally out.”

“What’s the situation like regarding the war of the Shrines?” asked Lin Feng.

“The war of the Shrines?” That person looked stunned and asked, “Master, you mean the war of the ancient days?”

They thought Lin Feng was asking about the war in the far past, the one which had taken place a very, very long time before.

“No, I’m talking about the agreement between the Fortune Shrine and all the other Shrines. What happened after?” asked Lin Feng.

“Oh, all the Shrines went to the Fortune Shrine, it’s going to start soon. I don’t know what will happen this time,” replied that person. Lin Feng and the old ox left as soon as that person finished talking, turning into beams of light. Lin Feng also used his jade talisman to inform the Diviner he was on his way.

It hadn’t started yet. They had time!

“He surprisingly knew about the agreement?” After Lin Feng left, those people were surprised. The agreement had been decided two years before, which meant that person had gone to Ganges Time for less than two years and he was still alive!

—

On the way, Lin Feng and the Diviner chatted. The Diviner had been waiting in Phoenix Valley the whole time. He hadn’t thought Lin Feng would come out through another passage.

“Teacher, how is the situation now?” asked Lin Feng to the Diviner.

“Let’s move and talk at the same time. The situation is critical. The Fortune Shrine is in great danger,” replied the Diviner.

“You didn’t manage to convince any other Shrine?” asked Lin

Feng.

“The Shrines all have their own plans. Convincing them is something difficult to do, same thing in the Supreme Animal World. The Fortune Shrine is alone. I’ve been in the Phoenix Valley the whole time and I didn’t manage to convince them, either.”

“Now, the only hope is for us to win these battles, then we’ll have less pressure on our backs,” said the Diviner. The members of the Fortune Shrine believed in good fortune, but they also understood how the world worked, and that strength wasn’t something esoteric.

Lin Feng remained silent. He didn’t know how strong his enemy would be, all he could do was do his best to win. Lin Feng was confident, but wouldn’t underestimate his opponent.

“By the way, Lin Feng, what about you? How ready are you?” asked the Diviner, staring at Lin Feng.

“I will win no matter what,” replied Lin Feng. He owed the Fortune Shrine. He could only win!

——

Lin Feng and the Diviner traveled back to Fortune City. Because of the agreement, there were strong cultivators from all over the Continent of the Nine Clouds in Fortune City. There were many, many Saints. It was an incredible era. The Continent of the Nine Clouds hadn’t seen such a thing for centuries.

Two people appeared in a palace floating in the sky of Fortune City and landed at the top of a small hill. They looked at the Saint’s Battle Stage.

“Lin Feng.” The Fortune Shrine’s Leader suddenly opened his eyes and smiled at Lin Feng gently. “Finally, you’re back.”

“My apologies, I didn’t want you to be worried,” Lin Feng bowed.

“You are blessed, I knew you’d come back,” the Leader smiled. “Four other people will battle on your side there.”

Lin Feng looked at the Saint’s Battle Stage. Chu Chun Qiu was there, wearing a purple robe. He looked proud, he despised common people. Kong Ming was there too, his palms together. He looked extremely calm, as if Chu Cuin Qiu didn’t exist. He was completely different from Chu Chun Qiu.

They were both low-level Saints. Their cultivation speed was already incredible.

“Back in the days, the destiny lights illuminated you and them. Chu Chun Qiu and Kong Ming are also incredible fighters,” said the Shrine’s Leader.

“Indeed,” Lin Feng nodded. He looked at Hou Qing Lin, Jun Mo Xi, and Zhou Rong Man, who were back too, as well as Hua Qing Feng and many other outstanding disciples of the Fortune Shrine.

Chapter 2465: Grand Meeting

The disciples of the Fortune Shrine had all come back. They were going through these hardships together. Lin Feng looked over at the crowd and asked, “Leader, are you sure about the fighters?”

“Yes. They all participated in the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds back in the days. Apart from you, Kong Ming and Chu Chun Qiu are low-level Saints. Zhou Rong Man and Hou Qing Lin will fight in the group of Half-Saints. Their fighting abilities have been tested,” the Shrine’s Leader smiled.

Lin Feng was surprised and murmured, “I wouldn’t have thought that these people would reach the top so quickly.”

“That’s destiny. That’s also why the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds occurs every hundred years, and the Destiny Wheel even rotated... because of you all,” the Shrine’s Leader smiled. People of that generation had grown up at an incredible speed, much quicker than the geniuses of the previous meetings of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Coincidentally, or perhaps not, that batch of cultivators had been for the Fortune Shrine!

The leader of the Fortune Shrine said, “The five of you represent the Fortune Shrine. Even though the selection is now determined, if anyone wants to give up, or if anyone thinks they can replace any of them, it’s now or never.”

Everybody looked at the leader, but remained silent. They had all tried, they had fought many times, it was useless to try again. They had tried enough times.

“Since nobody has anything to say, get ready,” said the leader, walking away. Lin Feng walked over to the Saint’s battle stage. He glanced at Chu Chun Qiu. Chu Chun Qiu’s eyes glittered as he also glanced at Lin Feng.

“Are you ready, brother?” Lin Feng asked Hou Qing Lin.

“We’ll only know after the battle,” replied Hou Qing Lin.

Zhou Rong Man also came over and said to Lin Feng, “I’m Zhou Rong Man!”

“I know your name is Zhou Rong Man, you’re the 333rd son of the Zhou Clan!” proclaimed Lin Feng, smiling at Zhou Rong Man.

“Lin Feng, I thought I was the strongest cultivator at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, but I ranked fourth. Now I’m still fourth. You’re all much stronger. But I will do my best to catch up with you. Now I’m going to help you and the Fortune Shrine, and someday, I’ll fight against you,” said Zhou Rong Man smiling at Lin Feng with determination.

“I’ll wait for you,” replied Lin Feng, smiling and nodding back at him.

“Lin Feng, this time, you’re the one in danger, so be very careful,” said Jun Mo Xi. “They will do their best to kill you as quickly as possible. Your original strength hasn’t been at the maximum level for a very long. Be careful.”

“Indeed!” Lin Feng agreed.

——

More and more strong cultivators gathered in Fortune City. Many people from other Shrines appeared, their eyes filled with killing intent. The atmosphere was tense. Some symbols appeared in the sky, representing different Shrines.

The Fire Shrine’s symbol was a godly fire shield. Their members looked spectacular, dignified, and majestic. The Thunder Shrine’s symbol was a godly celestial hammer, there were thunders around it. Their people looked extremely aggressive.

“How spectacular.” Many strong cultivators in the distance were amazed by the Shrines’ symbols. They looked incredible with their robes fluttering in the wind. The atmosphere was oppressive.

A group of strong cultivators descended from the sky. They looked like immortals and enlightened beings. People felt good around them. They were strong cultivators from the Fortune Shrine.

“The Fortune Shrine’s Leader is holding the Scepter of Destiny!” The crowd was stupefied when they saw the Scepter of Destiny in the Fortune Shrine’s leader’s hand.

The Shrines’ leaders had probably all come with their most precious treasures. The previous time, the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader had sealed Da Yu City with the Celestial Sealing Map!

The leader of the Fortune Shrine smiled and said, “Today, you all came to my Shrine and I feel honored. However, I would like to know some things. Many Shrines came, but who is here to fight against us? And among those who aren’t here to fight against us, what is your position? The Empty Space Shrine’s Leader kind of decided everything on his own. Empty Space Shrine’s Leader, who’s your team?”

The Empty Space Shrine’s Leader looked sharp where he was seated at the top of the bleachers. He smiled and murmured, “We are the Empty Space Shrine, the Fire Shrine, the Ice and Snow Shrine, the Dazzling Gold Shrine, the Wind Shrine, and the Demon Shrine.”

“Six Shrines!” The Fortune Shrine’s Leader smiled, he had anticipated that. He asked “What about the position of the other Shrines?”

“The Soul Shrine is here to watch,” the Soul Shrine’s Leader smiled.

“The Earth Shrine wants to be a witness,” said the Earth Shrine’s Leader. All the Shrines expressed their opinions except for the Light Shrine, which didn’t seem to exist. No Shrine said they were on the side of the Fortune Shrine.

“The Supreme Animal World will be a witness too,” said middle-aged man who looked calm and composed, yet extremely aggressive.

“I feel touched, Dragon Leader,” the Fortune Shrine’s Leader nodded in acknowledgement.

“The Roc Clan came to watch,” said a strong cultivator from the Roc Clan. He was wearing a golden helmet and looked like a king.

The Phoenix Clan, the Unicorn Clan, and the Tortoise Clan all said they were there to watch.

“And what about those people? No need to hide,” said the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader icily.

Lights twinkled in the sky, and some coffins appeared, “Don’t worry about us, we’re not here to bother anyone.”

The world lights flashed and disappeared as if they had never appeared.

“Who is the referee this time?” asked the Fortune Shrine’s Leader.

“A leader of a Shrine, or a beast leader?” said the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader, looking at those who didn’t belong to any side.

“I’d like to recommend a referee,” said someone in the crowd. Everybody looked at that person, and many people recognized him.

“Tian Ruo Jian is here, too!”

Tian Ruo Jian rose up in the air and smiled, “I’m sure everybody will be satisfied by the referee I’d like to recommend.”

“Who?” asked the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader. After that, he gazed into the distance and saw some people arriving. Many people frowned.

Three people, the leader of the group was an old man.

“Peerless Saint!” Many people frowned. Only a peerless Saint could assume that function.

“It’s Weapon Master Bing! He became a peerless Saint, how strong!” Many people sighed with amazement. Since it was Weapon Master Bing, the two people at his sides had to be his fellow disciples, the best weapon makers in the world.

“You recommend Weapon Master Bing?” asked the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader indifferently.

“My teacher,” corrected Weapon Master Bing, smiling and floating above the battle stage, “Congratulations and welcome, Teacher.”

“Teacher!” the crowd gasped.

“Hahaha...” An incredible Qi rolled in the sky and the crowd heard someone laughing loudly. Weapon Master Bing’s teacher.... the best weapon maker in the world, the Godly Weapon Master... he was there! The crowd trembled.

They raised their heads and saw a vortex of empty space Qi. Suddenly, a figure appeared. He said to Weapon Master Bing and the others, “Thank you, young men.”

“Thank you, teacher!” answered the few people at the same time. The crowd was astonished; how young, that person was so young! Surprisingly, the best weapon maker in the world looked so young and yet Weapon Master Bing was old, and admired him...

“I came to be the referee, you don’t mind right?” said the Godly Weapon Master.

“Since you want to, no problem,” said the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader. He wasn’t happy, he didn’t know why the Godly Weapon Master had come. This wasn’t something he had anticipated.

Chapter 2466: Buddhist Mountain's Leader

The Fortune Shrine's Leader smiled. He announced, "Godly Weapon Master, Your Excellency, you are extremely famous in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, so you're an excellent candidate to be a referee."

The Godly Weapon Master glanced over the crowd and smiled. He slowly walked forwards and landed at the top of some bleachers. His three disciples sat down just beneath him.

"Since it's that way, I'm happy to be the referee," said the Godly Weapon Master. However, his tone of speech sounded strange. Many people had never seen the Godly Weapon Master, the best weapon maker in the world.

"Show your five fighters. Once you send them to the front, you can't change them again," said the Godly Weapon Master. Both sides nodded. On the side of the Fortune Shrine, those who had been selected came to the front: Lin Feng, Kong Ming, Chu Chun Qiu, Hou Qing Lin, and Zhou Rong Man.

On the other side, six Shrines had decided to join hands. They also had to send five people. The crowd frowned when they saw their fighters.

Saint Tian Xin Mo was from the Demon Shrine and he had been a Saint for hundreds of thousands of years. Apart from the fact that he hadn't managed to fuse two sorts of special original strengths together, he was incredibly strong.

"Lin Feng, your opponent will probably be Saint Tian Xin Mo. He's extremely strong. He can control other people's hearts. His demon and illusion original strengths have reached the maximum level. His powers are explosive and his methods sly," the Diviner said to Lin Feng telepathically. Lin Feng looked at that demon. He had to be careful.

Chu Chun Qiu and Kong Ming's opponents were respectively Saint Pa Di Xu and Saint Qiong Xie from the Fire Shrine.

Zhou Rong Man and Hou Qing Lin's opponents were Saint Bu Mie and someone nobody knew, he was only a Half-Saint, but was probably extremely strong, otherwise the Shrines wouldn't have sent him. He was from the Ice and Snow Shrine, and looked mysterious.

One thing was sure, though; on the side of the Fortune Shrine, the cultivators were young, and on the other side, they were all old and terrifyingly strong. Some of them used to be extremely famous and then they had stopped showing up in public. Only the cultivator of the Ice and Snow Shrine was extremely mysterious.

Saint Tian Xin Mo, Saint Pa Di Xu, Saint Qiong Xie, Saint Bu Mie, the six Shrines had sent their best fighters. The Fortune Shrine's chance of success was extremely low, especially for Lin Feng, two years... how could he resist some like Saint Tian Xin Mo after only two years?

"If one side surrenders, then it's a loss, if nobody surrenders, then it's a battle to death, what do you think?" said the Godly Weapon Master.

"I don't mind," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader.

"I have no objection, either," replied the Empty Space Shrine's Leader.

"Even though the battles are happening in Fortune City, six Shrines came to challenge the Fortune Shrine and they have the advantage, so the six Shrines should choose cultivators first and the Fortune Shrine can send someone of the same cultivation level, what do you think?" said the Godly Weapon Master. The Fortune Shrine wouldn't mind.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader smiled and agreed, "Alright."

"The Empty Space Shrine's Leader looks very self-confident,"

murmured the crowd. The Fortune Shrine was in a very difficult situation. Six Shrines had joined hands against the Fortune Shrine, and all their fighters were incredible, the best at their cultivation level. The Fortune Shrine's fighters looked much weaker.

But the Fortune Shrine had chosen them for a reason.

"Since you look so happy, start now," said the Godly Weapon Master. Everybody looked at the Empty Space Shrine's Leader.

"First battle, Qiong Xie, you go," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader. Saint Qiong Xie flashed forwards and landed on the battle stage.

"Kong Ming, that one is yours," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader.

"Very good!" Kong Ming put his palms together and floated over to the battle stage, landing in front of Qiong Xie. He looked calm and serene as he said, "Please, let's exchange views on cultivation."

Qiong Xie didn't say anything. He threw a finger out and a fire trail appeared. Flames emerged from all his fingers and shot forwards. The atmosphere started burning slowly, and the temperature on the battle stage increased drastically. The Godly Weapon Master waved his hand, and an illusion surrounded the battle stage.

Kong Ming was chanting mantras in a magnificent Brahma voice. Gigantic words appeared in the air. A countless number of ancient Buddhas appeared everywhere and raised their hands.

"Die!" said Qiong Xie icily. A countless number of fire hands moved towards the ancient Buddhas' hands. It felt like their energies could destroy everything in their way. At the same time, he also charged at Kong Ming. He raised his finger, trying to punish his enemy.

"Is he going to destroy the Buddhas?" wondered the crowd.

A countless number of fire hands surrounded the Buddhas, everything was burning around them. At the same time, fire

tentacles coiled around Kong Ming.

However, Kong Ming looked unconcerned. He continued chanting, his voice resonating everywhere. A gigantic Buddha appeared on and around Kong Ming's body, bearing four faces. He chanted mantras, and the soundwaves moved in all directions, oppressing the fire energies and preventing them from moving closer. At the same time, Qiong Xie also heard the mantras, which shook his brain violently, illusory Buddhas appearing in his mind.

Qiong Xie looked nervous. A flame appeared in his mind, his skull flared with light, preventing the mantra soundwaves from influencing him.

At the same time, in the outside world, he condensed an incredible amount of fire in his hands. The fire grew more and more intense. Buddhas imprints approached him, and he destroyed them.

“What’s that?” the crowd frowned. That flame was incredible!

“You will get destroyed by a pure fire Celestial Dao. You’re lucky, you should feel honored!” shouted Qiong Xie at Kong Ming. Then he flashed forwards, space undulating around him. He raised his finger again, dazzlingly bright. The shining Buddhas looked less bright next to such a fire.

The fire and the Buddhist energies collided, but that flame seemed indestructible.

“The flame can’t be stopped. It can destroy anything!” swore the crowd. The Fortune Shrine’s cultivators were shocked and nervous. Was Kong Ming going to be killed?

The pure fire Celestial Dao got closer and closer to Kong Ming. Kong Ming slowly raised his head. Suddenly, Qiong Xie looked scared, he felt terrified deep inside, and as his soul shook, his flame flickered.

“Ah!...” Qiong Xie shrieked. His flame suddenly dispersed. A

gigantic Buddha's hand descended from the sky. Thunder rolled, and Qiong Xie's body instantly turned into ashes.

"Impossible!" The Fire Shrine's strong cultivators were astonished. How was this possible? How could Qiong Xie lose?

The Fortune Shrine's cultivators were astounded. The Fortune Shrine's Leader's eyes twinkled. As expected, what he had seen back in the days in the Destiny Wheel was right!

"I dedicate this battle to the Fortune Shrine," said Kong Ming slowly.

The Fortune Shrine's Leader nodded and said calmly, "Kong Ming, you can stay or leave the Shrine, as you wish. Listen to your heart. The Fortune Shrine will never force you to do anything."

Kong Ming turned around and bowed before the Fortune Shrine's Leader, "Thank you very much, Leader. I will never be an enemy of the Fortune Shrine."

Kong Ming's figure flickered and he left naturally, happy, relaxed, and light-hearted. Before leaving, he glanced at Lin Feng.

The Fortune Shrine's Leader sighed, Kong Ming had a pure heart.

Lin Feng glanced at Kong Ming. He understood something from Kong Ming's eyes, he understood who Kong Ming was.

"Each step of the Buddhist Mountain's flight of stairs represents a disaster, a calamity. One of them is his story. A demon appeared, he became completely disillusioned. He's both a Buddhist and a demon cultivator. That's how he achieved supreme enlightenment. He's neither a demon nor a Buddhist," murmured Lin Feng. Buddhist cultivators were also demon cultivators.

Kong Ming, the Holy City Buddhist Mountain's Leader!

Chapter 2467: Doomed?

The Godly Weapon Master smiled and said, “The Fortune Shrine won the first battle. Empty Space Shrine’s Leader, send your second cultivator.”

“Di Xu, you go,” said the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader. He pulled a long face. If Qiong Xie had won that battle, he would have been much more relaxed. However, he had lost, so the others had to make great efforts. He was very nervous.

Initially, he was convinced they’d win the first battle, so he had set high hopes on it.

“Chu Chun Qiu,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader. Chu Chun Qiu slowly walked over to the battle stage and stepped on it. Saint Di Xu released his Qi. He didn’t say anything, he immediately raising his hand, which looked illusory.

Chu Chun Qiu was surprised. There was a rumble of thunder, and the hand immediately smashed into his body. Everybody was astonished.

Chu Chun Qiu, who had finished third at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds back in the days, couldn’t withstand a single attack?

Saint Di Xu didn’t understand, either. However, he continued advancing towards Chu Chun Qiu. Chu Chun Qiu withdrew and said, “I have to resign myself, I surrender.”

An eerie silence filled the air. People couldn’t believe it. Everybody was astonished. Chu Chun Qiu had become a legendary genius with time, and he just surrendered?

“Asshole!” shouted an old man of the Fortune Shrine. He released a deadly Qi, he hadn’t expected such a thing. There were people like Kong Ming who were amazing, and people like Chu Chun Qiu who surrendered and made no effort.

“Ingrate!”

“Traitor!”

People insulted Chu Chun Qiu, but he ignored them.

Lin Feng looked at Chu Chun Qiu calmly. He was a bit surprised, he didn't know why Chu Chun Qiu had done that. Even if he was emotionless, the Fortune Shrine had helped him a lot, yet he hadn't even tried anything, he had instantly surrendered. By doing so, the Fortune Shrine might be destroyed.

Why did Chu Chun Qiu mean the Fortune Shrine harm?

Nobody could be sure. A strong cultivator of the Fortune Shrine shouted, “Kill that traitor!”

“No!” said the Fortune Shrine's Leader, shaking his head. If they killed Chu Chun Qiu, the Fortune Shrine would lose face. The Fortune Shrine couldn't kill disciples because of a defeat.

“No need to pay attention to a traitor. Next battle,” said the Fortune Shrine's Leader indifferently.

“The Empty Space Shrine's team won the second battle. Third battle, Empty Space Shrine's Leader, who will you send?” asked the Godly Weapon Master. Nothing could affect him. He looked young and unperturbed, unlike his older-seeming disciples.

“Bu Mie,” said the Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader. Saint Bu Mie flashed forwards. He looked conceited and arrogant. He looked at Zhou Rong Man and Hou Qing Lin, excited and ready to fight.

“I'm coming!” said Zhou Rong Man, jumping onto the battle stage and landing in front of Bu Mie. He also looked proud.

“Hmph!” Bu Mie grunted icily. Dazzling golden lights appeared around him, and buzzing sounds filled in the air. People's eardrums began to ache.

“What an incredible strength.” The crowd looked at Bu Mie. An invisible and intangible strength filled the air about him. He

looked like a king.

“Saint Bu Mie has an immortal Vajra King Body. He’s been a Saint for so many years, his powers are incredible. His whole body is tougher than a Saint’s Weapon. Zhou Rong Man disappeared for so many years, the last time he was seen was during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He will probably lose this time,” murmured the crowd.

Zhou Rong Man’s eyes glittered. He jumped forwards and raised his fist.

Bu Mie wasn’t afraid. He also raised his Vajra fist and threw it out, his fist collided with Zhou Rong Man’s fist with a bang. Both of them were blown backwards. They didn’t release a terrifying Qi, they just fought in a simple way.

“Zhou Rong Man’s physical body is terrifying. He can compete with Bu Mie!” hissed the crowd. The Fortune Shrine had selected him to fight, which meant he was extraordinarily strong.

Bang! Bu Mie shook. Golden lights appeared all around him, even emerging from his seven apertures. He shot forwards again with his explosive golden fist.

Zhou Rong Man howled furiously and threw his fist out as well. He didn’t use any Saint’s technique.

Kaboom! A terrifying explosion made people’s eardrums even sorer. The space undulated around the fighters. It felt as if they had been surrounded by millions of drums.

“His fist is even more powerful than a Saint’s Weapon!” judged someone. Their attacks looked simple, but they were incredibly powerful.

“Not bad!” said Bu Mie, feeling even more determined. More golden lights appeared around him. A sharp sound rang out. Many people had the impression they were going to faint. Bu Mie’s strength kept increasing.

Zhou Rong Man shouted furiously. Millions of strong arms appeared around him.

Millions of fists streaked across the sky in all directions, as if millions of people were beating drums at the same time. Pure strength curdled the air, and golden lights flashed in the sky as Bu Mie used a Saint's technique.

An ancient destructive Qi emerged from Zhou Rong Man's body as he roared. His millions of arms became even bigger, his figure disappearing behind all his arms.

"My...name...is...Zhou...Rong...Man!" shouted Zhou Rong Man as he threw all his arms forwards. He pressed ahead with an indomitable will and oppressed his opponent's golden lights!

"How strong! They're both incredibly strong!"

People's hearts were racing. If a Half-Saint like them had been in the middle, they would have exploded instantly. They could even compete with some weaker low-level Saints.

The millions of arms surrounded both fighters. Strident clashing sounds rang out ceaselessly.

"Die, die, die!" shouted Bu Mie. Golden lights flashed. Zhou Rong Man roared back.

The battle was crazy. Their fists kept colliding, mesmerizing the crowd.

After a very long time, the battle became less fierce. Lights dispersed. An incredible scene appeared in front of the watchers.

Bu Mie's lower body had exploded. In front of him was a gigantic godly insect. It looked as powerful as a godly dragon, but the sad thing was that the insect had been crushed and was bathed in blood. It looked miserable.

"You lost," said Bu Mie to Zhou Rong Man. Even though he had lost his lower body, he still looked cold and indifferent.

“Argh!” the godly insect roared furiously and fell down from the sky, then turned into Zhou Rong Man again.

A light surrounded Zhou Rong Man’s body. The Diviner walked up to him, grabbed him and went back. At the same time, a strong cultivator of the Dazzling Gold Shrine took Bu Mie and brought him away.

The Fortune Shrine had lost, though.

“Two more battles. If the Fortune Shrine loses the next battle, it’ll be over for them,” whispered the crowd, watching Lin Feng, Hou Qing Lin, Saint Tian Xin Mo, and the mysterious Saint.

If Lin Feng fights against Saint Tian Xin Mo, he’s definitely going to lose. The Fortune Shrine is doomed. They can’t win anymore. It can’t be changed!, thought the crowd. The history of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was going to change. Lin Feng couldn’t win, and Hou Qing Lin probably couldn’t win against that mysterious cultivator, either.

“It’s all because of Chu Chun Qiu, that traitor! Things would have been different if he hadn’t betrayed the Fortune Shrine!” sighed a member of the Fortune Shrine. They had lost two of the three battles. How could they hope to win against Saint Tian Xin Mo and the mysterious cultivator? Their chances to win were very low.

“Let’s continue,” said the Godly Weapon Master calmly. The mysterious cultivator walked out, smiling coldly. He was definitely going to win. Would he let Hou Qing Lin win? Was that even possible?

Chapter 2468: Life At Stake

The Fortune Shrine's members were extremely nervous. If Hou Qing Lin lost, it would be the last battle, and useless to continue. It would also change the fate of the Fortune Shrine.

The Fortune Shrine's Leader held his Scepter of Destiny, and closed his eyes. A pale light appeared around him. If they lost, would they abandon Lin Feng?

Abandoning Lin Feng would mean that they couldn't protect their people anymore. Nobody would ever support the Fortune Shrine again. If they didn't abandon Lin Feng, they would be destroyed, and probably not just by the six Shrines. They had no choice but to win. Maybe some people would help, though? The Godly Weapon Master, the Dragon Clan...?

"Leader, if they win, we're doomed." murmured the Diviner, who was standing next to the Leader.

"Mara-Deva," the Leader of the Shrine said to the Diviner. The Diviner raised his head and looked at him. "With your intelligence, you shouldn't have been stuck at that cultivation level for so long, you're still a high-level. When will you fuse two sorts of special original strengths together to become a peerless Saint?"

The Diviner shook his head and smiled, "It's all destiny's work."

"How's your Great Destiny Technique? I've never seen you use it," asked the Shrine's Leader.

"I've studied it for so many years, but I can reach a high level," the Diviner smiled.

"I don't understand you," the Fortune Shrine's Leader smiled and shook his head. "I can't understand your destiny technique, like I can't understand Chu Chun Qiu. You've been a member of the Fortune Shrine for so long, and apart from a few High Priests, you've been at my side for the longest time. I hope you can become

a peerless Saint soon enough, and take the Scepter of Destiny.”

“Don’t talk about such demoralizing things. The Fortune Shrine shall exist forever,” the Diviner smiled.

“I hope I’m wrong. Let’s see if Hou Qing Lin’s battle will be the last one or not,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader. He turned his head and looked at the battle stage. The mysterious cultivator and Hou Qing Lin were facing one another.

“Hou Qing Lin controls reincarnation strength. The Reincarnation Priest is his teacher. He should..,” said the Diviner, and didn’t finish his sentence. “What kind of strength is that?”

“Extreme strength, the extreme strength of destruction.” The Fortune Shrine’s Leader was shocked. The mysterious cultivator controlled extreme strength. Six swords appeared behind Hou Qing Lin and moved in all directions. Reincarnation strength appeared all around him and absorbed everything in its way.

However, the mysterious cultivator raised his hands and imprints appeared, colliding against the reincarnation strength and destroying it.

“Die!” shouted Hou Qing Lin icily. The six swords streaked across the sky. The mysterious cultivator looked unruffled. He condensed imprints, which grew to great size, and moved forwards. His imprints contained Celestial Dao; the reincarnation strength didn’t have time to condense and was destroyed.

“Those imprints are terrifying. At the highest level, such attacks can grant cultivators godly powers,” t the crowd observed.

Hou Qing Lin was fearless. He jumped forwards and six fists moved with him. The earth and the sky seemed ready to collapse. A gigantic reincarnation hole appeared, ready to absorb his enemy inside.

The mysterious cultivator made some hand seals, and a destructive light appeared around him. Tt moved forwards and

destroyed the reincarnation strength, then it continued moving towards Hou Qing Lin.

Suddenly, Hou Qing Lin's eyes looked like the eyes of a dead person.

“Condense!” shouted the mysterious cultivator icily. His imprints turned into a dazzling curtain and shot towards Hou Qing Lin.

Hou Qing Lin shouted furiously, the space around him turned into a reincarnation vortex and he shot forwards. The mysterious cultivator's extremely destructive strength was about to collide with his reincarnation strength.

“Destruction Imprints!” shouted the mysterious cultivator. Imprints smashed into the reincarnation strength. The air whistled, the reincarnation strength couldn't compete with the extreme destruction strength either.

“Brother!” Lin Feng frowned. The mysterious cultivator's extreme strength had reached the peak of perfection. At the level of Half-Saints, he probably had no enemy. He could probably even kill low-level Saints, his fighting abilities were incredible. That kind of strength didn't seem to be original strength.

Hou Qing Lin was in a frenzy, he turned into a reincarnation vortex and moved towards his enemy.

“He's crazy!” the Reincarnation Priest frowned. “Hou Qing Lin can't win. We're going to lose.”

When the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine heard him, they were stupefied. Were they going to lose?

If he lost, Lin Feng wouldn't even have the opportunity to fight!

The mysterious cultivator and Hou Qing Lin collided again. His enemy's strength struck his chest and started corroding his body. He kept releasing reincarnation strength to expel the extreme strength. Hou Qing Lin raised his head, he looking even crazier.

“Brother, give up!” said Lin Feng. He didn’t want Hou Qing Lin to risk his life if they didn’t stand a chance.

Hou Qing Lin turned his head around and looked at Lin Feng. Grinning, he said, “I remember back in the days when you took the exam at Tiantai, and Tian’s cultivators bullied you. Back then, I went to the Tian Long Divine Castle and I slaughtered people on their territory. Nobody can bully Tiantai’s disciples!”

When Lin Feng saw that smile, he shook his head and said, “Brother, it has nothing to do with you.”

“No. I’m like a big brother to you, you’re my fellow disciple. How could I give up? You wouldn’t even have the opportunity to fight!” said Hou Qing Lin. He looked at the mysterious cultivator again. Reincarnation lights rose up in the air and moved forwards again. Even though Hou Qing Lin wasn’t stronger than Lin Feng anymore, like back in the days, he still wanted to protect his fellow disciples. He was ready to lose his life for Lin Feng.

“You want to die!” said the mysterious cultivator icily, and threw his hand at Hou Qing Lin while releasing extreme strength.

“Die!” He moved towards Hou Qing Lin, trying to kill him quickly.

The two cultivators’ attacks collided. Hou Qing Lin suddenly moved sideways, he had to fight against the mysterious cultivator directly. The mysterious cultivator was stupefied, and then pulled a long face. Hou Qing Lin was insane!

“Piss off!” Extreme strength imprints bombarded Hou Qing Lin’s body, but at the same time, reincarnation strength surrounded his body, the extreme destruction strength and the reincarnation strength turned into a beam of light which surrounded both cultivators. Everybody frowned. Was Hou Qing Lin crazy?

“Let’s see who’s going to die first!” Hou Qing Lin grinned manically. Reincarnation strength slowly surrounded his enemy,

but also he was bleeding and coughing up blood. His Qi became extremely weak.

The mysterious cultivator wanted to retreat, but Hou Qing Lin grabbed him and prevented him from fleeing.

“I don’t want to die with you, I surrender!” shouted that cultivator furiously.

Hou Qing Lin smiled and released him. The two moved away from one another. The leaders of the Ice and Snow Shrine, and the Fortune Shrine, both rose up in the air at the same time and grabbed their disciples.

“I’m alright,” said the mysterious cultivator, but his face was deathly pale. He stared at Hou Qing Lin and said, “Crazy! But you’re doomed anyway. You can’t do anything. You will definitely lose the last battle!”

Lin Feng released life strength around Hou Qing Lin. An endless amount of life strength flew throughout his body. The extreme destruction strength was terrifying. It was difficult to heal him.

“Dear friends of the Life Shrine, please help us,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader, taking Hou Qing Lin to the members of the Life Shrine.

“Alright,” said the Life Shrine’s Leader, personally taking Hou Qing Lin. Life lights surrounded Hou Qing Lin.

“Leave it to me. You go,” said the Life Shrine’s leader. The Life Shrine’s Leader was a woman. She smiled in a gentle way, looking really beautiful.

“Thank you very much,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader. He left with Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at Fortune Shrine’s Leader and said, “Thank you very much, Leader.”

“Hou Qing Lin is a disciple of the Fortune Shrine and a core

disciple. He fought for the Fortune Shrine, no need to thank me,” said the Shrine’s Leader smiling at Lin Feng. “If you can’t win the last battle, don’t do like him. Your life is as important as the Fortune Shrine’s fate.”

Chapter 2469: A Perfect Attack

Lin Feng looked at the Shrine's Leader's smile, it warmed his heart. Even though the Shrine's Leader didn't spend much time with Lin Feng and Hou Qing Lin, he cherished them.

Lin Feng and the leader went back to the group of cultivators from the Fortune Shrine. Everybody looked at Lin Feng. Hou Qing Lin had won the battle, so Lin Feng would have the opportunity to fight.

Lin Feng was the protagonist, it would have been sad if he hadn't been able to fight!

At that moment, the crowd was watching Lin Feng. Hou Qing Lin had risked his life to give Lin Feng the opportunity to fight. Would Lin Feng be able to defeat Saint Tian Xin Mo?

"Last battle," said the Godly Weapon Master indifferently. When he said that, an invisible and intangible strength swept across everyone. Saint Tian Xin Mo slowly walked forwards and landed on the battle stage. Lin Feng also came out.

Saint Tian Xin Mo glanced at Lin Feng indifferently. He looked calm and said, "Two years have passed. You think you can defeat me?"

Lin Feng glanced at Saint Tian Xin Mo, a high-level Saint who had been famous for a long time. His fighting abilities were incredible. It was said that he understood fusions of original strengths. Some people even said that his most powerful attacks had the power of some peerless Saints' attacks.

Lin Feng didn't reply. On a battle stage, talking was just a waste of time. All people were interested in was the result of the battles.

"Staying silent is useless as well. Today, the Fortune Shrine is going to disappear, it's going to be completely destroyed. That's the Fortune Shrine's destiny," said Saint Tian Xin Mo, raising his

head and looking at the members of the Fortune Shrine aggressively.

After that, a terrifying demon strength filled the air, sweeping away everything. Saint Tian Xin Mo slowly walked towards Lin Feng.

“Die!” Lin Feng heard. Then, he saw many demon kings rose up in the air. They were holding demon king spears and pointing them at Lin Feng. Their strength was explosive.

“That’s...” Lin Feng frowned. It was an illusion, but it looked so real. He actually felt afraid.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and opened them again. He saw Saint Tian Xin Mo who was coming towards him. At the same time, the demons around him looked at him and became stronger, they didn’t look fake anymore.

Lin Feng was in pain. What a terrifying thing to go through. Everything was in his heart, physically and mentally. He saw many people. He felt extremely sad, that was even more painful than physical pain. He could see his whole life playing before him.

“A Mara-robber of the mind!” Lin Feng tried to remain determined, to be like Kong Ming. Saint Tian Xin Mo was using all sorts of attacks to defeat Lin Feng as quickly as possible.

“Die!” said Saint Tian Xin Mo. He wanted to punish Lin Feng, Lin Feng’s heart hurt and he was covered with cold sweat.

“How strong, Lin Feng can’t compete with him!” sighed the crowd. The sky turned dark, and demon energies rolled in waves. Lin Feng looked so fragile before those energies.

Of course, all of this happened in a few seconds only. Saint Tian Xin Mo moved as quickly as he could.

Lin Feng looked at him, forcing himself to forget the pain and the attack which was moving towards him and emitting whistling sounds. He solely focused on his enemy.

Suddenly, dream and time lights surrounded Lin Feng.

Time. Time lights rotated around Lin Feng. It moved eight times faster than normal lights. That kind of time light wasn't like slow and fast strengths, the time lights around him accelerated around him which meant that eight seconds in the space just around Lin Feng were like one second outside. It meant that he could do eight hundred percent more things in the space around him than in the outside world.

Ling Tian released sword Qi, the pulsations of the earth around him also accelerated.

At that moment, Saint Tian Xin Mo was getting closer and closer. Lin Feng could sense his terrifying strength. His heart was beating quickly. It wasn't pleasant at all.

I can't give him any chance, thought Lin Feng staring at his enemy. Saint Tian Xin Mo's death strength oppressed Lin Feng, and his heart pounded even more furiously.

"Slow!" Lights surrounded Saint Tian Xin Mo and slowed him down. He continued moving forwards, he didn't sense anything different. However, people in the outside world realized that Saint Tian Xin Mo had suddenly slowed down because at that moment, when one second passed in the space around him, eight seconds passed in the outside world.

But because Saint Tian Xin Mo was already incredibly fast, he was still extremely fast. Blood splashed out of Lin Feng's mouth. At the same time, the demon illusion attack continued intensifying around Lin Feng.

"What's going on?" Saint Tian Xin Mo sensed something. However, at that moment, he realized that Lin Feng was moving towards him.

"Die!" shouted Saint Tian Xin Mo furiously. An incredibly aggressive strength bombarded Lin Feng and made it explode.

However, as his body exploded, it also became extremely soft and liquid, like water. It fell to the ground, condensed, and at the same time, his hand, now containing sword Qi, drove towards Saint Tian Xin Mo's head.

“Go in!” shouted Saint Tian Xin Mo. His illusion strength intertwined. However, Lin Feng closed his eyes and his sword strength continued moving forwards.

A sharp and clear sound spread in the air. Sword Celestial Dao pierced through Saint Tian Xin Mo's head. His death strength surrounded Lin Feng and bombarded him heavily. Lin Feng coughed up more blood.

Everybody was astonished because the sword strength around him disappeared but there was still a big hole in Saint Tian Xin Mo's head. He slowly turned his head to Lin Feng and looked at him.

He didn't understand. How had Lin Feng done that? Saint Tian Xin Mo understood that he had suddenly moved slower, but it didn't seem real, it was like an illusion, but different at the same time. He didn't understand, he was wondering if it was just an incredibly high-level slow strength.

However, he also thought that he couldn't possibly have moved slower, because it didn't feel like slow strength. However, who could sense time lights? It was just that time around him had changed and if he couldn't understand time strength, then he couldn't change anything, either.

“He's still not dying?” Finally, Saint Tian Xin Mo's head exploded, and his body slowly fell down.

“Saint Tian Xin Mo, dead.”

The crowd couldn't believe their eyes. The whole battle had lasted for only a few seconds. They had seen Saint Tian Xin Mo release strength, and suddenly sword strength had made his head

explode. Most people hadn't seen anything clearly. Nobody really understood what had just happened. Lin Feng's attack was just perfect. Nobody understood why Saint Tian Xin Mo hadn't been able to dodge the attack.

Many people didn't understand how Lin Feng had done that, but it wasn't important anyway. Lin Feng had killed Saint Tian Xin Mo, that was important, it meant that Lin Feng and the Fortune Shrine had won.

An eerie silence filled the air. The six Shrines were just stunned. Nobody had anticipated that. Nobody had thought the fight would end so quickly, either.

Even the members of the Fortune Shrine couldn't believe their eyes.

Hou Qing Lin had already recovered. He looked at Lin Feng and smiled proudly. He was even happier than if he had won himself. Lin Feng was his fellow disciple, a member of Tiantai and incredibly strong. Hou Qing Lin had risked his life to protect Lin Feng, and it had been worth it. Lin Feng's attack had been perfect!

Chapter 2470: One Destructive Attack

Lin Feng had won that battle in a beautiful way, but the atmosphere didn't become less oppressive. On the contrary, it became even tenser.

The members of the six Shrines who had joined hands to kill Lin Feng were furious. Many people were staring at the members of the Fortune Shrine, who looked nervous. Were the six Shrines going to leave now?

"This battle is over," said the Godly Weapon Master calmly breaking the silence. He smiled at the crowd and said, "The Fortune Shrine won, three to two."

"Oh, really?" thought many people. Why was the Godly Weapon Master stating the obvious? Everybody knew the result and everybody knew the Fortune Shrine had won...

"Lin Feng became much stronger in only two years. We won't try and kill Lin Feng for the time being," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader at that moment. Everybody frowned. Finally, what was supposed to happen was happening, the Empty Space Shrine had to change their opinion.

"However, the Empty Space Shrine and the Fortune Shrine have now been enemies for so many years and the conflict should be solved too," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader. He had lost. They weren't going to try and kill Lin Feng anymore for the time being, but they were six Shrines in Fortune City, and they were furious because of the loss.

"Same here, the Fortune Shrine killed so many strong cultivators of our Shrine, the Fire Shrine. Now, we have to solve the issue," said the Fire Shrine's Leader indifferently. They didn't intend to let the Fortune Shrine off.

"The agreement was a joke. If you want to destroy our Shrine,

why didn't you just attack straightforwardly? Or do you just want to waste time? Do you need people to play with you?" said the Fortune Shrine's Leader calmly.

"The agreement was about Lin Feng. Since you won, we won't try to kill Lin Feng for now, but the tensions between our Shrines and your Shrine is another thing," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader. "I apologize to everybody for having disturbed you and making you come. If you want to see how we intend to solve the conflict with the Fortune Shrine, you can stay here; otherwise, you can leave," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader.

He didn't want people to disturb them, they wanted to deal with the Fortune Shrine without being disturbed.

"You lost and you continue talking bullshit. I understand now," said someone. Who dared talk that way? Everybody turned around. It was the leader of the Dragon Clan, an incredible cultivator.

"You must think we're ridiculous," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader indifferently. He released a terrifying Qi. The strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine frowned.

"Oh no!" The Fortune Shrine's Leader was startled. He turned around and suddenly saw golden lights streak across the sky. They were so dazzling he could barely open his eyes.

"The Fortune Shrine!" People raised their heads and saw a hole appear in the vault of heaven above the Fortune Shrine. The faces of the members of the Fortune Shrine turned deathly pale.

"Sky Destroying Sword!" People's hearts were pounding. The golden lights silently crashed onto buildings. People could barely open their eyes. Most of them closed them.

"The Fortune Shrine is doomed!" swore many people. The six Shrines had already planned an attack. Initially, no matter whether they won or lost the battles, they intended to destroy the

Fortune Shrine from the beginning.

“Leader!” many strong cultivators from the Fortune Shrine shouted at the same time. So many of their friends and family members had died a second before under the attack.

“Dazzling Gold Shrine!” Many people understood, it was the Sky Destroying Sword, the precious item of the Dazzling Gold Shrine, like the Celestial Sealing Map.

“Shrines joining hands is a bit exaggerated,” said the Godly Weapon Master icily.

Who would dare get involved though? The Sky Destroying Sword would destroy them as well!

“Dazzling Gold Shrine.” Lin Feng took a deep breath and pulled a long face. What if Meng Qing had been there? So many people’s relatives had been killed!

“Don’t move,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader when he saw that many of his strong cultivators wanted to fight. He closed his eyes and said, “The main purpose of the Fortune Shrine is now to destroy the six Shrines’ alliance, all of them.”

“Leader.” Lin Feng’s face turned red. He was shaking.

“Lin Feng, so many people just died, the Fortune Shrine will never get destroyed as long as you live,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader, smiling at Lin Feng. His smile was filled with pain.

“I will live and destroy the Shrines’ alliance,” said Lin Feng in a trembling voice.

“Even if the Fortune Shrine loses power and influence, things will come back to normal at some point,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader, tapping Lin Feng’s shoulder and smiling, “Since a Forbidden Body has been granted to the Fortune Shrine, we have to pay the price, that’s destiny. The Dazzling Gold Shrine and the other Shrines prepared their attack really well, and they have formed a deep alliance already. Be careful in the future, and don’t

go to their Shrines alone.”

“Very well,” Lin Feng nodded heavily. He knew that the Shrines’ alliance was powerful. They had prepared themselves for two years. Now, they wanted to wipe the Fortune Shrine off the map of the world and then kill him!

The other Shrines hadn’t anticipated that either. The six Shrines had formed an alliance, but the other Shrines hadn’t formed any alliance, was it time? Otherwise, after the destruction of the Fortune Shrine, wouldn’t they get destroyed as well?

“You went too far,” said the Earth Shrine’s Leader after having remained silent for a few seconds. Finally, he couldn’t stand it anymore.

“We just wanted to punish the Fortune Shrine. We didn’t go against the agreement. Back now,” smiled the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader. Then, he stood up and rose up in the air, glancing at the Fortune Shrine’s Leader in a provocative way.

“Let’s go.” The members of the six Shrines all left smiling. How long would the Fortune Shrine survive?

After they left, the Fortune Shrine’s Leader said calmly, “I want to invite you people, does anyone agree?”

“I’ll stay.” Earth Shrine the Shrine’s Leader.

“I’ll stay here, too,” said the leader of the Celestial Sound Shrine. The crowd was shaking. Maybe that that attack had been beneficial in the end, maybe it was an opportunity for the Fortune Shrine to form an alliance.

“Count us in,” said the strong cultivators of the World Clan up in the sky. The leader of the group was an old man. He frowned when he saw Lin Feng.

“The World Clan wants to form an alliance with the Fortune Shrine and destroy the Fire Shrine,” said extremely old man. All those strong cultivators were Saints.

“Welcome everybody,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader.

Then that old man smiled and said, “We’ll stay in the Fortune Shrine temporarily.”

“No problem,” the Fortune Shrine’s Leader agreed calmly.

Chapter 2471: Mission

Finally, many Shrines left, and only the Earth Shrine and the Celestial Sound Shrine stayed behind. Apart from them, the World Clan, and Ordinary and Sa Leng the supreme cultivators also stayed. Lin Feng was astonished when the Godly Weapon Master and his disciples also stayed.

On the side of the Supreme Animal World, the leader of the Dragon Clan and the king of the Great Roc clan also stayed.

“Everybody, let’s go,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader calmly. They moved towards the wrecked buildings of the Fortune Shrine. The Sky Destroying Sword had destroyed many buildings everywhere, as well as many cultivators.

The Fortune Shrine’s strong cultivators looked for their relatives in the debris. They all looked extremely sad.

However, the Fortune Shrine’s Leader still looked composed. He said to the crowd, “It’s a disaster for the Fortune Shrine, I don’t know how you feel.”

“We need to get rid of the six Shrines’ alliance and progress together,” said the Leader of the Earth Shrine. Their enemies didn’t care whether the Fortune Shrine would try to take their revenge or not.

“I think the Earth Shrine and the Celestial Sound Shrine should become our allies, otherwise, the enemies will destroy you after having destroyed the Fortune Shrine,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader. The others nodded, they thought the same.

“King Dragon, thank you very much for today, but why did you decide to stay here?” the Fortune Shrine’s Leader asked the Dragon Clan’s Leader. The Shrines’ chaotic situation didn’t pose a threat to the Supreme Animal World, so the Dragon Clan probably didn’t want to form an alliance with them, right?

“Ao Cang Hai and Aomo from the Dragon Clan are close to Lin Feng. It is my duty to stay here,” replied the dragon king, smiling.

The Fortune Shrine’s Leader smiled and shook his head. “King Dragon, make yourself at home.”

“Haha, thank you, Leader,” the dragon king smiled.

“What about you, King Roc?” the Fortune Shrine’s Leader asked the roc king.

“Lin Feng, come here!” said the roc king, floating in the air and looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was surprised and asked, “Master Roc, how may I help you?”

Golden lights streaked across the sky, it was impossible to follow them with the eyes!

“Be careful!” shouted the Fortune Shrine’s Leader, raising his flaring scepter, At the same time Lin Feng moved backwards and time lights surrounded the roc king. Lin Feng had just sensed that the roc king harbored evil intentions, so he hadn’t gotten too close, he had just taken one step towards him and then he had withdrawn. The roc king’s speed was incredible.

“Celestial rocs are too fast.”

A beam of light appeared. The dragon king’s helmet twinkled.

“Stop!” shouted the dragon king. The beam of light instantly stopped. The roc king was constricted, but he flapped his magnificent wings in a blur. Rocks and stones from the ground rose up and flew around him so fast that they turned into meteors.

Someone appeared in front of Lin Feng, as if time had stopped. The roc was so fast, but he was still slowed down thanks to the time lights.

“Stop!” said the Godly Weapon Master icily. Lin Feng stopped releasing time lights, and a fist struck the figure in front of him.

The roc king was smashed away. Dazzling lights surrounded him, but his head was still bleeding golden blood. He was staring at Lin Feng icily, surprised that he hadn't managed to kill Lin Feng.

The air began to hum. The roc king's figure streaked away across the sky, and he disappeared.

Everybody took a deep breath. All this had happened in a few seconds, but it was still incredible and scary.

"Celestial rocs are too fast. If we hadn't cooperated, he would have killed Lin Feng," stated the dragon king.

The crowd looked angry and nervous. As the dragon king said, the roc king was extremely fast, killing people weaker than himself was extremely easy, but this time Lin Feng had help.

The others looked at Lin Feng and the figure in front of him. How strong! He also controlled time strength, it seemed? That person had managed to protect him, his punch had blown the roc away. He had suddenly appeared there.

"Master Ox, is that you?" asked Lin Feng. The figure nodded and disappeared. Lin Feng was stupefied. Even though Master Ox had told him he wouldn't help him in the outside world, he had intervened as Lin Feng was about to die.

Lin Feng has spiritual protectors since he's become a god's heir, thought the crowd.

"Master Dragon, Godly Weapon Master, thank you very much for your help," said Lin Feng to the two. The dragon king had used a precious item and the Godly Weapon Master also controlled time strength, he had fused his time strength together with Master Ox's time strength to make it even more powerful.

"King Dragon, you already knew the roc king harbored evil intentions, it seems," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader to the dragon king.

"Yes, I heard the Fire Shrine and the others had gone to the

Supreme Animal World and had contacted the Roc Clan,” said the dragon king calmly. Lin Feng had cold sweats. The six Shrines’ alliance’s plan was scary, sly, and evil.

“So all the leaders were ready to strike back,” said Lin Feng. He realized the Fortune Shrine’s Leader still had some allies to fight against the six Shrines’ alliance.

“If I had been alone, I wouldn’t have been able to ensure our safety,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader. “Lin Feng, your life is more precious than my life. We can only protect you once in a while. You have to rely on your own self in the future.”

“Indeed, I understand,” said Lin Feng. The roc king had almost killed him a moment before!

“What if I took Lin Feng away? Would you feel more relaxed?” asked the Godly Weapon Master suddenly. The crowd looked at him.

“Where do you want to take him?” asked Lin Feng.

“Lost Country,” said the Godly Weapon Master. Lin Feng shivered. One of the seven forbidden territories!

“You’re a famous and powerful cultivator. We trust you,” the Fortune Shrine’s Leader smiled. “Lin Feng, would you like to go with the Godly Weapon Master?”

“Go with him,” said the old ox to Lin Feng telepathically.

Lin Feng was surprised, but said to the Godly Weapon Master, “I will come with you, Master.”

“There’s no time to lose. Let’s go then,” said the Godly Weapon Master. Lin Feng nodded and looked at the Fortune Shrine’s Leader and the Diviner, “Leader, teacher, fellow disciples, take care.”

“Don’t worry! As long as you’re alive, the Fortune Shrine will always tower aloft,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader with a smile.

He presented his scepter to Lin Feng and said, "Take the scepter."

"No!" said Lin Feng, refusing. That was the Scepter of Destiny, the symbol of the Fortune Shrine's Leader! He couldn't take it, especially since many strong cultivators were watching the Fortune Shrine and waiting for an opportunity to totally annihilate them. Why did the Fortune Shrine's Leader want to give it to Lin Feng?

"I'm sure you'll have many Saint's Weapons if you stay with the Godly Weapon Master, but this Scepter is special, it can help you. It's the last vision I had from the stars of destiny," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader smiling gently. Lin Feng shivered, last vision?

"No, I refuse," said Lin Feng, refusing and shaking his head.

"If you don't take it, the Fortune Shrine is going to be destroyed forever," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader calmly. Lin Feng's heart started pounding.

"Take it, Lin Feng," said the dragon king. Lin Feng stiffened. Finally, he nodded and received the Scepter of Destiny.

"Let's go," said the Godly Weapon Master. A strong wind took Lin Feng and his three disciples high into the air. Lin Feng turned his head around and saw the Shrine's Leader smiling after him gently. Lin Feng had the impression his heart was being crushed. What did the Leader's last words mean? Were the Leader and the Diviner going to die? What had they seen in the stars of destiny? What were their predictions?

Lin Feng looked at the Scepter in his hand. What was his future mission?!

Chapter 2472: Sealed Imprint Mountain

The Lost Country was one of the seven forbidden territories of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. It was located in the northern part of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. According to legends, many terrifying entities were sealed inside.

Lin Feng followed the Godly Weapon Master and his three disciples. An ancient Qi filled the air. He saw many wrecked castles, and there was debris everywhere, but those ruins hadn't continued deteriorating, which meant those cities had been destroyed during a flourishing era.

"Master, are the seven forbidden territories all worlds which used to be flourishing?" asked Lin Feng. He was curious. He had already been to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, the Godly Grave, Ganges Time, and the Beasts' Grave. He hadn't been to the Island of Absolute Isolation or Horizon Web yet. He had the impression those places also used to be splendid and glorious back in the days.

"Kind of," said the Godly Weapon Master smiled. Suddenly, sharp black claws emerged from some debris and moved towards them.

The Godly Weapon Master shook his hands, a whirlwind appeared and the claws disappeared. However, a terrifying Qi floated in the air, something howled furiously. Lin Feng gazed into the distance and saw a head with black long hair. A face appeared, but it wasn't the face of a human being, it looked horrible and dreadful. The monster had just attacked them.

"It's been sealed." Lin Feng's eyes twinkled. The legends were true. Many terrifying creatures were sealed in the Lost Country.

"There is debris everywhere here, it's annoying, let's accelerate," said the Godly Weapon Master. Lin Feng and the others were surrounded by incredible lights. Lin Feng understood that kind of strength: time lights which made them move even faster!

They streaked across the sky. Many monsters appeared, but didn't have the opportunity to attack them. The Godly Weapon Master was quite confident, he stood at the top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He had nothing to fear, even in the forbidden territories.

They traveled for three days. Lin Feng sighed, the Godly Weapon Master was already so strong and he still needed so much time to cross the Lost Country. The Lost Country was truly gigantic. Lin Feng also realized that nothing could stop the Godly Weapon Master on the way. Three days later, they arrived above a desert, sand floating around. There was a gigantic bronze castle in front of them.

"We're here," said the Godly Weapon Master. He slowly landed in front of the bronze gate and said, "Old friend, we came to visit!"

The bronze gate slowly opened with the booms of powerful winches. A dazzling deployment spell appeared.

"Let's go," the Godly Weapon Master smiled. Lin Feng and the others walked into another place. The place was filled with a thick and rich Qi, with water all around. It looked like a fairyland.

Lin Feng and the others landed on the top of a mountain. There was a city built up around the mountain people entering and leaving. There was a beautiful, lofty mountain range in front of them too, it looked like a godly celestial mountain.

"Sealed Imprint Mountain," whispered Lin Feng.

The Godly Weapon Master smiled. "You know the Sealed Imprint Mountain?"

"Feng Mo's world," replied Lin Feng, nodding. Duan Feng had told him about Feng Mo, the Sealed Imprint Mountain, and the Lost Country.

"You seem to know a lot," said the Godly Weapon Master lightly.

“Go, let’s go.”

Lin Feng and the others followed after the Godly Weapon Master. Their hearts were beating really fast. Feng Mo was extremely famous, he had an incredible reputation. He was probably the founder of that small world. He was an ancient cultivator, he could seal demons, and had an unparalleled strength. The Godly Weapon Master was also an ancient cultivator. He had been famous for a very, very long time and had been considered as the best weapon maker for countless centuries, too.

The Godly Weapon Master and Feng Mo probably knew each other. Otherwise, from what Duan Feng had told Lin Feng, he wouldn’t have been able to go there, outsiders were not allowed inside. The Godly Weapon Master seemed to know the place quite well.

There were many strong cultivators at the top of the Sealed Imprint Mountain; great emperors were common, Saints were numerous. After a short time, two young Saints saw the Godly Weapon Master and smiled, “Greetings, Godly Weapon Master!”

“Hello, how is your teacher doing?” said the Godly Weapon Master smiling.

“He’s good. He’s just a bit bored. He often says his old friends don’t come see him anymore,” said one of the young men cheerfully. “Master, let’s go and see the teacher.”

“Alright,” agreed the Godly Weapon Master, following them. One of the young men asked him, “When did you recruit a new disciple?”

The Godly Weapon Master had three disciples, but at that moment, Lin Feng was there too so he thought Lin Feng was one of his disciples, too.

“He’s not my disciple,” the Godly Weapon Master smiled. The

young men were curious. The Godly Weapon Master had brought a stranger to the Sealed Imprint Mountain?

“Third fellow disciple, fifth fellow disciple!” When they arrived, a group of young people appeared. When they saw Lin Feng, they frowned.

“It’s you?” Di Shi looked at Lin Feng in a strange way.

“Little fellow disciple, do you know him?” asked the third fellow disciple.

“Yes. He cast greedy eyes on our teacher’s historical sites in Qi Tian Holy Town. He’s insolent. I would have never thought he’d dare come to the Sealed Imprint Mountain,” said Di Shi, releasing a terrifying Qi which surrounded Lin Feng. After Di Shi had left the historical sites and obtained the original strength entity, he had gone back and practiced cultivation really hard. He had become much stronger!

“Don’t be insolent!” shouted the third fellow disciple icily. “Greet the Godly Weapon Master now!”

Di Shi’s face stiffened. So that was the Godly Weapon Master his fellow disciples sometimes mentioned? Lin Feng looked so young, had he become the Godly Weapon Master’s disciple? How lucky!

“I’ve been here for only a short time, so I didn’t know it was you. Please forgive me,” said Di Shi politely. He bowed before the Godly Weapon Master and said, “If I had known he was your disciple, I wouldn’t have dared do something like that.”

“Oh?” the Godly Weapon Master smiled and said, “He’s not my disciple. There are tensions between you? You should resolve them. I’m not here to solve your problems.”

Di Shi’s eyes twinkled and he said to Lin Feng, “Since the Master says so, I better accept deferentially than to decline courteously.”

Di Shi hadn’t been a disciple there for a very long time. Now he might have an opportunity to show how strong he was, and Lin

Feng was his opportunity! He jumped forwards and released sealing strength. It descended from the sky and moved towards Lin Feng. At the same time, he also threw himself at Lin Feng, releasing more strength which moved towards Lin Feng.

“Time.” Lin Feng increased his own speed. Di Shi saw his own attack explode and his body was blown away with a clap of thunder. His strength disappeared, and his face instantly turned deathly pale.

Feng Mo’s two other disciples were stunned and said to Di Shi, “Fellow disciple, show your gratitude, he was merciful.”

Di Shi’s face stiffened. How had that guy become so strong?

“Di Shi, you’re not allowed to come to Sealed Imprint Mountain to practice cultivation for a hundred years,” said a voice. Di Shi pulled a long face, turning around and bowing before that person. “I understand, Teacher.”

“Go now,” said the teacher, waving him away. Di Shi didn’t insist, he bowed and said, “I’ll come back in a hundred years.” Then, he turned around and departed swiftly.

“Bro, Lin Feng!” Duan Feng appeared next to Feng Mo. He ran towards Lin Feng and smiled, his eyes twinkling. He hadn’t thought he would see Lin Feng again in Sealed Imprint Mountain!

“Duan Feng!” replied Lin Feng with a smile. He turned to Feng Mo and said, “Greetings, Master Feng Mo!”

“You’re from my world, no need to be polite,” said Feng Mo, nodding calmly. He looked at the Godly Weapon Master and smiled, “Buddy, when was the last time you came to see me?”

“A thousand years ago, maybe?” the Godly Weapon Master smiled.

“Did you come because you need help with something?” Feng Mo asked him.

“Haha, indeed! I need you to help me refine a weapon,” the Godly Weapon Master confirmed. He looked at Lin Feng and said, “Take out your sword, I’ll help you improve it.”

“Alright.” Lin Feng took out his God’s Sword and gave it to the Godly Weapon Master. He hadn’t thought the Godly Weapon Master would ask Feng Mo for help.

Chapter 2473: Three Lives?

Weapon Master Bing had made the God's Sword for Lin Feng. It was filled with a mysterious strength which allowed it to improve and adapt according to Lin Feng's strength. Lin Feng's intent was inside. Weapon Master Bing had told Lin Feng back then that he would help him make it more powerful. Lin Feng never thought that the Godly Weapon Master would ever help him.

"Why do you want to help me?" asked Lin Feng, handing over his God's Sword to the Godly Weapon Master. He was curious. The Master had brought him to Sealed Imprint Mountain, and he had even asked Feng Mo to help. Only a few people in the Continent of the Nine Clouds could ask Feng Mo for help. Lin Feng didn't understand.

"What do you think?" said the Godly Weapon Master smiling.

"The Shrine's Leader," said Lin Feng to the Godly Weapon Master. The Godly Weapon Master was such a prestigious cultivator, the Fortune Shrine's Leader was probably the only person he knew who could ask him to help Lin Feng, or even convince him to show up and act as a referee. Lin Feng never thought such things would happen.

"Maybe, but there are other reasons," the Godly Weapon Master agreed. "For example, Feng Mo has been waiting for you the whole time."

"Waiting for me?" Lin Feng was stunned. He didn't understand. Feng Mo was an incredible cultivator who had lived for a countless number of years. He had even sealed a whole world!

"Yes, you can ask him," the Godly Weapon Master said.

Lin Feng looked at Feng Mo. Feng Mo smiled and looked back at him, saying, "Let's go in."

"That boy is mysterious. He doesn't like it when other people

hear about his personal life. Let's go," the Godly Weapon Master told Lin Feng and the others.

They quickly arrived in front of a flight of stairs and climbed them, arriving in front of a celestial jade stage. There was a throne there, where Feng Mo usually practiced cultivation.

Lin Feng glanced around; they were at the top of a mountain with incredible Qi. Original strength kept rising to the skies. There were many prayer mats in two lines before the throne. It was probably a place where Feng Mo gave lectures to his disciples. Only Feng Mo and his disciples could come here.

"I've been waiting for you for a very long time, indeed." Feng Mo turned around and looked at Lin Feng. He smiled calmly. Lin Feng had the impression Feng Mo was an incredible entity who stood at the top of all living creatures, and at the same time, he also looked lonely, which was understandable because he was so strong.

"By the way, shouldn't you release my daughter?" Feng Mo asked. Lin Feng paused... Feng Mo's daughter?

"What's that supposed to mean, Master?" Lin Feng didn't understand.

"Empress Xi," said Feng Mo smiled. Lin Feng's heart twitched violently. Empress Xi? How was that possible?

Wasn't Empress Xi the Three Lives Emperor's daughter?

"Master, Empress Xi, the Three Lives..." Lin Feng looked at Feng Mo, but he didn't know what to say.

"He's the Three Lives, or in other words, the Three Lives Emperor is Feng Mo," said the Godly Weapon Master. Lin Feng was completely astonished. He tried to calm down but he couldn't.

He took a deep breath. The incredible Three Lives great emperor had bodies everywhere in the world. Apparently, he was also such

an incredible cultivator as Feng Mo.

“I had thought that in the past, back then, everybody thought that Empress Xi and the Nine Netherworlds Emperor’s graves had been sealed by the Demon-Sealer. However, there was the Three Lives’ gravestone as well, so I excluded the idea. Also the Demon-Sealer also sealed one of the Three Lives Emperor’s clones as if they were enemies, did you do that on purpose?” Lin Feng asked Feng Mo.

Feng Mo and the Godly Weapon Master burst into laughter.

“Lin Feng, you’re now so strong, but you’re still so naive. You think Feng Mo did everything himself in the small world? If he had done the seals himself, you think you could have broken them?” said the Godly Weapon Master with a grin. “Many things are just legends. Many things are not true, but people firmly believe they are, especially when it’s about things that happened thousands or even tens of thousands of years ago.”

“I’m so stupid,” said Lin Feng, smiling wryly. Indeed. Feng Mo was such a terrifying entity, he didn’t need to act himself in the small world. He didn’t go there personally!

“How many clones do you think the Three Lives Emperor has?” asked Feng Mo, smiling at Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked pensive. According to legends, the Three Lives Emperor was a Buddhist cultivator, his historical vestiges had appeared in Xue Yue and the Death Valley in the small world, and some had also appeared in the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan, and even in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“I have no idea,” said Lin Feng, shaking his head after having remained silent for a few seconds.

“Indeed. The “Three Lives Emperor” means absolutely nothing. It’s just a nickname I picked up randomly. When I was trying to become stronger a long time ago, I used that nickname so that all my clones could benefit from the same reputation. I used all of

them to practice cultivation. But I never stopped. Maybe I myself don't even know how many clones I have!" Feng Mo laughed in amusement.

Lin Feng sighed. Feng Mo didn't care much about worldly affairs, he had many descendants. He didn't care about them, he just wanted to fuse his bloodline together with many women's blood to become stronger as well, like many strong cultivators. As long as people considered all his clones as the Three Lives demonic emperor, then things were perfect!

Of course, Lin Feng trusted Feng Mo and hoped he'd reach the same level someday.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and a few seconds later, Empress Xi appeared.

Feng Mo smiled at Empress Xi and said, "Come here, my child."

Empress Xi stared at Feng Mo and didn't move, but a certain strength surrounded her and pulled her towards Feng Mo. Feng Mo caressed her head and smiled, "Having one's own lineage is not easy. Now you'll stay in the Sealed Imprint Mountain and practice cultivation here. When you become strong enough, I'll let you go."

"Lin Feng," Feng Mo said to Lin Feng. "Actually, we've known each other for a very long time. You also practiced the Three Lives Scriptures. If you haven't reached a high enough level, feel free to ask me."

"Thank you very much, Master," said Lin Feng. He really wanted to know many things. Feng Mo seemed not to care about the outside world and at the same time, he seemed to know a lot. Besides, how strong was Feng Mo?

"But, you said you had been waiting for me for a very long time, why?" asked Lin Feng.

Feng Mo remained silent for a few seconds and smiled, "Wait until you become strong enough."

“And then?” asked Lin Feng.

“Then you’ll get killed,” said the Godly Weapon Master before Feng Mo had time to talk. Lin Feng started trembling, they would wait for him to become strong enough and then they’d kill him?!

“Don’t think I’m joking,” said the Godly Weapon Master, smiling at Lin Feng as if he had been talking about something ordinary. “Many people are hiding in the darkness, they want to kill you too. Feng Mo isn’t the only one, and those people won’t give you time to become strong enough to kill you, such as the Shrines. Therefore, your Shrine’s leader made me bring you here to help you make a sword. Do you know what kind of sword we’re talking about here?”

Lin Feng shook his head. Of course he didn’t know!

“A sword which has the power to seal things. I’m the best weapon maker in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Feng Mo is the best sealer and the best seal breaker. We’ll join hands to make a sword for you.”

Lin Feng’s heart was pounding violently. “Is it because of the Celestial Sealing Map?”

“Indeed. The Fortune Shrine’s Leader is very thoughtful and attentive. He’s not worried about your strength, but he knew the Celestial Sealing Map is dangerous for you.”

The Shrine’s Leader is thoughtful, thought Lin Feng. He hadn’t thought the Shrine’s leader would organize so many things for him. The Celestial Sealing Map wasn’t an offensive weapon, but it was terrifyingly efficient at sealing spaces. An entire city had been sealed, so it could also be used to seal smaller spaces!

The Godly Weapon Master clapped Lin Feng’s shoulders and smiled, “Hurry up and become stronger. Many people are waiting for you to become stronger.”

“Thank you, Master.”

“No need to thank me. It’s something I’ve been responsible for since my previous life. You don’t need to know everything for now. When the right time comes, the Shrine’s leader will tell you everything. You’ll trust him more than me,” said the Godly Weapon Master.

Lin Feng sighed. At his cultivation level, there were still so many mysterious things. Only a few people knew about those things in the whole world. Lin Feng might believe him or not. That’s why the Godly Weapon Master said Lin Feng would probably trust the Shrine’s leader more.

“You’re so talkative. Let’s make the weapon. Lin Feng can have a rest,” Feng Mo said to the Godly Weapon Master.

The Godly Weapon Master nodded and agreed, “Let’s go, then.”

The two great Masters left. Lin Feng looked at Empress Xi and told her everything. Things happened naturally. This world was incredible.

“What do you intend to do?” Empress Xi asked him. They were chatting naturally.

“Practice cultivation,” said Lin Feng, looking at the sky. He needed to practice for a very long time to be able to compete with the strongest cultivators in the world! “What about you?”

“He said I have to stay here and become stronger. We’ll see what happens,” said Empress Xi. She didn’t look cold at all anymore, she looked friendly and devastatingly beautiful. “I underestimated you back in the days. Both my clones fell in love with you and became your wives,” said Empress Xi glancing at Lin Feng.

“Who knows? Maybe someday you’ll fall in love with me too,” said Lin Feng jokingly.

“Impossible,” said Empress Xi, smiling gently. “Brother Netherworlds will always be in my heart!”

Chapter 2474: Determination and Counteroffensive

Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Fire Shrine...

Buildings were bathing in flames. In one place, seven people were seated cross-legged and discussing something.

“Everybody, we failed again. Not only hasn’t Lin Feng died, but the Godly Weapon Master also took him away. The old man of the Fortune Shrine knew that if Lin Feng stayed, we would join hands to kill him,” said someone. Everybody looked at a cultivator in golden clothes; the roc king!

“This time, Brother Roc helped us and tried to take him by surprise, we were sure it would work.”

“Go and try yourself,” the roc king grunted icily.

“Brother Roc, you’re extremely fast. Nobody is faster than you in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. If you can’t kill him by surprise, who can? The Fortune Shrine can predict the future, and are very thoughtful. The problem is that so many peerless cultivators are protecting Lin Feng,” said the Fire Shrine’s Leader, defending the roc king.

“But Lin Feng left, it’s a disaster. The Celestial Sound Shrine and the Earth Shrine are really audacious. They decided to form an alliance with the Fortune Shrine in such circumstances. What do you think we should do?”

“The Celestial Sound Shrine and the Earth Shrine want to bring about their own destruction, so we’ll help them. I’m convinced that if we succeed, the Thunder Shrine and the Soul Shrine will not dare do anything against us ever again,” said the Ice and Snow Shrine’s Leader icily.

“Of course, we can’t offend them yet, otherwise they will directly join the Fortune Shrine’s alliance. We need to succeed and then

we'll talk to them. They will make the right decision if we succeed."

The leaders of the six Shrines smiled. They could already imagine themselves as the leaders of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

"Of course, I hope that nobody has doubts amongst us. Forming such an alliance was difficult. If anyone doesn't do their best, we'll be in a weak position and we won't be able to withstand a single attack," warned the Fire Shrine's Leader. Everybody nodded slowly, they understood that. The six Shrines' alliance was something rare, but it could also be destroyed easily. What would happen if anyone stabbed anyone else in the back?

"What should we do first?" asked the Empty Space Shrine's Leader.

"We need to make some more teleportation portals between our different Shrines, and keep our core disciples in the Shrines to protect us. When we have an opportunity, we can strike," said the Fire Shrine's Leader.

"Now is the right time, what do you think?" asked the Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader. Everybody looked at him.

"The Fortune Shrine's alliance is composed of the Fortune Shrine themselves, the Earth Shrine, the Celestial Sound Shrine, the World Clan, and Lin Feng's few friends. We are six Shrines and the roc king is with us. If we attack them at the same time, what will happen?" said the Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader. Everybody's eyes glittered.

"We could try to attack once by surprise," said the Fire Shrine's Leader, after having remaining silent for a few seconds. "The goal should be the Celestial Sound Shrine. Now, get ready to go back, convoke your peerless Saints, and protect your Shrines properly. At the same time, find three peerless Saints to attack. I think that, that way, we won't suffer any loss. What does everybody think?"

“Alright,” everybody nodded. Every Shrine had to send three peerless Saints, or it would be too difficult.

“Alright, go back, we can talk further using talismans.”

Everybody stood up and used the teleportation portal the Fire Shrine had made to leave for their own Shrines.

Very quickly, only two people were left. They smiled indifferently.

“How strong are you now?” asked the Fire Shrine’s Leader.

“Quite strong. This spell was difficult to learn, but I think I’ll master it soon,” said the Ice and Snow Shrine’s Leader. “What about you? You seem high-spirited and vigorous lately.”

“I’m alright too,” said the Fire Shrine’s Leader smiling. He stood up and said, “You can go back, too.”

“Alright, we’ll meet again in the Celestial Sound Shrine,” said the Ice and Snow Shrine’s Leader. He left using a teleportation portal as well. Things were progressing quickly on their side.

——

After what had happened in the Fortune Shrine, the Continent of the Nine Clouds calmed down again. However, the inhabitants of the Continent of the Nine Clouds had a bad premonition that it was the calm before the storm.

Someone in the Celestial Sound Shrine raised their head and looked at the sky. Then he slowly rose up into the air and floated up into the sky of the Celestial Sound Shrine.

He wasn’t the only one. Some more people appeared in the sky of the Celestial Sound Shrine and looked at the ground. People from the Celestial Sound Shrine were surprised, those cultivators were terrifyingly strong, they were from the six Shrines’ alliance. The news that the Celestial Sound Shrine and the Fortune Shrine had formed an alliance had quickly spread in the region, and these

people wanted to punish the Celestial Sound Shrine for it.

But at that moment, those people remained silent, as the Celestial Sound Shrine was nearly empty.

“We were quick, but they were even quicker,” said one of them. Golden lights illuminated the Celestial Sound Shrine.

“Many of their sites have been destroyed. They took their books and items away and gave up the Shrine.”

“How incredible.” The group of Saints was stupefied. Giving up a Shrine was symbolic in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Celestial Sound Shrine had done it, but if they came back someday, it’d mean they’d come back as winners. If they didn’t, then they wouldn’t be the Celestial Sound Shrine anymore.

—

At the same time, in the sky above some castles of the Dazzling Gold Shrine, dazzling golden lights flashed, and energies appeared indistinctly. Some people descended slowly from the sky.

The members of the Dazzling Gold Shrine raised their heads, stupefied. Someone howled furiously, “Activate the great deployment spell and the teleportation portal! Inform all the Shrines! Quickly!”

A terrifying sound spread out, and millions of lights filled the air. People dropped like flies, one after another. At the same time, destiny lights surrounded the whole Shrine; it was the Heavenly Laceration attack!

“Fast!” shouted someone desperately. Beams of lights dashed to the skies. Some people activated the teleportation portal. Many people appeared in the Dazzling Gold Shrine, and peerless Saints’ Qi swelled forth. At the same time, golden lights turned into light curtains and surrounded the whole Shrine.

“Explode!” shouted the Earth Shrine’s Leader explosively. A gigantic axe appeared, it looked like a god’s axe as it descended

from the sky in a peal of thunder. The Shrine shook violently, and many of the Dazzling Gold Shrine's buildings exploded. At the same time, a strong wind started blowing. In a very short time, many strong cultivators died.

"Why are you not attacking yet?" shouted someone explosively.

"They have better weapons!"

"Next time, we can't let the Leaders leave with the weapons!" What a tragedy, they had just suffered great losses!

The Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader who was at the Celestial Sound Shrine suddenly turned deathly pale when he learned about what had just happened. He rushed back. Initially, they wanted to attack the Celestial Sound Shrine by surprise, but without them, it was impossible to protect themselves against all their other enemies.

The Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader's heart twitched. He had proposed attacking the Celestial Sound Shrine by surprise, he couldn't blame anyone.

"Back! Everybody use the teleportation portal, let's go back to the Shrines!" shouted someone furiously after hearing the Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader. The others pulled long faces, "The Fortune Shrine and their allies used their best weapons to attack."

The others remained silent. The Fire Shrine's Leader said, "Since they gave up, you can also give up the Dazzling Gold Shrine. This time, we didn't anticipate well enough. If we want to destroy them completely, that's the price we have to pay. I wouldn't have thought the Fortune Shrine would be so good at scheming, though. They managed to make two Shrines give up their Shrines!"

"Yes, Brother Jin. When we created the alliance, we weren't worried, we didn't think they could make a counterattack, we didn't think they would find a way to get their revenge. We didn't act quickly enough, and we gave them an opportunity," said the

Ice and Snow Shrine's Leader. They had reached a point of no return.

Chapter 2375: New Structures

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Da Yu City had been attacked; the Fortune Shrine, the Earth Shrine, the Celestial Sound Shrine, and the World Clan had formed an alliance to resist the six Shrines' alliance. After what happened in Da Yu City, the world had become even more unstable, and the battles were even fiercer. The six Shrines' alliance didn't dare act too recklessly anymore.

Even in the six Shrines' alliance, it would still be a disaster for the Dazzling Gold Shrine because they would never be able to grow and catch up the five other Shrines. Of course, it also meant that if anything happened, they would have no power to decide, and they wouldn't be able to protect their interests anymore, either.

At the same time, in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the various influential groups also started gathering and becoming stronger. Drops of water gathered to become lakes and rivers. They didn't want to watch and do nothing in the chaotic world. They had to be careful, otherwise the Shrines might try to destroy them. The Shrines' leaders were extremely strong, and they had some peerless Saints.

Very quickly, the news spread that the Fortune Shrine, the Celestial Sound Shrine, and the Earth Shrine had given up their territories, they had dispersed in various places of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Even if the Fire Shrine and their allies did all they could, they could only find individuals dispersed all over the continent. The real battles would only happen at the level of peerless Saints.

So, all the other members could do was become peerless Saints, and then they'd be strong enough to participate in the battles.

People were amazed. The Fire Shrine and their alliance were stronger, but the Fortune Shrine and their allies still managed to give their enemies headaches. Attacking by surprise was now

impossible. They had learned from the mistakes of the Dazzling Gold Shrine.

Now, the war was going to last for a very long time.

However, what happened in that chaotic world wouldn't have any impact on Lin Feng. He had disappeared, and time passed. After many years, nobody mentioned Lin Feng's name anymore. He had already become like many ancient cultivators who were famous because they had shaken the Continent of the Nine Clouds back in the days. He had risen, and then he had disappeared. Gradually, people forgot about him.

In the Fortune Shrine, or more precisely, in the ruins of the Fortune Shrine, because there was nothing left there, a figure landed on a wrecked building. That cultivator sighed and left.

At the same time, in the lower world, in the Holy City, there was someone outside of Tiantai's territory, but Tiantai wasn't there anymore. That cultivator stayed there for a long time and then turned around and left.

Lin Feng had had Tiantai disappear hundreds of years ago to protect it. His enemies had already dared try to attack his family members, so he had to be very cautious. That's why he had made Tiantai vanish temporarily.

A gigantic vortex appeared in the sky of the Island of Absolute Isolation. The sky there was black, and the vortex absorbed everything. Next to the vortex was a figure. He was watching the vortex absorb everything and felt tiny.

That person's face was pitch-black, as if he were dead. However, some lights twinkled around his body, protecting him from the dark strength. After a while, that person disappeared into the

vortex.

After a long time, someone else arrived there. After a long time, that person was absorbed by the vortex. It was a never-ending cycle.

In Ganges Time, many figures similar to those on the Island of Absolute Isolation also appeared. Those figures appeared next to the original strength most of the time. There were also two figures seated and facing each other. They were all identical, and they released two different sorts of original strengths...

Planets rotated, time passed.

Five hundred years were a very long time for ordinary people. For weak cultivators, five hundred years was a lifetime. However, for people from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, five hundred years passed at in the blink of an eye.

Those five hundred years were special because there were many incredible cultivators. Some terrifying peerless Saints even appeared.

Of course, many people died too. The Shrines' war continued. During those five hundred years, someone incredible which hadn't happened for dozens of thousands of years happened.

Three hundred and sixty years before, the Fire Shrine and their allies had many fierce battles against the members of the Fortune Shrine's alliance. Many half Saints, low-level Saints, and high-level Saints of Fire Shrine's alliance were killed by the Fortune Shrine's alliance, every time they found one. Of course, they also lost many strong cultivators. The battles were tragic.

A peerless Saint of the Dazzling Gold Shrine and a peerless Saint of the Wind Shrine were killed quickly at the gate of a Shrine. The Dazzling Gold Shrine also killed a peerless Saint of the Celestial Sound Shrine. After that, the six Shrines' alliance wasn't strong

enough anymore. They needed a new ally, so they asked the Soul Shrine, but they refused.

When the Soul Shrine refused, the Celestial Sealing Map enveloped their territory. When the Celestial Sealing Map was lifted, the Soul Shrine had already disappeared.

The day after, a teleportation portal in the Thunder Shrine flashed many times and then the news that the Thunder Shrine had joined the Fire Shrine's alliance spread everywhere.

A Shrine had been destroyed after all.

But things didn't stop there.

The Soul Shrine had been destroyed and the Thunder Shrine had joined the Fire Shrine's alliance, which had become extremely strong. The Fire Shrine, Ice and Snow Shrine, Empty Space Shrine, Dazzling Gold Shrine, Thunder Shrine, Wind Shrine, and Demon Shrine had become the seven Shrines' alliance. They were the strongest influential group.

Apart from that, the Fortune Shrine, the Celestial Sound Shrine, the Earth Shrine, and the World Clan became the second influential group.

The Buddha Shrine and the Life Shrine didn't get involved in worldly affairs. The Hell Shrine wasn't in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Nobody knew whether the Light Shrine existed or not.

The Fire Shrine's alliance was getting ready to rise and dominate the world. For that reason, they wanted to oppress the influential groups of the world, but the problem was that the influential groups had formed alliances to resist the Shrines.

They had agreed on three battles. If the Fire Shrine's alliance won, the influential groups would join the Shrines' alliance; if the Fire Shrine's alliance lost, they would let those influential groups live in peace.

However, two independent cultivators appeared on the side of the influential groups, and they won the battles.

The Shrines' alliance wasn't happy. They want to keep the two cultivators and make them join the Shrines. In the end, eight peerless Saints took measures and didn't manage to trap those two cultivators, and the worst thing was that they even managed to kill a peerless Saint from the Shrines' alliance.

After that, the Fire Shrine gave up.

That battle amazed the whole Continent of the Nine Clouds, their names reverberated everywhere.

One of them was a complete stranger who had suddenly appeared. He had been practicing cultivation in secret for many years. His name was Zi Zhu, the supreme cultivator.

The other one used to be extremely famous back in the days: Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon!

Of course, those things had happened a long time before, and people still took delight in talking about them, just like people enjoyed talking about Lin Feng's adventures once in a while.

——

In a restaurant in Fortune City, some people were talking about those two people.

Even though the Fortune Shrine had been destroyed, Fortune City still existed. The Fire Shrine was cruel, but they had no interest in destroying ordinary citizens. Many of those people used to be extremely weak ordinary disciples of the Fortune Shrine, or family members of those disciples. They weren't important at all. The Saints didn't need to do such things, it would only bring them trouble.

But now, Fortune City wasn't in a great situation, and there were people from everywhere there, unlike in the past when everyone was related to the Fortune Shrine.

“What does the Fire Shrine’s Leader want to do this time?” asked someone.

“Do we need to talk about it? There are more and more independent cultivators who join influential groups and know they can threaten the Shrines. One or two Shrines wouldn’t be as strong as them.”

“Indeed, but Zi Zhu and Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon’s meeting won’t bring anything this time.”

“Not necessarily! After all, the Shrines didn’t use their full strength last time. This time, things are different. Zi Zhu the supreme cultivator has already started gathering people and independent cultivators. I guess he wants to create an alliance which will be able to compete with the Shrines’ alliance!”

A young man drinking alcohol alone in the restaurant heard those people. He raised his glass and took a sip, smiling strangely.

Chapter 2476:

Tian Xue City was the city where the independent cultivators' alliance gathered.

The city was very lively, with many cultivators. They had all gathered in one place, as the meeting was very important to them.

Up in the sky, a young man was flying slowly. He was wearing simple, crude clothes, yet still looked elegant and free from vulgarity. He was a Saint.

“So much snow.” The young man stretched out his hand, and snowflakes fell onto his palm. A strange kind of strength appeared around him and the snowflakes stopped moving around him. The young man smiled and continued moving ahead slowly. So many years had passed, he didn't even know how old he was anymore.

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, five hundred years had passed, but in his own world, time passed differently. It moved much faster than in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Now, a few thousands of years had already passed in his world. Of course, his millions of clones, including some of his clones who were extremely strong, had gone to Ganges Time and had experienced different sorts of time strengths. Many of his clones were still in Ganges Time studying time.

“Feng Mo, I can understand you now,” thought the young man. In the past, he used to think that Feng Mo was as strong as the leaders of the Shrines, but now he thought differently. So many years had passed, Feng Mo had created a character called the Three Lives Emperor, but nobody knew who the Three Lives Emperor was, how many sorts of strengths he had studied... or that maybe many of his clones were even stronger than the Shrines' leaders.

After a short time, the young man arrived in a place with many people. Saint Emperors seemed extremely weak among all those Saints.

Even though the Shrines ruled over the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there were many extremely strong cultivators from different worlds here. The Shrines couldn't compete with such an army. All those strong cultivators together wielded explosive strength. Some of those people had incredible fighting abilities.

"Are the two of you sure you want to do things this way?" asked someone on the ground. Those people looked at three groups, the leader of one wearing cyan clothes. The leader of another group looked aggressive. Those two people were Zi Zhu, and Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon.

The last group was small in comparison, but their cultivators were stronger.

"I've told you, those who want to be part of the Chaotic Sky Alliance can join me," Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon said indifferently. He had formed the Chaotic Sky Alliance.

"The Black Bamboo Alliance is also willing to welcome new recruits. Maybe someday, the Black Bamboo Alliance will become the Black Bamboo Shrine," said Zi Zhu calmly. Many people shivered. That was precisely why some people had acknowledged Zi Zhu and Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon, because of their decisions. They had many cultivators join them already.

"Since you have such incredible dreams, we can also become a powerful and influential group," said a strong cultivator of the third group. All those peerless Saints had developed their groups. Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu had relied on their achievements to attract people.

"Who will be the leader on your side?" asked Zi Zhu, smiling indifferently. Those people looked surprised, as their group had the biggest number of peerless Saints, seven!

"I was stuck in the Godly Grave for tens of thousands of years, and I became a supreme cultivator. I should become the leader, what do you think?" said one of them.

The six other peerless Saints just looked at him, and one of them said, “Buddy, don’t forget that I’m also one of the supreme cultivators. Why would you be the leader?”

Lin Feng was standing in the sky, and when he heard them, he was surprised. Two supreme cultivators from the Godly Grave had gathered there, and were eager to participate. Indeed, if Ordinary and Sa Leng hadn’t bumped into him, they wouldn’t have gone to the Fortune Shrine, maybe they would have become members of these three influential groups. The Fire Shrine’s alliance had destroyed the Soul Shrine, which was meant to be a warning for everybody. They would kill anyone who was against them!

“Hmph! I could also become the leader,” said a peerless cultivator in black clothes, grunting icily. The seven supreme cultivators all wanted to become leaders.

“Since you all can’t agree, I should become the leader,” interjected someone at that moment. The crowd turned around and looked at someone. He was seated on a big throne, his arms were crossed in front of his chest, and he was grinning at them

Some people looked at him sharply. How audacious! Seven peerless Saints were arguing to become leaders, even Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu didn’t even get involved, but he did?

But many people frowned. His cultivation level was blurry, they couldn’t see how strong he was.

“What does everybody think?” asked that young man with a smile. He looked strange. Even though he looked young, nobody could rely on appearance to evaluate someone’s age. He might be extremely old.

“You’re quite audacious, Your Excellency. Who are you?” asked a peerless Saint detachedly.

“I’m Divine Wrath, the gods’ punishing hand,” said Lin Feng. He

didn't show up with his real body, of course. These days, nobody could know he was Lin Feng anymore, even peerless Saints.

“How arrogant!” That guy had chosen such an arrogant name: the gods' punishing hand, Divine Wrath!

“Why would you want to become our leader?” asked that person, staring at Lin Feng. The seven supreme cultivators all wanted to become the leader of their group, that's why they hadn't joined Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu's groups. Otherwise, the Chaotic Sky Alliance and the Black Bamboo Alliance would have been enough.

“If I become your leader, I'll change the name of the alliance to Divine Wrath Alliance and we'll destroy all the Shrines. The Divine Wrath Alliance will become the Divine Wrath Shrine. We'll punish all our enemies. What do you think?” said Lin Feng, standing up and smiling at the seven supreme cultivators, “Supreme cultivators, you wonder why I would be a good leader? Come and try me.”

“How arrogant! I'll give it a try, let's see if you're strong enough to become a leader!” said one of the peerless Saints, standing up. A terrifying Qi filled the air, and the space suddenly became rigid.

“I can't move anymore!” Many people were trembling when they realized they couldn't move anymore. How strong! How many kinds of original strengths had he fused together?

That's how peerless Saints became peerless, they understood original strengths at the maximum level and then they fused them together. Once original strengths fused together, it was almost impossible to tell there were several sorts of strengths in them.

At the same time, time strength modified the speed at which time passed, but it was impossible to sense, it was also impossible to know whether one was faster or slower, it was just a strange sensation.

The peerless Saint disappeared. A hand streaked across the sky, and the ground under them collapsed. The hand stuck Lin Feng and his body exploded.

“Peerless Saints are all incredibly strong.”

The crowd was all watching in astonishment. Lin Feng’s body had been crushed instantly. The crowd sighed. That guy was really reckless, he hadn’t even been able to withstand a single attack, and he had died instantly.

However, after a few seconds, the crowd was astonished again, because the pieces of his body condensed back together and Lin Feng reappeared. He smiled at the peerless Saint, standing there with his hands clasped behind his back.

The peerless Saint was astonished and stared at Lin Feng. He said, “What kind of original strengths did you make fuse together to create such a powerful attack?”

“Guess,” said Lin Feng smiling, “Your attack wasn’t enough, it seems. So let’s continue!”

Chapter 2477:

Actually, the peerless Saint who had fought against Lin Feng was incredibly strong, and could make the space around him freeze completely. People couldn't move when he used his attack. But it hadn't worked.

The peerless Saint didn't do anything to anyone else, or he could have killed everyone around.

But at that moment, he didn't understand. He had destroyed Lin Feng's body, but he hadn't managed to kill him which meant that Lin Feng had fused some original strengths together and created an incredible attack.

The peerless Saint was staring at Lin Feng. He walked towards Lin Feng, raising his hands and striking out. Hands filled the air as the space around them became ice-cold. Lin Feng looked like a statue, and didn't move. A terrifying destructive strength surrounded him, and his body broke apart again.

"And his soul didn't disperse?" The crowd was amazed. How could he survive against such terrifying attacks? Then Lin Feng's body started condensing again. He stood there with his hands clasped behind his back, still smiling. He looked at his opponent in a provocative way.

"What do you think?" asked Lin Feng with a grin.

"I'm curious to know what kinds of original strengths you fused together to create such a technique. But even if I can't kill you, you also need to defeat me to prove you're qualified to be a leader," said the peerless Saint. Crushing Lin Feng's body was useless, so he understood that he couldn't defeat Lin Feng.

"I can tell you one thing: a simple fusion of original strengths isn't enough to do this," said Lin Feng, "If you want to see my attack, I'll show you."

“I’ll see then,” said the peerless Saint, staring at Lin Feng warily.

“I’m going to use a Saint’s technique I created, it took me eight hundred years to create it. During those eight hundred years, I studied cursing strength for two hundred years, then I studied the movements of the Qi of the earth and the sky, then I fused the Qi of the earth and the sky and the cursing strength together. After that, I spent some years traveling. I continued studying cursing strength, and water too. I realized that cursing and water strength had something in common, then it took me another hundred years to fuse them together, and then in the end I used all that knowledge to create a Saint’s technique,” Lin Feng said slowly.

His opponent was stupefied. Cursing strength was extremely rare. Understanding it at the maximum level was extremely difficult. This cultivator had fused cursing and water strength together, in only eight hundred years! How incredible!

He was almost invincible, which meant he had probably fused several sorts of original strengths at the maximum level to have such a great defense. He was a really powerful peerless Saint.

The reason why there could be such big differences between high-level Saints themselves and peerless Saints themselves was original strength. Studying original strength was something extremely complex, and if someone understood several sorts of original strengths, they were stronger than ordinary others. If they understood many special ones, then they were a lot stronger, and their comprehension and the way they used them in spells also played a role.

Therefore, many peerless Saints who controlled rare original strengths had incredible fighting abilities. But even that way, it was impossible to know who was stronger just seeing two peerless Saints. Usually, those who controlled special types of original strengths were stronger. Zi Zhu and Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon, for example, were stronger than the others.

Some extremely strong cultivators fused three or four sorts of original strengths together, that was already incredible.

Lin Feng hadn't managed to do that yet. He had used the Three Lives Scriptures, and created many clones to study all sorts of things, but he hadn't managed to make three sorts of original strengths fuse together yet.

"Be careful," said Lin Feng. A terrifying Qi filled the air. Because Lin Feng warned his challenger, the crowd knew that that horrible sensation was due to the cursing strength.

"I feel so bad," said someone.

"If he attacked me, he could make me go insane instantly."

The crowd raised their heads and saw some dark lights. They looked like abyssal waters; the crowd frowned because it hurt their eyes.

"My water strength is also at the maximum level. Water can turn into steam. Water can turn to drops and then condense together. He really mastered all the states of water," whispered a high-level Saint on the ground.

The peerless Saint wasn't having a good time either. "Stop!" said that cultivator icily. The space became rigid.

"Cursing strength is invisible and intangible. You can't freeze it," said Lin Feng, smiling casually. The attack continued condensing. His challenger was suffering even more.

"This kind of strength won't kill you immediately. It just gets more and more powerful, You get cursed slowly, the curse slowly eats your luck, your soul, and then you die," Lin Feng smiled. "Actually, this attack is not perfect. I wish I could make a powerful Saint's attack which would allow me to kill peerless Saints instantly. Unfortunately, it's not that powerful. I'm not satisfied."

"You're really strong, but we can't let you become our leader. Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu aren't weaker than

you,” said the peerless Saint, staring at Lin Feng.

“So you still don’t understand how incredible this kind of strength is,” said Lin Feng patiently. A terrifying Qi penetrated into his body, black lights condensed and rolled out, then they flowed through his body. The peerless Saint stretched out his hand and noticed that his hand was rotting away. At the same time, his strength was also diminishing.

Lin Feng took a step forwards, the rigid space shattered as his hand turned into a vortex, strength condensing around his body. Each time he took a step, his strength increased in intensity.

“Eh?” The peerless Saint was stupefied. He continued attacking Lin Feng, crackling sounds spread in the air again. Lin Feng’s body turned into pieces and absorbed his strength, then condensed again and continued walking forwards slowly.

Lin Feng looked like a peerless aggressive god. The peerless Saint’s heart was pounding. The strength was still corroding his organs!

“I accept having you as a leader,” said the peerless Saint finally. The strength instantly disappeared. Lin Feng removed the strength from inside his body too, using life strength.

“How strong.” The peerless Saint sensed the incredible life strength and was startled. He couldn’t compete with this man. Could Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu compete with such a cultivator?

“What about you?” Lin Feng asked the other members of the third group.

“What is your stance regarding the Fire Shrine?” asked one of them to Lin Feng.

“Enemies,” said Lin Feng indifferently. “The Fire Shrine’s alliance only has two ultimate goals. The first one is to absorb you and make you join their alliance, the second one is to destroy you if

you don't submit. Therefore, you must have the same goals regarding them. There is no third option. If I become the leader, I'll do my best for things to happen smoothly."

"Since it's that way, I agree, we can become the Divine Wrath Alliance," said the others nodding at Lin Feng. Three groups of independent cultivators had just been formed.

"Divine Wrath Alliance, Black Bamboo Alliance, Chaotic Sky Alliance, we're all friends. If anyone is attacked by the Shrines' alliance, we have to help them. What do you think?" Lin Feng asked Zi Zhu and Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon with a friendly smile.

"Of course!" replied Zi Zhu with a smile.

"I agree!" said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon, glancing at Lin Feng.

It was the first time Lin Feng met him so to say. The first time in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell didn't count!

Chapter 2478:

Lin Feng knew that the Divine Wrath Alliance was the most unstable alliance.

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu's battle had shaken the Continent of the Nine Clouds many years before. It had already determined their path; when conditions are ripe, success is naturally achieved. But the Divine Wrath Alliance had just been formed. Lin Feng had suddenly appeared and had created it. He had forced them to accept him as a leader.

"Leader, actually, we gathered for a reason today. You should know about it," a peerless Saint said to Lin Feng.

"I know. The Fire Shrine wants to organize a meeting again in three days, and not far from Tian Xue City. The Wind City is one of the Shrines' dens," confirmed Lin Feng indifferently. He understood perfectly. That's why he had come.

"What do you intend to do, Leader?" asked that peerless Saint. Many people looked at Lin Feng. Since he had taken the reins and become the leader of the Divine Wrath Alliance, what did he intend to do?

"You must remember I told you my stance regarding the Shrines' alliance a moment ago, right?" Lin Feng asked that person.

"I remember," that person nodded.

"What they think about us is the same we think about them. We want to either absorb them or destroy them. The Shrines are at the top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds at the moment. Some Shrines have disappeared, so they can't let anyone else threaten them anymore. Therefore, no matter what, we don't care about principles. We need to change the meeting by all means. The meeting must take place in Tian Xue City!" said Lin Feng firmly. He sounded firm, and made the crowd shake.

They all considered their alliances weaker than the Shrines, but now Divine Wrath was making them feel even more confident.

“There’s a big difference between now and last time. Even though we should be happy because they think more highly of us now, we can’t forget how the Soul Shrine has been destroyed and wiped off the map of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” said Lin Feng. The crowd frowned. They knew that the Shrines thought highly of them in terms of strength... but Lin Feng was right. The Shrines’ alliance could do the same thing to them!

“So what should we do?” one of them asked Lin Feng.

“In three days, we’ll spread the news as quickly as possible. We’ll inform everybody in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. At the same time, if the Fire Shrine’s alliance doesn’t come in three days, we’ll cancel the meeting,” said Lin Feng. His eyes twinkled. Everybody frowned. Since the Fortune Shrine’s members were everywhere in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, they would probably know about that before everyone else, they would probably send strong cultivators to Tian Xue City.

That would make things difficult for the Fire Shrine. The best decision for them would be to not send all their strongest cultivators to Tian Xue City to oppress the alliances. Otherwise, the Fortune Shrine would be able to send people to the Shrine alliance’s Shrines to destroy them. Therefore, the Fire Shrine had to keep half of their strong cultivators somewhere as a protective measure. The three great alliances would be able to take measures, too.

“Let’s do that, then,” said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon calmly.

“It’s a good plan,” agreed Zi Zhu as well.

——

After coming up with a plan, the news quickly spread in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The inhabitants of the Continent of

the Nine Clouds quickly learned that three great alliances had been formed.

Three days passed quickly...

There were huge snowflakes in the sky of Tian Xue City. The snow on the ground was thick.

Many people appeared there, forming three groups. However, they didn't stay far away from each others.

In front of them, another group of people appeared, oppressing the atmosphere there. The leader of that group was the Empty Space Shrine's Leader.

"The Empty Space Shrine's Leader has the Celestial Sealing Map, he came to the meeting as the leader, it means everything," deduced the crowd. They were independent cultivators, independent cultivators would definitely lose against the Shrines' alliance in one on ones, even Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu, who were very strong couldn't compete with the Shrines' leaders. The Shrines' leaders were just terrifying, and they had terrifying Saint's weapons.

Apart from that, each Shrine had a few other terrifying Saint's Weapons which their peerless Saints controlled.

Apart from the Empty Space Shrine's Leader, another Shrine's leader appeared: the Thunder Shrine's Leader.

The Thunder Shrine's Leader had had no choice but to join the Shrines' alliance after the destruction of the Soul Shrine. The Fire Shrine's alliance didn't allow them to stand by and watch. They had to help and get involved, or they would be destroyed.

"Brother Lei, I've heard that one of our opponents is called Divine Wrath, have you ever heard of him?" the Empty Space Shrine's Leader asked the Thunder Shrine's Leader icily. He had heard about what had happened three days before and he wasn't happy. He already hated Divine Wrath, and knew he was arrogant.

“Only that he’s just too arrogant!” said the Thunder Shrine’s Leader, bathing in purple lightning. He looked dignified and majestic.

“Everybody, why did you want to meet?” asked Zi Zhu indifferently.

“The seven Shrines’ alliance is recruiting the most outstanding cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” said the Thunder Shrine’s Leader in a dignified and majestic way, glancing at the crowd.

“Do you know who we are?” said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon indifferently. That guy wanted to recruit their people?

“The Continent of the Nine Clouds is a state of chaos. Many people want to fish in troubled waters. However, the Shrines are powerful. Nobody can compete with us. The seven Shrines’ alliance can control the whole world, people who don’t respect us will die like the Soul Shrine. Most people have learned from the Soul Shrine’s past mistakes,” said the Thunder Shrine’s Leader. Many people suddenly felt some fear when they remembered that.

“Alright, if you came to tell us bullshit, you can leave,” said Lin Feng calmly.

The Thunder Shrine’s Leader looked at him, his eyes were filled with lightning as he said, “Don’t be wildly ambitious, don’t think those people will become your puppets. I don’t think those people next to you want to die. Do you think a futile group such as the Divine Wrath Alliance could compete with several Shrines? Do you think a group like the Divine Wrath Alliance could rule over the Continent of the Nine Clouds?”

“If you didn’t come to make things change in the world, why did you, the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader and the Thunder Shrine’s Leader, come here?” Lin Feng said calmly, “Joining the Shrines’ alliance? Ridiculous! You just want us to become cannon fodder so that the Fortune Shrine’s members kill us when they see us? I also

want to tell you something, it's the end of this meeting. If you want to fight, let's fight; if you want to talk shit, you can leave," said Lin Feng coldly.

"What an insolent little boy!" said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader icily. He raised his hand and the Celestial Sealing Map emerged from the palm of his hand and suddenly rose up in the air. Dazzling lights sealed the territory. Lin Feng heard a sound behind him. Some people were terrified. The Empty Space Shrine's Leader was using the Celestial Sealing Map already.

"Apologize for what you just said," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader coldly. At the same time, the Thunder Shrine's Leader took out a hammer. That hammer contained lightning, which surrounded his body.

"The Thunder Shrine's Leader immediately took out the precious item of the Thunder Shrine, the Godly Celestial Thunder Hammer. According to legends, one strike can destroy a whole world. It's a powerful weapon. The two Shrines' leaders came with their most precious weapons!" Faces stiffened, and the atmosphere became oppressive. The two leaders were threatening Lin Feng!

Would Lin Feng apologize, though?

Lights flashed, and a long spear appeared in Lin Feng's hand. It was extremely strange, as it was shorter than a long spear, and it contained sword Qi.

Lin Feng slowly rose up into the air. He stuck the tip of the spear in the snow, an incredible Qi emerged and the ground cracked open. A valley appeared under the spear.

Lin Feng looked at them calmly and said, "If you want to attack, that would be an honor and a pleasure!"

Chapter 2479:

The spear Lin Feng had taken out was naturally the God's Sword Feng Mo had made for him. The Godly Weapon Master had needed three hundred and eighty-one days to make that weapon. The God's Sword was much, much more powerful than before, and it contained illusion strength, so it could transform into a sword or a halberd. Lin Feng had already used the God's Sword in the past, so it was better not to take it out, that's why he had taken it out as a spear. The only difference was that it was much stronger than before!

The strong cultivators of the Divine Wrath Alliance looked at Lin Feng's back, their hearts were shaking. Divine Wrath wasn't scared in front of the Shrines' leaders. His Qi was incredible. As he had said, he was ready to punish his enemies!

The Thunder Shrine's Leader looked at Lin Feng and remained silent. Lightning dazzled and dashed to the skies. The hammer in his hand was shaking.

"Since you want to die, why do you need so many friends?" said the Thunder Shrine's Leader icily.

"You want to die, why do you need the whole Thunder Shrine to die with you?" replied Lin Feng calmly.

"So let's see how strong you are, and what makes you feel so confident to the extent that you call yourself Divine Wrath!" said the Thunder Shrine's Leader. Thunder rumbled as lightning snaked all around. It was like the sky was about to collapse. Many people in Tian Xue City raised their heads and looked at the sky. Nobody dared get close, and they withdrew hastily.

The Thunder Shrine's Leader walked forwards, Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu also came out. They had promised to help the other alliances if the Shrines attacked.

“The Shrines are proud and arrogant for no reason,” said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon. A peerless demon halberd appeared in his hand, similar to Lin Feng’s Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. It contained a terrifying amount of demon energy, and was even more aggressive than Lin Feng’s Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon had killed a great many people with it. Many people’s souls shook when they saw it.

Zi Zhu walked forwards and smiled, “Let’s exchange views on cultivation, I’ve always been curious to see how strong the Shrines were. How strong can they be after the war of the ancient days?”

The three people looked incredible, like real leaders. When the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader saw that, he also walked forwards. The crowd was awed, their hearts pounding. Those people weren’t playing!

The previous time, the Fire Shrine didn’t know about Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu, and they spent more time trying to find people from the Fortune Shrine’s alliance. They didn’t attach enough importance to Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu’s alliance. But now they were getting involved personally, which meant they attached importance to them, and they had even brought their most powerful weapons, the Celestial Sealing Map and the Godly Celestial Thunder Hammer, which meant they wanted to be certain to win. That way, they’d influence the whole situation of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

If they managed to kill Divine Wrath, Zi Zhu, and Saintly Emperor Xi, everything would be fine, especially since their alliances were not stable enough.

After winning, they’d recruit or kill the members of the three alliances, and the Fortune Shrine wouldn’t be able to do much about it.

“Let’s be fair. Make someone else come out to fight against us three,” said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon indifferently, while

releasing a peerless Qi from his demon halberd. People around found him scary at first glance.

“Two people are enough to kill you three,” said the Thunder Shrine’s Leader coldly. He seemed aggressive and domineering. They were both Shrines’ leaders, and they both had Saint’s weapons. How could they lose?

The Empty Space Shrine’s Leader and the Thunder Shrine’s Leader glanced at each other and nodded.

“Everybody, move back,” said the Thunder Shrine’s Leader indifferently.

“Divine Wrath Alliance, Chaotic Sky Alliance, Black Bamboo Alliance members, move back, all of you,” said Lin Feng as well. Everybody retreated. At the same time, they condensed strength and got ready to fight. Such battles were terrifying, and energies could spill over and kill people in the surroundings.

In the blink of an eye, they had all moved back. The great battle was on the verge of breaking out.

“Empty space, free!” shouted the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader. The atmosphere condensed and became frozen. Lin Feng, Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon, and Zi Zhu had the impression they couldn’t move anymore.

The Thunder Shrine’s Leader smiled icily, his eyes were filled with murder. The Godly Celestial Thunder Hammer bombarded the atmosphere.

“Time, freeze!” said Zi Zhu at that moment. Suddenly, it was like if time had stopped. Everything became extremely slow.

People were stunned. One strong cultivator could freeze space, another one could freeze time, both were incredible powers.

Zi Zhu could freeze time!

When space was frozen, at least it could be broken. But when

time was frozen, cultivators couldn't do anything unless their understanding of time strength was more advanced.

The Thunder Shrine's Leader moved extremely slowly, it was as if he were under water.

"Break!" shouted the Thunder Shrine's Leader explosively. Nine celestial lightnings condensed around him, he was surrounded by lightning, the earth and the sky shook violently. He raised a fist filled with lightning and made an overhand punch.

Absorbing strength emerged from Lin Feng's spear. It shone out as he moved freely. The spear destroyed the lightning bolts one after another, or more precisely, it absorbed them easily!

"How fast! He's faster than a peerless cultivator!" they gasped when they saw Lin Feng. At that moment, in Lin Feng's space, time passed a dozen times faster than in the outside world. When lightning bolts took one second to appear, Lin Feng had a dozen seconds to react, but other people couldn't sense anything, only Zi Zhu.

Demon dragons emerged from Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon's halberd and roared angrily. The soundwaves caused by their roars collided with the lightning bolts and destroyed them.

"Those supreme weapons are terrifying. The Godly Celestial Thunder Hammer is terrifying, each bolt contains a mysterious strength. Even peerless Saints could be killed if those thunderbolts reached them. However, the cultivators of the three great alliances are incredibly strong, they can destroy the lightning!" those watching sighed.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader disappeared. After a few milliseconds, he reappeared in front of Zi Zhu. The space around Zi Zhu froze.

"Seal!" shouted the Empty Space Shrine's Leader icily. Zi Zhu had the impression something was constricting his body. He could

barely move.

“Zi Zhu!” Lin Feng was nervous.

“Go and destroy that stupid thunder old man!” said Zi Zhu indifferently. The crowd was amused. Stupid thunder old man? When the Thunder Shrine’s Leader heard that, he looked furious. Lightning flashed around him.

At the same time, Zi Zhu made time around him stop. If his enemy wanted to freeze him, Zi Zhu wanted to make him stop.

“Break!” said the Empty Space Shrine, throwing out his fist. The Empty Space Shrine’s Leader was extremely slow, though. Even though he was very strong, he seemed much slower. It made the crowd shiver, knowing it meant that Zi Zhu was and his allies were terrifyingly strong.

“The Black Bamboo Alliance’s Leader almost made the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader stop moving. Maybe he’s using a technique with three original strengths. If his opponent was an ordinary peerless Saint and not a Shrine Leader, he might have killed him in the blink of an eye,” a peerless Saint mused.

Zi Zhu slowed the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader down, he was almost motionless. His attacks were much slower, too. He threw his fist out, and snowflakes scattered around them. The space around them was ice-cold.

At the same time, Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Lin Feng slowly walked forwards. They both had weapons. Their enemy was the Thunder Shrine’s Leader, who bore the Godly Celestial Thunder Hammer.

Chapter 2480:

The Thunder Shrine's Leader looked furious. Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Lin Feng were advancing towards him. Nine godly celestial lightnings dazzled around him.

“Even if you both attack me, it's useless.” Lightning with snake shapes appeared all around him and lashed out towards Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Lin Feng.

“Leader, I'll help you,” said a peerless Saint, running towards Lin Feng. That way, the Thunder Shrine's Leader would just fight against Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon.

Back in the days, Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu had both become famous, so people considered Zi Zhu and Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon extremely strong. Therefore, that peerless Saint decided to fight against Lin Feng and leave Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon to the Thunder Shrine's Leader.

Lin Feng looked at the peerless Saint calmly, and smiled evilly. He shook his spear, and lights flashed.

“Die!” Millions of thunderbolts crackled and roared. Lin Feng could sense the atmosphere shake violently around him. Earth strength surrounded him.

The earth strength exploded and lightning raged towards Lin Feng. At the same time, a heavy strength oppressed Lin Feng. He had the impression a mountain range had fallen onto him.

Earth original strength, thought Lin Feng. His enemy also understood earth original strength. Lin Feng continued walking forwards and time lights surrounded him. Light balls which looked like magnificent flowers kept emerging from Lin Feng's spear. The flowers destroyed the lightning.

The peerless Saint was surprised. Lin Feng was supposed to be stuck, but he looked so relaxed. Each of his spear attacks were as

fast as lightning.

Initially, it seemed like Lin Feng's attacks had reached their maximum speed, but with the time lights, they were even faster.

The Thunder Shrine's peerless Saint didn't change his mind because of Lin Feng's speed. He continued advancing as fast as he could. He threw out a fist which contained lightning energy. In front of him, five lightning bolts appeared.

"Die!" The five thunderbolts crashed towards Lin Feng. When they appeared in front of him, the crowd was convinced he was doomed.

"What a powerful attack." Lin Feng's spear flew away. The crowd didn't understand because the spear didn't move towards the five lightning bolts. Lin Feng let the five bolts penetrate into his body, thunder cracking loudly. Destructive lights surrounded Lin Feng, and a strong wind started blowing as the space became desolated.

"The Divine Wrath Alliance's Leader is dead?" The crowd frowned. However, at that moment, lights twinkled. Millions of tablets appeared and turned into Lin Feng. He reappeared beside the spear he had thrown aside. He immediately grabbed it back.

"Pfew... I almost forgot his body is almost indestructible."

"The attack didn't destroy him a moment ago. How terrifying! But how did he create such a spell? Divine Wrath is amazing!"

Lin Feng's attack reached the peerless Saint. The man's expression changed drastically. He couldn't believe it. His five lightnings attack was incredible, fast and powerful... even if the Thunder Shrine's Leader was struck by that attack he would have died, how come Divine Wrath was still alive?

But he didn't have much time to think. He had to dodge. Lin Feng's attack was a beautiful Saint's Technique. It was incredibly fast, as he used time strength in it. The Thunder Shrine's strong cultivator wanted to resist, but there was a crackling sound, and he

didn't have time to condense energies. The spear pierced through his head. Lin Feng didn't use spear strength, he mainly relied on speed.

A terrifying strength went through the man, and the cultivator's body exploded. His soul dispersed, and he was dead. The crowd was astonished, staring blankly at them.

A peerless Saint had just died in battle!

Peerless Saints were extraordinary beings, they were precious even for Shrines. When one of their peerless Saints died, it had a significant impact on their organization. Peerless Saints were at the core of Shrines!

The previous time they had met, Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu had won two out of three battles. This time, Zi Zhu fought against the Empty Space Shrine's Leader, Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon fought against the Thunder Shrine's Leader, and Divine Wrath killed a peerless Saint in one strike.

"Die!" The Thunder Shrine's Leader shouted furiously. Lightning descended from the sky towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng continued releasing time strength. At the same time, he continued attacking the bolts with his spear. The atmosphere undulated around him.

At that moment, the Empty Space Shrine and the Thunder Shrine's peerless cultivators moved forwards. They initially thought that the Shrines' leaders were enough to resist against their enemies, but they were wrong. A peerless cultivator had even been killed.

"Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon is strong and he has the demon halberd. It's a terrifying weapon!" the crowd sighed. When the peerless Saints of the Shrines moved forwards, the peerless Saints of the three great alliances also flashed forwards. Strength rolled all around them, a perfect storm of conflicting energies.

"Piss off!" shouted the Thunder Shrine's Leader. He threw his

hammer at Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon. A terrifying godly thunderbolt streaked across the sky. He wanted to destroy Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon!

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon was holding his halberd. Demon lights surrounded the area. At the same time, there were multiple explosions and energies bombarded the godly thunderbolt. Even though the lightning didn't get destroyed, at least it was stopped.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader noticed that something was wrong. He stretched out his hand and an empty space map shot towards Zi Zhu. Lights flared. Zi Zhu and two other peerless Saints were suddenly sealed in a small space. The Celestial Sealing Map could be used to seal a whole space, and he had sealed the whole area to look dignified and majestic. Now, he realized he had to have a real strategy because Zi Zhu was also extremely strong, so he decided to seal him!

"It seems like the Shrines need to suffer a little bit," Lin Feng said with an evil smile. "I told you the Shrines' goal is either to make us submit to them and use us as slaves, or to kill us, I hadn't thought it would happen so fast. So from now on, when the Divine Wrath Alliance sees anyone from the Shrines' alliance, kill them!"

"Chaotic Sky Alliance, I give you the same order!" said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon icily.

"Black Bamboo Alliance, same order!" shouted Zi Zhu. He was stuck in the Celestial Sealing Map. The battle was terrifying, only peerless Saints could participate.

The Empty Space Shrine and the Thunder Shrine's Leader's hearts twitched. They hadn't thought the three great alliances would be this powerful...

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader walked forwards and suddenly disappeared. He reappeared in the central battlefield and shouted furiously, "Empty space, condense!"

Everything became rigid, the strong cultivators of the great alliances had the impression they were stuck in moving sands.

“Die!” the members of the Shrines attacked, but at the same time, a peerless sharp Qi filled the air. The Empty Space Shrine’s Leader looked nervous. Lin Feng shot towards him without effort, raising his spear as a cage appeared around the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader.

“Insolent!” The Empty Space Shrine’s Leader hadn’t thought that other than Zi Zhu, someone else would dare attack him alone, especially with the intention to kill him!

“Freeze!” Lin Feng had the impression the atmosphere was becoming thicker around him. “You want to die!” said the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader throwing his hand at him.

I can’t use too many attacks in front of him, otherwise he’ll understand who I am, thought Lin Feng. This body’s main strength was that he could disintegrate and then condense again. Actually, it was just an illusion he had created, but at least that way people thought he was immortal. On the other hand, Lin Feng had to find a solution, because if his enemies came to the conclusion that he had no other way to attack, he would be in a critical situation!

Chapter 2481:

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader's attack crushed the whole space around them. His attack moved closer and closer to Lin Feng.

"Time," said Lin Feng. Time passed faster around his body and slower in the outside world. At the same time, he used the spear to protect his body, it turned into a vortex which absorbed everything around him. All the lights generated by the attacks around him were absorbed.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader was taken aback when he saw that. Lin Feng could absorb attacks so easily?

He took a step forwards and threw out his hands. Lin Feng had the impression that the space around him was becoming isolated and moving away from the world.

"Eh?" Lin Feng sensed that the space around him was being drawn towards the Empty Space Shrine's Leader.

"What kind of attack is that?" Lin Feng frowned, he didn't understand. The Empty Space Shrine's Leader was truly strong.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader walked forwards, he looked furious. His eyes were filled with killing intent. To him, Lin Feng was doomed!

"Destroy!" he said icily. The space around him undulated, it was on the verge of exploding.

Lin Feng threw himself at the Empty Space Shrine's Leader. The Empty Space Shrine's Leader was surprised, his face stiffened. His expression was really funny to see. He was asking himself, How can that guy cross an empty space I created?

A mysterious strength surrounded him, he sensed something, and saw the spear driving towards him, thrusting at his head.

Empty space lights flashed. He could sense he was moving much

slower, and he frowned in consternation.

The ground trembled. A strength struck his body, to his astonishment. Divine Wrath, who had just shown up and wasn't known before, had proven he could compete with him!

“Piss off!” The space around the Empty Space Shrine's Leader changed slightly, Lin Feng's spear passed next to his head. The Empty Space Shrine's Leader disappeared.

He reappeared somewhere else, staring at Lin Feng in fury.

Lin Feng flew forwards. He stood proudly in front of the strong cultivators of the three great alliances. The battles around them were fierce and tragic. Both sides had lost peerless Saints. Three peerless Saints had already been killed. It was an incredible thing in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“Go!” said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader. The strong cultivators of the Empty Space Shrine and the Thunder Shrine fled. They had fewer cultivators on their side than the three great alliances this time. They had relied on their leaders and their ultimate weapons to oppress those independent cultivators, but hadn't thought the independents would be so strong. The Thunder Shrine's Leader was extremely powerful, but Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon was so strong so the Thunder Shrine's Leader couldn't kill him.

Even though the Empty Space Shrine's Leader could seal the space with the Celestial Sealing Map, he couldn't kill Zi Zhu and Divine Wrath, even if he sealed them. They were at a dead end.

“Do you think you can go?” said Lin Feng icily. He suddenly released time strength to move faster and attacked someone who was moving away, that person sensed a strange and mysterious strength surround him. He turned around and saw a spear shooting towards him.

“Freeze!”

After the Empty Space Shrine took the Celestial Sealing Map away, Zi Zhu froze time. Many people stopped moving in front of Lin Feng. He could easily kill them with his spear. A vortex made of absorbing strength appeared around the spear, and the spear absorbed their vitality and intent. Bodies exploded and souls dispersed, one after another.

“Remember me!” shouted the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader explosively.

However, Zi Zhu just laughed and shot back, “You came to kill us and now you’re running away and your people are getting killed! And now you still dare get angry in front of us?”

The Thunder Shrine’s Leader stood in the sky, holding his Thunder Hammer. He raised it, thunder rumbled out, and lightning descended from the sky.

“Back!” shouted Zi Zhu. Lin Feng and Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon shot forwards.

The Thunder Shrine’s Leader was surprised at their resolve, and followed those who were running away, “I’m sure we’ll meet again!”

Lin Feng’s spear attacked the lightning bolts. He watched those people running away icily. They had still killed three peerless Saints, it was an achievement!

Some people were struck by lightning, and lost arms and legs. They were amazed by the power of those ultimate weapons. But their three great alliances had still lost less people than the Shrines.

“WOOOOO!” someone shouted excitedly. They had made two Shrines’ leaders run away, even with their ultimate weapons!

“After what happened today, we’ll see if they dare attack us again!” said someone happily. Everybody would soon know about this throughout the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine

Clouds, and would probably be amazed.

“If we continue collaborating, we’ll be as strong as the Shrines and at the top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” Zi Zhu smiled. Then he looked at the crowd and said, “Tian Xue City is the place where we became famous. The three great alliances could settle here, what do you think?”

“No,” said Lin Feng instantly.

Zi Zhu looked at Lin Feng and smiled, “Divine Wrath, what do you suggest?”

“This battle will shake the whole continent. But it’s not enough. The Empty Space Shrine’s alliance isn’t only made of two Shrines. If we settle in Tian Xue City, the seven Shrines will come and attack us here, and we’ll be destroyed instantly,” said Lin Feng.

“Indeed, Divine Wrath. So, what do you think we should do?” Zi Zhu asked with a smile. They had seen how Lin Feng was during the battle.

“We must take the initiative to attack the seven Shrines’ alliance, we must make them suffer significant losses. They lost three peerless Saints this time, it’s not bad already. If we continue and keep up the good work, then we’ll stand at the top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and we’ll be able to control it,” said Lin Feng with a hard smile.

“The seven Shrines formed the Iron Alliance. They are all connected by teleportation portals. We can’t go there and attack them directly,” said Zi Zhu. He was curious.

“If we can contact the Fortune Shrine’s alliance and join hands with them, we could attack them once,” said Lin Feng. Everybody could imagine. The Fortune Shrine’s alliance was made of four groups, the three great alliances was made of three groups. They didn’t know how strong the Fortune Shrine’s alliance was, but the three great alliances were stronger than three Shrines. Right now,

the biggest problem was to fight against the seven Shrines, because they all had ultimate weapons. Otherwise, killing entire groups in the Shrines would be something easy for them.

“We need to think and plan,” said someone.

“Yes, indeed, it’s not a small thing,” Lin Feng agreed. “Let’s stay in Tian Xue City for now. At the same time, have the news spread so that the Fortune Shrine’s alliance hears about us.”

“Alright, let’s go!” everybody agreed, and quickly dispersed. They were all happy, the battle had been perfect for them!

The news quickly spread throughout the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and people were astonished. Three groups of independent cultivators were rising in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The battles in that chaotic world were getting more and more astounding. Everybody was curious to see how the situation would end up. Would things end up like back in the past?

Chapter 2482:

The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds...

The Divine Wrath Alliance, the Chaotic Sky Alliance, and the Black Bamboo Alliance had become famous. It was still snowing in Tian Xue City. Lin Feng was standing there with his hands clasped behind his back. Behind him, someone arrived carefully. It was Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon.

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon left footprints behind him in the snow. He walked up next to Lin Feng and gazed into the distance.

“You want to use the strength of the three great alliances to destroy the Shrines’ alliance?” asked Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon calmly, “Lin Feng, I support you.”

Lin Feng frowned and slowly turned to look at him. He didn’t look indifferent anymore. He was convinced that with his strength, nobody could recognize him anymore. However, that old demon emperor seemed to know who he was.

The first person who had told Lin Feng about Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon was the Diviner. Back in the days, there was a demon cultivator whom some people called THE Demon Emperor, he used to wander around in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Lin Feng had heard about the Demon Emperor many times. Lin Feng also remembered Yuan Fei in the small world, the place where the Demon Emperor was once from used to be called the Mountain of Flowers and Fruit. He also remembered the words he had read in the Jade Emperor’s palace.

Apart from that, Lin Feng had also seen an image of the Demon Emperor on the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree, and he had seen many of his images in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, as well. Lin Feng had thought those were only coincidences.

The Sky Palace, what was the date tonight?

“Surprised?” The Demon Emperor looked at Lin Feng, smiled and said, “In the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, you heard my voice. I am your image, your shadow. You used to be a Demon King in the ancient past. Only your own determination can make you understand those things. On the day when you do understand, you’ll become the Peerless Demon King. You’ll defy the skies, blood will spill unceasingly in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and you will be the strongest cultivator in the world.”

“Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, so it’s really you.” Lin Feng frowned.

“Of course. You think that with your strength, back then, you could have left the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell? It’s your karma. You are the Forbidden Person, you have a Forbidden Body. I was earlier than you by a thousand years, Hei An Xi. That’s our karma, my karma, your karma. I am you, you are me. We are one,” said the Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon solemnly.

“Karma?” Lin Feng remained silent. Did Karma really exist?

“Does the Handsome Monkey King believe in Karma?” Lin Feng slowly turned his head again and gazed into the distance. Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon didn’t say anything. Lin Feng frowned.

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon remained silent. Lin Feng looked at him again and frowned, “Eh?”

“You want to rely on the great alliances to destroy the Shrines, I’ll help you,” said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon smiling.

Lin Feng smiled and replied, “Thank you very much.”

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon turned around and walked away. Lin Feng watched him go, he had cold sweat down his back.

In the Jade Emperor’s palace, he had read, Limitless Sky Palace, what’s the date tonight? Then he also remembered the name of that mountain: the Mountain of Flowers and Fruit. Everything seemed to be pointing at one thing: the incredible Demon Emperor

and he seemed to come from the same place. However, a moment before, he mentioned the Handsome Monkey King, and the Demon Emperor changed the topic. Lin Feng found everything quite mysterious.

Someone else came to him. It wasn't Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon this time, it was Zi Zhu. Lin Feng smiled at him in greeting. Zi Zhu could compete with the Empty Space Shrine's Leader, he was extremely strong.

"Any ideas?" asked Zi Zhu smiling at Lin Feng.

"I contacted some strong cultivators, and attacking the Fire Shrine would be a good idea," said Lin Feng smiling.

"Is our target only the Fire Shrine's alliance? What about the Fortune Shrine's alliance?" continued Zi Zhu.

"Nowadays, the Fire Shrine's alliance is strong. They won't try to oppress us again. Regarding the Fortune Shrine's alliance, I don't think they would do anything to us. They're not stupid," said Lin Feng slowly. Zi Zhu smiled meaningfully.

"Lin Feng, I support you," said Zi Zhu. Then he also turned around and left.

Lin Feng looked at Zi Zhu. He had a strange feeling. He had used a new identity to become the leader of the Divine Wrath Alliance, and now Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon had recognized him. Lin Feng was really convinced that the Demon Emperor was his image, otherwise he wouldn't have recognized him.

But what about Zi Zhu? And what was that smile supposed to mean? What did he know? But Lin Feng didn't think about it too much. He wanted to destroy the Fire Shrine and their allies first.

———

After that battle, the Continent of the Nine Clouds became quite calm again. However, people from the Continent of the Nine Clouds could imagine how furious the Empty Space Shrine and the

Thunder Shrine were. Together, in total they had a dozen peerless Saints, and now they had lost three. Now they were less powerful.

However, even then the seven Shrines didn't go to Tian Xue City to get their revenge. The Divine Wrath Alliance, the Chaotic Sky Alliance, and the Black Bamboo Alliance protected that place, and the Fortune Shrine's alliance probably knew that as well. If anyone was watching Tian Xue City, they would be able to inform the Fortune Shrine's alliance if anyone came to attack, and they would come to help the three great alliances. The Fortune Shrine's alliance didn't want to miss any opportunity.

The seven Shrines needed to protect themselves from the Fortune Shrine's alliance no matter what, because many years ago they had decided to disappear and continue the war until its end!

——

In Lin Feng's Star World...

Lin Feng looked at the high-level Saints and smiled, "Back in the days, I promised that I'd fight against you if I were a high-level Saint and that if you defeated me, I'd release you. However, my cultivation level is different from other people's cultivation level, for me, high-level Saint means nothing, it doesn't exist. But I have to do what I promised you. Actually, I want you to help me one last time and then I'll release you," said Lin Feng.

He was the master of this world, so he controlled their freedom. He could let them leave or not. Only the old ox had privileges in that world.

When the golden ape heard Lin Feng, he smiled and said, "Lin Feng, you're wrong."

"I'm wrong?" Lin Feng looked at him sharply.

"Do you really think I'm stuck here and can't leave?!" the golden ape laughed. "When our Master left, he wanted us to leave, but we didn't want to. We still wanted to wait for him. We hadn't thought

you'd come instead and become the new leader. Besides, you were much weaker than us. You think you could give us orders?"

"Of course not," replied Lin Feng.

"But now you can," the golden ape smiled. "No matter what you want us to do, we'll help you."

Lin Feng looked at the golden ape's smile and smiled broadly too. "I will become the strongest cultivator in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. I will honor your former Master."

"We can't wait," the last bestial Saint smiled. Lin Feng nodded and left.

After that, he appeared in front of the three peerless bestial Saints.

They opened their eyes and looked at Lin Feng.

"Should we go to war in the Continent of the Nine Clouds?" asked the peerless bestial Saint who had helped Lin Feng the previous time. He was smiling as he guessed Lin Feng needed help.

"Yes, it's a crucial battle. It could change everything in the Continent of the Nine Clouds," said Lin Feng straightforwardly.

The bestial Saint smiled. "If you need us, just ask."

When Lin Feng heard him, he smiled back. He hadn't gone there for such a long time, he hadn't thought that all the bestial Saints who used to be cold to him would have become so nice and helpful. He was touched.

"Thank you very much," Lin Feng bowed, and then he left. He reappeared in front of a treasure building. He hadn't opened the last door yet.

Lin Feng didn't know when the old ox had appeared behind him, but at that moment, he was there and looking at him. Lin Feng smiled and said, "Thank you, old ox."

Then, he tapped the old ox's horn.

“You’re getting more and more audacious,” said the old ox angrily.

“Hehe.” Lin Feng laughed, “Brother Ox, all the bestial Saints are so nice to me, it’s all thanks to you, right?”

“Kind of,” said the old ox, not admitting anything. “Go inside and have a look.”

“Alright.” Lin Feng nodded. He put his hand on the door, strength suddenly filled the air and rolled out in waves. The door began to glow brightly, crackling sounds spread in the air. Lin Feng could sense the strength of a peerless Saint.

He slowly opened the door, and entered the palace. He shivered. There were peerless Saint’s Weapons everywhere. There were around eighty weapons, their spirits terrifying. Even a Shrine couldn’t have so many peerless Saint’s Weapons.

“Those Saint’s Weapons are terrifyingly powerful,” he murmured. Unfortunately, he didn’t know many peerless Saints he could trust. Otherwise, if he had been able to give them to other peerless Saints and form an army of eighty, that would have been terrifying. They would have been able to destroy the whole world!

Chapter 2483:

Tian Xue City was a calm and peaceful city. The seven Shrines didn't come to get their revenge, which actually made the crowd have bad premonitions.

The strong cultivators of the three great alliances suddenly left the city. Were they trying to deceive the observers?

On the same day, the leaders of the seven Shrines' alliance gathered in the Fire Shrine.

"I received some news. The three great alliances and the Fortune Shrine are going to divide into two influential groups and they will attack two of our Shrines. They want to make things difficult for us, that way we won't be able to protect ourselves," said the Fire Shrine's Leader.

Everybody already knew that so they remained composed. "Do you know which Shrines they intend to attack?"

"They're not sure yet, and I am not even sure whether it is really true or not," answered the Fire Shrine's Leader. Everybody frowned.

"But I'm sure that they will come. The three great alliances left Tian Xue City during the night."

"Oh, what should we do?" asked the Thunder Shrine's Leader coldly. He was still furious. The previous time, everybody had heard about what had happened to the Thunder Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine and their humiliation.

"We can surround and destroy one of them," said the Fire Shrine's Leader.

"Kill which one?"

"Initially, they were a bunch of independent cultivators. We need to destroy them, and I've heard that Lin Feng is with them."

Everybody frowned. They hadn't heard of Lin Feng for five hundred years. They were all worried because they all thought he would become extremely strong, and someday he'd destroy them. After all, each time Lin Feng showed up, he was much, much stronger, progressing extremely quickly. Everybody was convinced he had the potential to become a cultivation god.

"Lin Feng, How's that possible? Why would he be in the independent cultivators' alliance?" asked the Empty Space Shrine's Leader, curious.

"From what I heard, he didn't only show up, he also fought against you," said the Fire Shrine's Leader, staring at the Empty Space Shrine's Leader.

"Impossible. I have the Void Breaking Vision, I can see through all things. Someone of my level can't escape from the Void Breaking Vision."

"The Leader of the Divine Wrath Alliance, Divine Wrath, what do you think?" asked the Fire Shrine's Leader.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader frowned. He raised his head and looked at the Fire Shrine's Leader sharply. "How is that possible? How could he have become that strong?"

"Nothing is impossible. That's the reason why I want us to use our full strength to get rid of them. The Fortune Shrine and the independent cultivators' alliance want us to feel overwhelmed. They want to move faster than us. Let's learn from them. If it's not true, then we'll just have wasted some time. If it is true, then we can't miss this opportunity," said the Fire Shrine's Leader calmly.

Everybody remained silent. If their enemies really attacked by surprise and in two groups, it would be difficult for them. The best thing to do was to gather and have a big battle.

——

Lin Feng couldn't know what was going on in the Fire Shrine. He

didn't even know how the Fire Shrine knew who he was. Actually, if Lin Feng knew, he wouldn't even believe it.

Finally, Lin Feng, the Fortune Shrine, and the others agreed to attack the Wind Shrine and the Dazzling Gold Shrine.

The reason why they chose those two Shrines was because they were close to each other. If peerless Saints rushed over, they'd be there in a short time, so they'd use their own power. The other Shrines used teleportation portals to cross the longer distances, but if people flew and didn't use teleportation portals, then things would be easier. Lin Feng and the others would have time to react.

This time, their goal was to attack as quickly as possible. During the beginning of the attack, the Shrines wouldn't know what to do, they'd be unstable, and during that time of instability, they'd have time to carry out a big attack. One strike had to be enough. If it was possible, then they'd also attack a second time by surprise.

The three great alliances' target would be the Wind Shrine, the Fortune Shrine's alliance target would be the Dazzling Gold Shrine.

Lin Feng was in contact with the Diviner and the Fortune Shrine's Leader. At that moment, they had already arrived in the city where the Wind Shrine was. They didn't inspect the Wind Shrine with their godly awareness, it was too dangerous. They needed to do a blitz attack so that the enemies wouldn't have time to react.

Why do I have a bad premonition?, thought Lin Feng. He had to be extremely vigilant.

"Leader, Teacher, are you ready?" Lin Feng asked the Fortune Shrine's Leader and the Diviner using the jade talisman.

"We're ready, but Lin Feng, I have a bad premonition," replied the Fortune Shrine's Leader.

"We have reached a point of no return, let's get ready to attack.

We attack and then leave instantly,” said Lin Feng. He then rose up in the air, his godly awareness rolling in waves above the Wind Shrine.

“Eh?” Lin Feng was surprised. There weren’t many people in the Wind Shrine. He didn’t even notice any peerless cultivators.

“It can’t be.” Suddenly, Lin Feng noticed many, many strong cultivators apart from them, many peerless Saints!

“Boom!” Silhouettes rose up in the air, and suddenly, there were extremely strong cultivators all around. The three great alliances’ strong cultivators realized that apart from them, there were many, many terrifying cultivators there. It was as if all the members of the Shrines’ alliance had been waiting for them there. They hadn’t released their godly awareness until Lin Feng had released his own.

“Lin Feng, there’s absolutely nobody here. The Shrine is empty,” said a voice to Lin Feng telepathically. Lin Feng frowned, “Leader, there was an ambush here.”

“Wait for us, try to survive,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader. At the same time, the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader appeared in the sky, holding the Celestial Sealing Map.

“Anyone who isn’t from the three great alliances, don’t move. If you do anything, we’ll kill you,” said the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader icily. He used the Celestial Sealing Map. Terrifying cultivators appeared one after another. Lin Feng saw all the Shrines’ leaders. They were all holding their ultimate weapons, their eyes filled with killing intent.

They really wanted to kill Lin Feng!

“Lin Feng, you turned into Divine Wrath and tried to obtain help from the three great alliances to help the Fortune Shrine fight against us. How long did you intend to lie to the three great alliances?” shouted the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader. His eyes were twinkling. He had a special vision, but he still couldn’t see

through Lin Feng.

“And you, morons. Lin Feng used you! Who wants to join my Shrines’ alliance now? You won’t die if you join us!” said the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader icily.

“Don’t let them ruin your determination. If it works, our three great alliances won’t be able to withstand a single attack. Get ready to fight,” said Zi Zhu at that moment.

“Kill Lin Feng first!” said a voice at that moment. A few people walked towards Lin Feng slowly. Lin Feng frowned. He was nervous. He was in danger. Who had sold him out?

There were only peerless Saints here. Nobody knew about his agreement with the Fortune Shrine. But in any case, his enemies had been waiting for him here and they knew who he was. How tragic!

“Lin Feng, you will die today,” said the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader, slowly walking towards Lin Feng. He wanted Lin Feng to admit who he was.

Apart from the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader, the Thunder Shrine’s Leader also walked towards Lin Feng, along with the Dazzling Gold Shrine’s Leader. Three leaders could probably kill Lin Feng easily. This time, Lin Feng couldn’t escape!

“Come and kill me!” answered Lin Feng, suddenly withdrawing. He had to leave this place for the others to not to be in danger.

A strong wind started blowing. Lin Feng flew upwards.

“Hmph! You think you can escape?” sneered the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader. Lin Feng took out his spear, which streaked across the sky.

Dazzling lights flashed, Lin Feng moved and shouted, “Everybody, the Fortune Shrine’s alliance will be here soon. When they arrive, we’ll be able to counterattack. We must hold on for now!”

His allies grit their teeth; they had no choice but to endure!

Lin Feng moved towards the Celestial Sealing Map. The Empty Space Shrine's Leader smiled icily. Did Lin Feng think he could leave?

And then Lin Feng's spear pierced through the Celestial Sealing Map as if it wasn't there. The Empty Space Shrine's Leader was stunned, and started shaking violently. Lin Feng punched through it, and was outside!

"How is that possible?!" shouted the Empty Space Shrine's Leader in disbelief. The two other Shrines' leaders were astonished, too.

"Hurry up and take the Celestial Sealing Map away!" shouted someone furiously. The Empty Space Shrine's Leader took the Celestial Sealing Map away. They rose into the air and chased after Lin Feng. When they left, the Empty Space Shrine's Leader threw out the Celestial Sealing Map again to seal the Shrine again, but at the same time, Lin Feng attacked it again with his spear.

He was playing with them!

"He's wasting time on purpose," said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader. He looked nervous. Lin Feng controlled time strength, and was moving too fast!

"Zi Zhu!" shouted Lin Feng explosively. Zi Zhu glanced at him and understood what he wanted, he also helped out.

Chapter 2484:

Zi Zhu looked at Lin Feng who was coming towards him. They converged on two peerless Saints and released time strength.

“Time, freeze!” shouted Zi Zhu icily. The two peerless Saints stopped moving, their time was frozen. When they noticed Lin Feng was attacking them, he only needed a microsecond to reach them.

“Fast!” said Lin Feng. He increased his own speed. His spear pierced through a peerless Saint’s head. When Zi Zhu and Lin Feng cooperated, even peerless Saints seemed weak.

As Lin Feng was about to kill the second one, a destructive lightning bolt descended from the sky. Lin Feng moved back and released more time strength. He moved so fast people could hear sonic booms, even among the blurs of movement on the battlefield.

“Great Celestial Seal Freeze!” said a voice icily. The sky became white, it looked frozen. Many strong cultivators died frozen.

Crackling sounds spread in the air. Peerless Saints were freezing.

“Die!” said the Dazzling Gold Shrine’s Leader, throwing his Sky Destroying Sword and slicing into the cultivators sealed in the sky. Destructive golden lights slashed through the sky. Many peerless Saints fell from the sky.

Even though many people were frozen, they continued thinking of what to do next.

“The seven Shrines’ alliance have the advantage over the three great alliances, especially since they have some ultimate weapons!” murmured some people, forgetting about the imminent danger. The seven Shrines kept gaining ground and encircling the independent cultivators.

A moment before, the sky had been frozen by the Ice and Snow

Shrine's Leader. He was holding an ultimate weapon. It was a door with dark frost on it. It was the Freezing Door of the Ice and Snow Shrine.

He moved towards Lin Feng. The ice and frost strength around Lin Feng was dreadful, he had the impression he was going to freeze instantly.

The Empty Space Shrine's Leader and the Thunder Shrine's Leader also charged him.

"Back!" shouted someone, as cultivators appeared in front of Lin Feng: the three bestial Saints. The old ox also appeared in another form. Lin Feng had asked them to intervene at a crucial moment, and they had accepted. At the same time, a peerless bestial Saint didn't appear, instead taking the nine high-level bestial Saints to the Fire Shrine to destroy it.

"Time!" said the old ox, and time stopped.

"As expected, it's Lin Feng!" the Shrines' leaders were now convinced that Divine Wrath was Lin Feng!

"Hurry up and kill Lin Feng!" said the Fire Shrine's Leader. The atmosphere was sealed. Nine celestial thunderbolts descended from the sky. The Sky Destroying Sword also flashed, the ice and frost door froze the space and grew to great size, oppressing everything. It looked like the apocalypse.

"Time, freeze!" shouted Zi Zhu furiously. Time stopped. The time strength made Lin Feng and the others' movements limited, too, and the ultimate weapons didn't completely stop moving.

Many people looked at them. Lin Feng's expression changed drastically. He was encircled by so many Shrines' leaders and their ultimate weapons, who had sold him out? He felt like he was stuck.

The old ox attacked the nine celestial thunders. His attack looked ordinary, but it was incredibly powerful. Blood appeared on his arm. The two other bestial Saints were also oppressed.

Lin Feng was attacked. His body exploded, but it re-condensed higher up in the sky once more.

“He’s not dead?” The crowd was astonished. That attack hadn’t killed Lin Feng, how strong!

“He’s using the Great Sky Deceiving Illusion Technique, no wonder I couldn’t see through it. He probably understood several sorts of original strengths at the maximum level, including illusion original strength, and then fused them together. Then he modified it and created his own illusion technique. We’re not attacking his real body each time!” swore the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader.

The crowd was astonished. No wonder Lin Feng seemed immortal. He was using a special technique he had created!

“Continue killing!” Even though they were slowed down, they didn’t stop attacking. Lin Feng’s illusory body appeared indistinctly. His perceptions were acute, as if time had really stopped: wind, destructive energies, empty space strength, time.

An ice and frost energy surrounded Lin Feng. The ice and frost door moved towards him. A peerless bestial Saint jumped into the ice and frost door and gradually disappeared. Lin Feng’s face turned deathly pale. A peerless bestial Saint had just died because of him?!?!

That wasn’t the only peerless Saint who had died for him actually, many peerless Saints had died or were dying.

Lin Feng glanced around and thought, Maybe I could really make time stop?

“Time, fast, slow!” whispered Lin Feng. The ice and frost door continued moving towards him. The Ice and Snow Shrine’s Leader smiled icily.

I can make time pass either slower or faster, but I haven’t managed to understand fast and slow strengths at the maximum level because they are antagonistic kinds of strengths. However,

back in the days, I could understand life and death strengths and make them fuse together, why couldn't I do the same with fast and slow?, thought Lin Feng suddenly. God strength. With God strength, he was supposed to be able to control everything, slow, fast, time... They all belonged to the same kind of thing. They were the origin. Lin Feng needed to understand the very source.

“In the world, everything has an opposite so everything can be considered in relation to something. Fast can be opposed to slow. Something can be considered as fast if it is faster than something else. Slow is the same. But speed is relative to the speed at which time passes in the world itself. That is the source and if the source is modified, then slow and fast can fuse together!”

A special kind of Qi surrounded Lin Feng. It was as if some original strengths had been increasing and reached their maximum level and then fused together. It was impossible to see or touch them, Lin Feng was studying.

The ice and frost door was getting closer and closer. However, Lin Feng just looked at it, as fearless as if it were nothing special.

When slow, fast and time fuse together, then you modify the nature of time itself, it can stop!, thought Lin Feng. Suddenly, the ice and frost door stopped in front of him, and it wasn't the only thing. It was as if the source of time had changed. Everything stopped all around him. Even Zi Zhu couldn't understand what was going on.

Zi Zhu had fused three types of original strengths at the maximum level together: time, slow, and water, which was why he could make things slow down and then freeze them on top of that, so they moved even slower. Lin Feng's new technique surpassed Zi Zhu's.

Lin Feng understood time better than Zi Zhu now.

However, it only stopped for a few seconds, but it was enough. Lin Feng streaked across the sky and saved another peerless bestial

Saint who was about to get killed.

“Pfew...” The peerless bestial Saint took a deep breath. He looked at Lin Feng, what had just happened? He didn’t understand.

The old ox also looked at Lin Feng and smiled. Lin Feng had managed to do something the old ox had never managed to do.

Actually, the old ox understood several sorts of original strengths, but he only fused fast and time strengths together, as well as slow and time, and slow and fast, but he hadn’t fused the three of them together. He had also fused other sorts of original strengths fuse together to carry out powerful attacks. He had easily become a peerless Saint, but he had needed a great deal of time.

Lin Feng had surpassed him by far.

At that moment, Lin Feng was thinking that it was extremely difficult to modify the source of something. Making time stop was extremely hard, too.

At that moment, lights dashed to the skies, flaring brightly. Lin Feng was delighted. The Dazzling Gold Shrine hadn’t destroyed their teleportation portal, so the Fortune Shrine’s cultivators had used it to arrive!

The seven Shrines’ alliance hadn’t destroyed their teleportation portal because they weren’t sure the news was true. If they had destroyed it, it would have been even more difficult to teleport. They had done many things though, and had even managed to kill several peerless Saints of the three great alliances. It was already a great loss.

Chapter 2485:

The seven Shrines' alliance also realized that the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine's alliance were there. Their expressions changed. The Ice and Snow Shrine's Leader shouted, "Hurry up and kill those people, kill Lin Feng first!"

"Alright!" said the Empty Space Shrine's Leader nodding. He looked at Lin Feng icily. Lin Feng was strong. They still hadn't managed to kill him yet!

"Brother Ox, let's move back," said Lin Feng. He didn't wait for them to attack. He stopped time once again. Only the old ox could avoid being slowed down by time. At the same time, Lin Feng accelerated using time strength. He moved to the peerless bestial Saint and took him away. After that, time returned to normal again. Some strong cultivators gathered outside of the Celestial Sealing Map and attacked it.

Among them were the Earth Shrine's Leader with the godly axe and the Celestial Sound Shrine's Leader with their ultimate weapon, a celestial pitch-pipe. With the ultimate weapons and the peerless Saints' attacks, the Celestial Map was shaking violently.

"The Celestial Sealing Map is going to break." The Empty Space Shrine's Leader looked extremely worried. But how had Lin Feng escaped a moment before? Everything had happened in a few seconds. Time had stopped!

"Chase him!" The Empty Space Shrine's Leader continued chasing Lin Feng.

Lin Feng shouted, "Come here!"

Lin Feng raised his spear and stuck the Celestial Sealing Map.

"Break!" said Lin Feng. A hole appeared, and Lin Feng jumped into the hole. The Fortune Shrine's Leader and the others understood. The Earth Shrine's leader also used the godly axe to

make the hole bigger. The hole in the map was getting bigger and bigger.

“Lacerate!” All the strong cultivators moved towards the hole and attacked it. It was like the sky was falling. The Empty Space Shrine’s Leader’s face stiffened and turned deathly pale. He waved his hand and recalled the Celestial Sealing Map. However, there was a big hole in it now.

“Die!” The Fortune Shrine’s Leader and the others came in and released an explosive Qi.

People from the city were stupefied. They had never seen so many terrifying cultivators. The strongest cultivators of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were almost all there. It was the most powerful battle since the war in the ancient past.

The group of people who were attacking destroyed a peerless Saint instantly and then shot in all directions.

“Earth Shrine’s Leader, let’s join hands. Try and don’t fight, don’t collide with enemies directly,” shouted Lin Feng’s furiously. Everybody nodded and started moving away.

The Earth Shrine’s Leader had the godly axe. He came to Lin Feng and asked, “How do we join hands?”

“Help me block the attacks. Brother Ox, help me and protect me too,” Lin Feng said to the old ox. A few strong cultivators appeared in front of them: the Shrines’ Leaders who were chasing him!

“Standstill!” shouted Lin Feng icily. Time strength appeared, and time stopped in front of him. Time stopped for his enemies and his own people. He had modified the source of time!

Lin Feng attacked the Wind Shrine’s Leader who was in the front. The Wind Shrine was the fastest of the leaders, so he was closer to Lin Feng. He was even holding an ultimate weapon, a fan that served as an armor, too. It was black, white, and silver, and it

looked extremely sharp.

Lin Feng threw himself at the Wind Shrine's Leader. He used time strength to move faster, turned into a God's Sword, and the space shook around him.

"No..." the Wind Shrine's Leader became animate again when time restarted, looking desperate and shocked.

"Oh no!" The other Shrines' Leaders were stunned and their faces all changed. The Empty Space Shrine's Leader shouted out. Space condensed, but at the same time, all their attacks became slower. The Earth Shrine's Leader knew what Lin Feng wanted to do, so he also threw the godly axe and moved forwards. He realized he was moving much faster too, there was a silhouette next to him.

"Die!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. The sword whistled, even as the Wind Shrine's Leader moved into the wind.

"Slow!" shouted Lin Feng explosively. His sword pierced through the man's shoulder bone, and at the same time it absorbed his strength.

Blood gushed out. The Wind Shrine's Leader was injured, and continued fleeing. At the same time, he threw his ultimate weapon out, and a destructive strength appeared around Lin Feng.

"Illusion Destruction!"

Lin Feng's body exploded. However, at that moment, the Wind Shrine's Leader wasn't happy because danger came from above.

"Time, standstill!" shouted Lin Feng. A sword appeared in Lin Feng's hand and pierced through his enemy's head. The Wind Shrine's Leader wanted to escape with his soul and cried out desperately. The God's Sword came back to Lin Feng's hand, and he destroyed the Leader's impaled soul.

"That's his real body!" A gigantic empty space hand appeared in front of Lin Feng. The Earth Shrine's Leader and the old ox had already destroyed many attacks and enemies around Lin Feng,

however, some attacks still arrived in front of Lin Feng. He expected them, and withdrew. He modified the speed of time, his God's Sword humming angrily. At the same time, he condensed strength into his hand and thunder boomed.

Lin Feng sensed an incredible strength penetrate into his body and corrode his life. He instantly released life strength all around him and retreated. The enemy was still chasing him, but he was much slower, which made Lin Feng smile icily. "Time..."

All the strong cultivators stopped. They had just now seen him kill a Shrine's leader, and were scared.

Now they saw Lin Feng's smile, he was making fun of them. They were very nervous, as they understood Lin Feng was playing with them. At the same time, the Earth Shrine's Leader and the old ox also arrived next to Lin Feng.

"You can make time stop," the Earth Shrine's Leader said to Lin Feng. He didn't know what to think though, was it a good or a bad thing? Lin Feng was becoming stronger and it was good to fight against the seven Shrines' alliance, but in the future, what would happen?

Dazzling world lights flashed and descended from the sky, surrounding everybody. Lin Feng raised his head and saw a face in the sky, the World Clan's King. Lin Feng had seen that person a very, very long time ago: the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. The World Clan had had problems with the Shrines in the past, so he had had several lives in the lower world, then he had created the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world to raise an army to fight against the Shrines.

"Lin Feng, you continue killing; the Shrines' leaders and me will continue on our side," the World Clan's King said to him.

Lin Feng nodded, "Thank you!"

Lin Feng disappeared. The Fortune Shrine's Leader and the

Celestial Sound Shrine's Leader replaced him to fight against the Shrines' leaders. They didn't need to win, they just had to defend. Lin Feng could make time stop, so killing other peerless Saints was easy.

Very quickly, Lin Feng arrived in front of someone, who panicked to see him. Lin Feng made time stop. The God's Sword streaked across the sky and killed him instantly, his soul dispersed.

By the time the Shrines' leaders destroyed the world lights, they saw that Lin Feng had already killed two peerless Saints in the blink of an eye. They all grimaced. Lin Feng's understanding of cultivation was becoming extremely dangerous. What a tragedy!

"Escape!" shouted someone. Finally, the seven Shrines' strong cultivators started giving up and escaping. The problem was that Lin Feng could only make time stop sporadically, he didn't understand time well enough yet, and needed to wait between each attack. Therefore, he couldn't make time stop and kill everybody at once. However, he didn't intend to give up. He decided to chase them. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had slowed them down for a little while.

When Lin Feng made time stop, he used the source of time. It also impacted his own people, so they couldn't catch up with the enemy. Therefore, Lin Feng could only catch up with one person at a time.

Lin Feng caught up with one and used his God's Sword to attack him. After killing that person, he used his godly awareness to inspect the area and stopped when he couldn't see any peerless Saints anymore. Since he had started chasing them, he had already killed three peerless Saints.

Lin Feng's achievements were incredible during that battle, but he didn't look happy at all. It was a tragedy, both sides had suffered losses.

Lin Feng turned around and flew back. After a short time, he

arrived back on the battlefield. The battle was finished, people who were alive looked devastated and sad. It took cultivators a very long time to become a peerless Saint, and today, so many had died...

Chapter 2486: Gloomy Atmosphere

The inhabitants of the city below had been shocked by the battles. The Wind Shrine's Leader had even been killed!

“Lin Feng is so strong. He showed up again and now he can compete with the Shrines' leaders! He can even kill some! How incredible!” murmured some people.

Lin Feng went back to the old ox and said, “Brother Ox, I'm sorry.”

“Who would have thought such a thing would happen? You did nothing wrong. The only problem is who sold you out?” said the old ox. Someone had betrayed them. Their plan was perfect, they could have had a beautiful victory.

“But we still won even if we suffered losses,” the old ox sighed. Lights flashed, the peerless bestial Saint and the old ox disappeared.

Lin Feng took out his jade talisman and said, “How are things?”

“The Fire Shrine's teleportation portal is wrecked. The Fire Shrine's members haven't had time to come back using teleportation. We're done here. The Fire Shrine is already a mess. I'm looking for your clone,” answered the peerless bestial Saint who hadn't come with Lin Feng to the Wind Shrine. He had gone to the Fire Shrine with the nine high-level bestial Saints. When Lin Feng had noticed the teleportation portal of the Fire Shrine, he had noted its location.

Initially, the teleportation portal hadn't been used because the Fire Shrine's cultivators had already been here. Therefore, Lin Feng had made them break the teleportation portal as quickly as possible. The peerless bestial Saint had taken a peerless Saint's Weapon and the high-level bestial Saints, they had done a great job.

“Thank you for your hard work,” said Lin Feng. It had been very dangerous for them. If the Fire Shrine’s cultivators had been able to use the teleportation portal, things could have been worse.

“We found your clone, how are you there, Lin Feng?”

“You can talk to my clone,” replied Lin Feng. He put the jade talisman away. His clone had been stuck in the Fire Shrine for so many years. Lin Feng hated the Fire Shrine more than anything.

“Lin Feng!” the Fortune Shrine’s Leader called out to Lin Feng. His silhouette flickered and landed next to him.

“Leader, how bad are the losses?” asked Lin Feng.

“When we arrived, you had already become even stronger, so we didn’t suffer too many losses,” replied the Fortune Shrine’s Leader.

“But...” Lin Feng sensed something, the Divine Wrath Alliance’s people were looking at him icily. Lin Feng had used them. They had suffered great losses.

“Lin Feng, we admit that you are extremely strong and talented. You’re an extraordinary person, however, that being the case, you used us to fight against the Fire Shrine, and you didn’t use your full strength until the Fortune Shrine’s alliance arrived. The three great alliances suffered tragic losses. That’s not good,” said someone.

Many people from the three great alliances thought that way. They had seen how strong Lin Feng was, and he hadn’t protected them properly. They were really unhappy, Lin Feng had really used them for the benefit of the Fortune Shrine.

Lin Feng looked at them and said, “I know you all think that way. I hadn’t thought the battle would end up this way. I am really, really sorry. Regarding my strength, I became stronger during the battle, and one of my protectors saved my life at that precise moment. Do you really think I would want my allies to get killed?”

“You don’t care. From now on, the Fortune Shrine doesn’t need to fear the seven Shrines’ alliance.”

“I think the Divine Wrath Shrine should settle here in the Wind Shrine’s city. If you feel like it, we can settle here, and you can choose a new leader. If you wish, I can continue being the leader and someday, when the Divine Wrath Shrine become stable and powerful enough, I can leave,” said Lin Feng.

He didn’t try to explain anything, he just kept his composure. Many people’s heart twitched: Divine Wrath Shrine?

“I am also willing to offer three peerless Saint’s Weapons as a sign of gratitude,” said Lin Feng. Everybody’s heart started pounding. They started believing Lin Feng, maybe it was an accident.

“I trust him. And I am willing to join you to create the Divine Wrath Shrine,” said Zi Zhu. Everybody glanced at him. Being the founding member of a Shrine was really something amazing. Many years in the future, maybe the Divine Wrath Shrine would tower aloft, and everybody in the Continent of the Nine Clouds would know them.

“Alright, I trust him too. Lin Feng doesn’t need to lie to us,” said an old man. Everybody started believing him and most people ended up agreeing to found the Divine Wrath Shrine. Even though they had suffered great losses, the three great alliances could now become the Divine Wrath Shrine. Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Zi Zhu were extremely strong, and now they just needed an ultimate weapon.

“Everybody can discuss the details. The Wind Shrine’s ultimate weapon is in the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader’s hands now. He will not give it up for sure, so they will probably argue about it. The Wind Shrine will never be able to rise again. From now on, this place is the Divine Wrath Shrine,” said Lin Feng calmly. Excitement began to build.

Then Lin Feng looked at the Fortune Shrine's Leader and said, "Leader, I can't modify the scepter, take it back."

The Fortune Shrine's Leader looked at Lin Feng. He didn't understand, Lin Feng sounded a bit harsh.

"Lin Feng, I gave you the Scepter of Destiny, maybe you can't modify it now, but in the future, you will understand," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader insistently. Finally, Lin Feng nodded reluctantly.

"Lin Feng." An old man came up to Lin Feng and smiled.

"Master, King of the Ten Thousand Beasts." The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had helped Lin Feng in the past, so Lin Feng respected him.

"Call me brother now. Back then, I never thought you would progress so fast, or that you'd change the situation of the Continent of the Nine Clouds before me," said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, smiling.

"Brother, I wouldn't have thought it'd be you, either. No wonder you came to look for me back then in the small world. And on top of that, you had already transcended worldliness."

"Back in the days, you experienced my lives. One of them was my first life. Back in the days, I founded the World Clan, but the Fire Shrine oppressed me and wanted the World Clan to disappear forever. Therefore, I took my people away and hid in another world for a very long time to practice hard and come back to life," said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, smiling in a carefree manner. "But the Fire Shrine's Leader is strong. He's already extremely old, older than most of the other Leaders. But I intend to take the Fighting Phantoms with me to go and fight against him."

"We must destroy the Fire Shrine," said Lin Feng.

"Yes. When do you want to attack?" asked the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.

“First, the members of the Divine Wrath Shrine need to rest. Our enemies can’t pose a threat to us for now,” said Lin Feng calmly.

“Lin Feng, I don’t think so. Now is the best opportunity to attack. We could target the Dazzling Gold Shrine, for example,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader.

“I agree. What do you think, Lin Feng?” said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, his smile hard.

Lin Feng shook his head. He didn’t agree.

“Since you don’t agree, we won’t force you. Fortune Shrine’s Leader, let’s go to the Dazzling Gold Shrine together?”

“Alright,” said the Fortune Shrine’s Leader nodded. Then he glanced at Lin Feng in a meaningful way and left with his group.

—

Very quickly, only the members of the three great alliances were left there. Lin Feng gazed into the distance and the others were in the sky.

The only ones who knew who he was, were Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon, the Fortune Shrine’s Leader, and the Diviner. Nobody among the peerless Saints of the three great alliances knew who he really was. Someone had sold him out, and that was why they had had such problems.

At that moment, someone slowly walked to Lin Feng. Lin Feng turned around and saw the Diviner. He smiled and said, “Teacher.”

“I am well aware you couldn’t anticipate all this. Don’t worry,” the Diviner smiled. He was trying to cheer Lin Feng up.

“Teacher, it was a man-caused calamity,” Lin Feng said to the Diviner.

The Diviner was sad for Lin Feng. He had known Lin Feng for a very long time. He gazed into the distance and said, “Lin Feng, you

know, as the Leader of a Shrine, you think of the Shrine first. And making the Fortune Shrine powerful is the Fortune Shrine's Leader's goal."

Lin Feng's heart twitched and he said, "And everything that happened before? Was that fake?"

"Eh..." The Diviner sighed and left. Lin Feng looked at the Diviner's back. Lin Feng was a member of the Fortune Shrine, what if he had died during the battle?

Chapter 2487: Meeting

What happened had a big impact on Lin Feng's mood. It took him a while to calm down. What his teacher had told him probably confirmed what he had thought. Everything happened for the Fortune Shrine.

But did the Fortune Shrine do their best to protect him for the Fortune Shrine, too? And now, hadn't the Fortune Shrine used that opportunity to use him?

Lin Feng still couldn't understand some things in that world, he didn't like using people. He had feelings. Even though he had gone through a lot in life and was strong, he still didn't understand some things, he wasn't emotionless.

During those days, things changed drastically in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. So many peerless Saints had died, the Wind Shrine's Leader had died, and the Divine Wrath Shrine had been founded. All those things amazed the whole continent. After that, the Fortune Shrine's alliance destroyed the Dazzling Gold Shrine, so just like the Celestial Sound Shrine, they had nowhere to go anymore. Things were changing quickly, and the seven Shrines' alliance wasn't in the best situation.

Right after the Divine Wrath Shrine was founded, many strong cultivators joined them, and it became incredibly strong. They recruited some disciples. They also hoped that peerless Saints would join them and become senior officials of the Divine Wrath Shrine. They might become extremely strong in the future that way.

However, Lin Feng didn't think about those things. He practiced cultivation really hard. He was meditating and forgot about worldly affairs. He had managed to fuse three original strengths together and he could make time stop for a second. He wanted to improve his powers and abilities now, so he isolated himself from

the outside world.

On the way, a few of Lin Feng's friends came by, so he stopped meditating and met them: Hou Qing Lin, Lang Ye, and Jun Mo Xi. Lin Feng was extremely happy to see them.

"Lin Feng, when we separated last time, we didn't think you'd become a peerless Saint, and now you're even able to stop time, and you've become a Shrine's Leader," Lang Ye smiled. The Divine Wrath Shrine's Leader was still Lin Feng!

Over five hundred years had passed since he saw them last. Lang Ye had also become stronger. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had supported him and he had a king-type body. He had traveled a lot, and he had created many small worlds, been in many mysterious worlds. He was now a high-level Saint.

Hou Qing Lin had also become a high-level Saint. Shortly after the Shrines' agreement five hundred years before, Hou Qing Lin had become a low-level Saint, then he had continued practicing cultivation really hard and become a high-level Saint.

Against all expectations, Jun Mo Xi was still only a low-level Saint.

"I didn't think we'd have the opportunity to meet again after all that happened in the Continent of the Nine Clouds," said Lin Feng smiling and clapping his friends' shoulders.

"We should have drinks today," said Lang Ye smiling.

"Yes, we should have drinks today," Lin Feng agreed cheerfully.

"This time, I prepared some strong alcohol," Jun Mo Xi grinned. They walked aside. Jun Mo Xi took out many bottles of strong alcohol and threw some of them at his friends.

"Lin Feng, do you remember the first time we met?" Lang Ye asked Lin Feng.

“I remember. I was with Meng Qing and you helped us.”

“Haha, yes! Back then, the World Clan thought Meng Qing was a Forbidden Person. We only learned you were a Forbidden Person when our leader came back.”

“The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts went back to the World Clan only afterwards?” asked Lin Feng. He was curious.

“Yes, he was hiding in one of the World Clan’s worlds. He trained people and also practiced cultivation a lot. In the end, he created a terrifying army, and that’s how the World Clan came back to life,” said Lang Ye sighing. So many years had passed, yet the leader of the World Clan was still determined.

“The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts is patient and proud,” said Lin Feng, nodding and drinking. He looked at Jun Mo Xi and Hou Qing Lin and said, “Mo Xi, back then in Dragon Mountain, we were very young, high-spirited and vigorous. We never thought we would it make this far. We never thought hundreds of years would pass in the twinkling of an eye. And you, brother, back in the days, we were the eleven disciples of Tiantai, we went through so many hardships. We were proud. We dreamed of becoming peerless cultivators. We had to fight against the members of the Tian Long Divine Castle all the time. We even killed their princes, you remember? We weren’t afraid, even though nobody thought we had potential. It feels like a dream.”

Jun Mo Xi and Hou Qing Lin remembered, they felt nostalgic all of a sudden. Sometimes, they missed the good old times; sometimes, they asked themselves what the point of cultivation was. But it didn’t prevent them from persevering and keeping it up.

“Good men miss the good old times and remember their close ones. Someday, Tiantai will tower aloft in the Continent of the Nine Clouds again,” said Hou Qing Lin. His long hair was fluttering in the wind. He still looked natural and unrestrained.

“Alright, with friends, we’re not lonely! Cheers, brothers!” said Jun Mo Xi, raising his glass and then they all drank heartily.

Lin Feng had fun drinking with his friends. It was rare to be able to relax like that. They drank all day and all night. They had millions of things to talk about, they were like brothers.

On the next day, two more people came to see Lin Feng. He was extremely happy... they were his sons, Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng!

Jun Mo Xi, Hou Qing Lin, Lang Ye, Zhe Tian and Qing Lin were all together, they chatted and laughed.

“When the father is a lion, the son cannot be a dog! Lin Feng, you, your son is stronger than me,” said Lang Ye. He couldn’t see Zhe Tian’s cultivation level anymore. Qiong Sheng had already become a high-level Saint, how incredible!

“They were also very lucky, they got a great teacher,” Lin Feng smiled. He knew that Zhe Tian and Qiong Sheng were strong, but if they hadn’t encountered Mister Time, they wouldn’t have become that strong so quickly. Mister Time was a terrifying cultivator!

“But they’re extremely talented anyway,” Lang Ye observed.

Jun Mo Xi said, “I remember you and You You back then during the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Now, so many years have passed, and your son is stronger than I am!”

“Uncle Mo Xi, don’t ridicule me,” Qiong Sheng told Jun Mo Xi.

“You know who I am?”

“Of course, I know you, Uncle Hou Qing Lin and Uncle Lang Ye. My mother told me my dad’s and your stories. I want to be like my father and have such great friends.”

“You know how to talk to people, better than your daddy,” said Jun Mo Xi, laughing happily. Lin Qiong Sheng scratched his head.

“Alright, how come you’re here, boys?” asked Lin Feng.

“Mister Time had us come back. Mister Time said that Zhe Tian could now help you fight. I’m not that strong yet, but I’m sure I’ll be able to fuse two sorts of special original strengths together soon,” said Lin Qiong Sheng, smiling self-consciously.

Zhe Tian exclaimed, “Dad, I can finally help you!”

“You think I’m not good for fighting anymore?” replied Lin Feng, smiling wryly. Then he heard some steps behind him.

“Leader!” shouted someone.

Lin Feng turned around, “What’s wrong?”

“Leader, the elders want us to join the battles. The Fortune Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine have been having some fierce battles recently. Should we join them as well?” The members of the Divine Wrath Shrine knew how strong Lin Feng was. Not only was he strong, but he was also very good in terms of strategy. That’s why they wanted to keep Lin Feng as their Leader.

“Yes, tell all the elders that they can listen to Zi Zhu’s orders. If I want to fight, I’ll intervene,” said Lin Feng.

That person nodded, “Yes, Leader.”

After that, the person walked away. Lin Feng said, “I need to meditate in seclusion some more. What do you all intend to do?”

“Alright, since you need to study, go and practice cultivation in peace. Don’t worry about us,” Hou Qing Lin said to Lin Feng.

“Dad, we’ll be around waiting for you,” said Zhe Tian.

“Alright,” Lin Feng nodded.

He left them, heading to a quiet room and then going into his own world.

—

Up in the sky, Lin Feng created a pavilion where he could

practice cultivation without being disturbed. He could also study his own world there.

In the outside world, five hundred years had passed. In Lin Feng's world, time initially passed 800% faster and gradually it increased to more than 1000%. Therefore, thousands of years had passed inside. It had already turned into a continent. There were many cities and cultivators everywhere. In Lin Feng's previous life, five thousand years were long enough for a country to become a civilization with a culture. It was a very, very long time.

Those years, Lin Feng helped his Saints become stronger. He had them do various things to improve his own world, and took them as disciples.

Chapter 2488: Ruler's Godly Imprint

Lin Feng sat down cross-legged in his pavilion. In his world, he was a god. Now, he could do almost anything in his world.

He had changed it a lot, the Qi in his own world had become mysterious and powerful. In front of him, there were all sorts of strengths, which turned into rivers and flowed towards him.

“Condense!” said Lin Feng. The rivers collided together and condensed. Dazzling golden lights appeared in the sky. They looked like lights of righteousness, noble as a God’s halo.

Lin Feng was god in his world, but his original strengths hadn’t all reached the maximum level. They were just extremely pure and had turned into a special god’s strength. Even if the strengths were not at the maximum level, they were still powerful, and they increased as Lin Feng became stronger. As he studied, his original strengths also became more powerful.

These years, Lin Feng had generated more and more clones. They practiced cultivation everywhere, and they studied all sorts of things. Only his real body practiced things which were really specific to him, including things related to his own world.

He also wanted to create a godly spell. He had started, but it was still rudimentary, he hadn’t managed to finish it. However, after the recent battles, he had almost died, and it had allowed him to understand how to make time stop. Therefore, he had decided to meditate in seclusion. If Hou Qing Lin and the others hadn’t come to visit him, he wouldn’t have come out.

But he had had a great time with his friends. They had talked about all sorts of things, and it had also helped him understand a few things, so it had been beneficial for his cultivation!

Perseverance was important. In the world of cultivation, people were usually cold and detached, emotionless, they only cared about

their own interests. Lin Feng had gone through so much in life, but he had never become emotionless or heartless. He had compassion, he had feelings. He was attached to his feelings, and he didn't want to give them up, so it was also a way for him to persevere. He wanted to be true to himself no matter what, he didn't want to go against his own convictions.

To progress on the path of cultivation, several things were important all along that journey. In the Star World, the god had transmitted knowledge to him because he had studied Celestial Dao. He hadn't gone against his own convictions, he was true to himself and he had received extensive knowledge and a profound scholarship. When he had become a Saint, he had decided to be true to himself too, just like Saint Emperor Freeze, who had decided to return to the source. Chu Chun Qiu had actually done the same, he had remained true to himself by going against the will of Heaven. He had become his own god, a bit like Lin Feng.

“When you understand Celestial Dao, you remain true to yourself and you can create your own self,” whispered Lin Feng. His state of mind became extremely particular, and he started dreaming.

He experienced a lot in that dream. Time passed. He studied and experienced many other people's lives. He studied all sorts of strengths, he studied the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, demon skills, the Ancient Holy Techniques, and in his dream, everything flowered briefly like the broad-leaved epiphyllum.

—

Many years passed. In his mind, Lin Feng saw many dazzling stars. Great imperial and imperial Qi appeared and intertwined. Lin Feng transformed them, they looked like ancient imprints. A chessboard made of stars appeared. They had their own pulsations, their own patterns, and yet blended into nature.

It continued for three years, but Lin Feng didn't notice that. Of course, because time was different in his world, in the outside

world, only a few months passed.

On that day, Lin Feng opened his eyes and dazzling golden lights flashed. He was surrounded by a Saint's aura. He looked solemn, his Qi looked noble, and resembled nature itself. His energies were of the highest quality.

Lin Feng's whole body had changed.

"In order to transmit a Saint's technique, you need to use your godly awareness, so nobody can steal or study my Saint's technique. If I want to transmit this one, I must transmit it using my godly awareness," he murmured. A Saint's technique had to be transmitted using godly awareness, otherwise the receiver wasn't able to grasp the details.

"I'm a god here, everything is like an imprint I created. Therefore, I will call this attack my Ruler's Godly Imprint!" he declared. The Ruler's Godly Imprint could replace the God's Sword, it was much more powerful.

When Lin Feng thought about it, he inspected the whole world, and went to the Holy Place of Xue Yue.

——

The Empire of Xue Yue had become a place with many extremely strong cultivators. It had become much bigger, too. Xue Yue was as big as a city of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. There were many Saints there. Saint Emperors were also quite common. Emperors were considered weak. There were trillions of them.

Lin Feng arrived in Xue Yue and spent some time with his family members. He also convoked the Saints of Xue Yue and taught them various things. The Saints of Xue Yue considered Lin Feng a god. They all bowed before him.

Lin Feng brought his two sons to his world. Then he attended to the Divine Wrath Shrine.

There were still many incredible battles in the Continent of the

Nine Clouds. The different influential groups of the continent were relentless. They all wanted to become stronger, and they all wanted to take advantage of those chaotic times to rise.

Lin Feng went up to a Saint of the Divine Wrath Shrine and asked, “What does the situation of the Shrines look like now?”

“Back then, the Empty Space Shrine’s alliance lost. The Empty Space Shrine wanted to use the Wind Shrine’s precious treasure. Two Saints from the Wind Shrine remained and they didn’t agree, but the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader killed them instantly. At the same time, the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader sent people to kill some others from their own alliance who didn’t agree with him.

“The other Shrines of their alliance didn’t want to offend the Empty Space Shrine’s Leader anymore. The Celestial Sealing Map was broken, the Wind Shrine’s ultimate weapon was a kind of substitute. If they continue having inner conflicts, they’ll become weaker and weaker.

“The Empty Space Shrine’s alliance had a few inner conflicts, and the Fortune Shrine attacked them a few times, but the losses were too important. Now, if the Empty Space Shrine’s alliance fights against the Fortune Shrine’s alliance, they’ll both suffer great losses. Nobody has the advantage anymore. There’s an equilibrium in the balance of power now.

“In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the influential groups are all competing. There are a few incredible cultivators, especially one of them, Chu Chun Qiu, who used to be a member of the Fortune Shrine. He’s turned into a gigantic demon; he can now destroy entire sects or clans instantly. When he does so, he absorbs their strong cultivators’ vitality. He created an incredibly powerful Sky Absorbing Saint’s Technique and can absorb people’s strength. It is said that he has already killed and absorbed the strength of billions of people, and he started five hundred years ago. Now his victims are just stronger and stronger. Many strong cultivators in the Continent of the Nine Clouds are

watching him.”

When Lin Feng heard that, he shivered. Chu Chun Qiu had decided to become a real destructive demon. He just killed anyone as long as he could become stronger. How dangerous!

“Alright, I understand,” Lin Feng nodded.

——

The news that he had stopped meditating in seclusion quickly spread. A few months later, the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts came to see Lin Feng. He asked “Lin Feng, how come you didn’t tell us you had stopped meditating in seclusion?”

Lin Feng smiled, “Brother, do you need my help?”

“Back in the days, we agreed we’d destroy our enemies, we said we would stand at the very top of the world. Now we have an opportunity, so of course I came to see you, what do you think?” said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.

Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled, he asked, “What is your idea?”

“Right now, the Fire Shrine and the others are already extremely weak. I want to attack both the Fire Shrine and the Dazzling Gold Shrine at the same time. This time, we’ll crush the Dazzling Gold Shrine and we’ll cut the Fire Shrine’s wings. What do you think?” the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts asked. Lin Feng was surprised.

“We can’t let the same thing as last time happen this time. I will send my people to the Fire Shrine to watch them. When we’re sure, we can attack,” said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts sharply.

Lin Feng sighed, his eyes glittered, and he said, “Alright, I’ll convoke the members of the Divine Wrath Shrine, let’s get ready to go to the Dazzling Gold Shrine!”

Chapter 2489: Champions Battling

The Dazzling Gold Shrine was not very lucky. They had been attacked several times, but at the same time, they didn't collapse completely. The Fire Shrine helped them survive.

Lin Feng had turned into someone else, and the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had done the same thing. They were both walking around like ordinary people near the Dazzling Gold Shrine. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' illusion abilities were really good.

"When we attack, they'll use the teleportation portals. Then, the World Clan will attack. You can waste some time. I will send some people to guard the teleportation portals, and after that, we can destroy them. Then, we can wipe the Dazzling Gold Shrine off the maps of the Continent of the Nine Clouds forever," the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts told Lin Feng telepathically.

If anyone around them had heard that, they would have been astonished. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts sounded quite casual, as if wiping a Shrine off the map of the continent was something normal.

"Alright," said Lin Feng nodded. If the Fire Shrine and their allies had given up their fortresses, they could have survived longer, but they hadn't, and in such circumstances, their enemies could attack them more easily.

When a Shrine weakened, their enemies never missed the opportunity to attack and destroy them. Now it was time to settle some accounts.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the castles in the sky. He remembered back then what the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had told them. Who would ever disdain them if they stood at the very top? Finally, it was time to rise to the very top!

“There, it’s going to start,” said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. After a short time, an incredible empty space strength emerged from a castle. Lights flashed and dashed to the skies. Someone was using the teleportation portal.

“Come out!” Suddenly, world lights rolled through the sky. People came out of world coffins, and Qi invaded the space. It happened so suddenly that the members of the Dazzling Gold Shrine were extremely nervous. Suddenly, the world coffins descended from the sky and attacked people. Many people died instantly.

More world lights emerged from the World Clan’s army and surrounded the whole Dazzling Gold Shrine. They continued slaughtering people.

They were merciless. Those were the rules of war. If they didn’t kill, they would get killed, just like the Soul Shrine back then. They had to completely annihilate their enemies, otherwise they would come back to life and then they’d be able to get their revenge, just like the World Clan. If the World Clan had been completely destroyed back then, they wouldn’t have been able to come back to life, and now they were destroying their old enemies.

In the sky, more empty space strength undulated, and the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts whispered, “They’re back, let’s go.” He turned into a beam of light and disappeared.

Lin Feng was watching with his godly awareness, so he could see everything. Very quickly, the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ people destroyed the teleportation portals of the Dazzling Gold Shrine. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was in the sky, and cast an escape-proof net of strength to seal the area. World lights glittered and formed a vortex that was the only exit.

Only the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts could have such powerful world lights, thought Lin Feng. Figures appeared all around, all strong cultivators from the Divine Wrath Shrine. They

moved quickly in all directions.

At the same time, Lin Feng flew up and landed on a castle's roof. He could see all the battles from there.

The Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader's face was deathly pale. He saw Lin Feng, who had transformed again. This time, Lin Feng's face was his real face, he returned to his normal face.

"Lin Feng, you created the Divine Wrath Shrine, why do you join hands with them to slaughter us? Aren't you afraid? After you destroy us, I think the Fortune Shrine's alliance will destroy you, and the Divine Wrath Shrine," said the Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader icily, staring at Lin Feng.

"You remember the Sky Destroying Sword in the Fortune Shrine, and the roc king's surprise attack? If I weren't lucky, I'd be dead already," said Lin Feng calmly. He even looked indifferent.

"Since it's that way, go ahead and die, then." The Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader took out the Sky Destroying Sword, a sharp Qi filling the air. The Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader flew up and threw himself at Lin Feng.

"Time, standstill!" said Lin Feng icily.

Everything stopped around him, even the destructive sword lights stopped. Lin Feng slowly walked towards the Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader. Time had stopped and he looked extremely fast.

Lin Feng released an incredible strength, millions of ancient imprints appearing. It was ruler's strength, noble and supreme. It condensed and absorbed the Qi of the earth and the sky. The ancient imprints looked like the marks of the gods.

The Dazzling Gold Shrine's Leader came back to awareness, his Sky Destroying Sword continued moving. It contained ultimate strength, and explosive power. On the ground, Saints were fighting and Qi exploded everywhere. Bodies exploded as Saints died.

“What an incredible battle. Surprisingly, he can resist an ultimate weapon!” thought the members of the Dazzling Gold Shrine on the ground. A disaster had befallen them, their Leader who had an ultimate weapon was their only hope. However, Lin Feng could resist their Leader, he was terrifying!

“Only a God can rule over the world,” said Lin Feng. He was standing in the sky, and looked like an immortal god. Heavy Ruler’s Godly Imprints kept bombarding the space.

The Dazzling Gold Shrine’s Leader felt oppressed, his heart was pounding, and he was getting more and more nervous, grasping his sword firmly for reassurance. He shouted, and the space around him became golden, but Lin Feng’s god’s strength absorbed them right away. At the same time, the Dazzling Gold Shrine’s Leader had the impression time had stopped, his sword couldn’t move forwards.

“You can’t destroy me!” shouted the Shrine’s Leader. He turned golden, looking like an ancient statue. The Ruler’s Godly Imprints bombarded his body, and he trembled. The Ruler’s Godly Imprints contained a supreme strength, including fusions of original strengths at the maximum level. Lin Feng’s Ruler’s Godly Imprints contained the strength of the ten thousand things of creation.

The golden body crackled with almost musical notes as it began to break. The Dazzling Gold Shrine’s Leader shouted desperately, “No...!”

His body exploded into a million pieces. The river of imprints swept him away and he vanished.

A Shrine’s leader had just died.

People on the ground were astonished, their hearts pounding. Their leader was dead!

“What kind of attack was that? It was so explosive! He can now kill Shrines’ leaders, cultivators who stand at the top of the

Continent of the Nine Clouds!” cried the members of the Dazzling Gold Shrine. They realized it was their judgement day.

Lin Feng took the Sky Destroying Sword. He glanced around and continued walking forwards. He released Ruler’s Godly Imprints into the area around him. A peerless cultivator didn’t have time to escape, and exploded. The peerless cultivator of the World Clan facing him was astonished, staring at Lin Feng and remaining motionless. Lin Feng’s strength was too incredible!

Lin Feng’s attack was supreme. It was already more powerful than a peerless Saint’s attack!

“Go and clear up the mess,” murmured Lin Feng. The World Clan and the Divine Wrath Shrine had joined hands to destroy the Dazzling Gold Shrine, and the Dazzling Gold Shrine’s Leader was dead.

In a short time, the Dazzling Gold Shrine was wiped off the maps of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts landed next to Lin Feng and said, “I’ve always known you’d become that strong. I am not going to destroy the teleportation portals, then. We can use them and continue.”

“Don’t worry. Pick everything up,” said Lin Feng calmly. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts nodded. He knew that after that battle, Lin Feng would become a legendary cultivator of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“Father!” Zhe Tian’s silhouette flickered and he arrived next to Lin Feng, looking pleasantly surprised. His father was so strong!

“Let’s go,” said Lin Feng. They left the Dazzling Gold Shrine which had been completely razed to the ground. That was one less legendary Shrine in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

——

The battle at the Dazzling Gold Shrine amazed the entire Continent of the Nine Clouds. It became a symbol, a sign that a

nightmare had started for the Shrines.

The Forbidden Body had shown up, and everything in the continent changed.

Lin Feng quickly became a legend in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. People started considering him as a god. Nobody had thought that someone could become so strong, so quickly. He had made a great show of his talents, he was the Forbidden Person. Nobody could compete with him!

Chapter 2490: Decisive Battle

The Fire Shrine's alliance was shaken. The Wind Shrine had been destroyed, now the Dazzling Gold Shrine had been destroyed. The Divine Wrath Shrine had risen and their leader was considered a god by many. He could kill Shrines' leaders who had ultimate weapons. The Seven Shrines' alliance members who remained were panic-stricken, scared their judgement day had come.

The five Shrines' leaders gathered in the Fire Shrine, they didn't know what to think.

"What should we do now?" asked the Thunder Shrine's Leader after a long time. He was an incredible cultivator, but at that moment, he looked scared and dispirited. Were they going to be destroyed as well?

"I invited the strongest cultivators of the Roc Clan to gather here. Let's wait for them to arrive," said the Fire Shrine's Leader calmly. "We should give up and escape."

"How could I give up my Shrine? We're extremely powerful," said the Demon Shrine's Leader icily. "I want to fight!"

"We're five Shrines, we still have five ultimate weapons. With the members of the Roc Clan, we are definitely stronger," said the Ice and Snow Shrine's Leader.

The eyes of the Empty Space Shrine's and the Thunder Shrine's Leaders glittered. They had to come up with a decision, but in any case, they had already reached a point of no return.

"According to rumors, Lin Feng has already become stronger than peerless Saints. How could we win against him?!" said the Thunder Shrine's Leader.

"Eh? He has completely transcended worldliness and become a God?" said the Fire Shrine's Leader looking at him. "You think that if a god wants to kill you, you can just escape and hide?"

Besides, do you really believe he could have become a god? Impossible!

“He’s just a strong peerless Saint because he fused lots of special original strengths together, and then he created some powerful attacks. As long as he’s a peerless Saint, we can kill him! The thing is that he can almost make time stop, we just have to be very careful. The problem is when he manages to use that technique on us, he can easily attack us while we’re powerless, we just have to be careful and we won’t end up like the Dazzling Gold Shrine’s Leader.”

Everybody nodded. They had to fight!

——

The news that the Fire Shrine’s alliance wanted to have a final battle against the Divine Wrath Shrine and the Fortune Shrine’s alliance quickly spread throughout the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Everybody in the Continent of the Nine Clouds was watching the Fire Shrine.

The final battle of the Continent of the Nine Clouds: who would finish at the top?

Of course, the Fortune Shrine’s alliance and the Divine Wrath Shrine heard about it, too.

Lin Feng was in the former territory of the Fortune Shrine. There were many strong cultivators in a palace there. When Lin Feng arrived, he saw the Fortune Shrine’s Leader and the others, their fortune robes were fluttering in the wind. The Fortune Shrine’s Leader and the Diviner glanced at one another. Something unusual was going on, everybody could feel it.

“Eh?” Lin Feng frowned and slowly walked forwards. “What’s the matter, Teacher?”

“Nothing. Lin Feng, don’t get involved. I have a bad premonition. My visions are ominous,” said the Diviner.

The Fortune Shrine's Leader looked nervous. He looked glum and said icily, "Move back."

The Diviner looked at the Leader and said indifferently, "Leader, please revoke your order."

"Insolent!" shouted the Fortune Shrine's Leader icily. His eyes were filled with killing intent. He jumped forwards, the Diviner groaned with pain and took steps backwards.

Lin Feng was startled and asked, "Teacher, what happened?"

"Lin Feng, stay away from the Fortune Shrine!" said the Diviner, smiling at Lin Feng. Someone looked at him icily.

"I would love to know how well you hid your real strength!" said the Fortune Shrine's Leader. He jumped forwards and threw his hand at the Diviner.

"Stop!" shouted Lin Feng icily, his facial expression changing darkly. "Time, standstill!"

Time stopped. Lin Feng moved towards the Diviner at the speed of light, landing next to him and threw his hand at the Leader's hand which was moving towards the Diviner.

Time became normal again. People were stunned. How could there be an internal conflict at the time of a decisive battle?

"Good boy, Mara-Deva! Mandate of Heaven, die!" shouted the Fortune Shrine's Leader icily. Destiny strength surrounded the Diviner, and he screamed, he couldn't compete with the Fortune Shrine's Leader.

"I am not afraid of death! That being the case, I hope that you can go against the principles of Heaven, Leader!" said the Diviner. His silhouette became illusory, he could die at any second.

Lin Feng was furious. He stopped time again and moved like the wind. He released Ruler's Godly Imprints, which turned into sharp swords and shot towards the Fortune Shrine's Leader.

Time had thoroughly stopped at that moment. Lin Feng took out a sharp sword which shot towards the Fortune Shrine's Leader. The Fortune Shrine's Leader was looking at Lin Feng calmly, he didn't resist.

"Lin Feng!" shouted voices furiously. Lin Feng's hand struck the Fortune Shrine's Leader's shoulder, which burst apart, blood going everywhere. However, the Leader was still staring at Lin Feng.

"If you kill me, then it's the will of Heaven, and I won't be mad at you," said the Fortune Shrine's Leader calmly.

Lin Feng shouted furiously, "What is going on?!"

"Take it!" said the Fortune Shrine's Leader, smiling at Lin Feng. He gave Lin Feng something and said, "Everybody, I am not going to join the decisive battle. From now on, the members of the Fortune Shrine can listen to Lin Feng! Respect Lin Feng like you respect me! I also hope that the Earth Shrine and the Celestial Sound Shrine can join hands with the Divine Wrath Shrine, and that you will be able to destroy the Fire Shrine!"

Lin Feng remained silent. He took what the leader had given to him and turned around, looking at the Diviner.

"Don't go," said the Diviner, shaking his head.

"I don't want anything to happen to you, Teacher," said Lin Feng. He rose up in the air and ordered, "Let's go!"

Everybody followed him, including the members of the Fortune Shrine. They all flew towards the Fire Shrine.

People in Fortune City looked at the cultivators in the sky and shivered. Was it time for the decisive battle?

——

The Fire Shrine's strong cultivators had already gathered in a battle formation, waiting for them. A strong wind started blowing, and the atmosphere became oppressive. Every cultivator who

wasn't involved fled. It was far too dangerous there!

“Die!” said Lin Feng. The strong cultivators behind him didn't dare move too fast. If one person was too far out in the front, they could get surrounded easily.

“Great Celestial Seal!” said someone. The earth and sky seemed to freeze. Everybody found it difficult to move. It was the power of an ultimate weapon.

“Time, standstill!” said Lin Feng. All the attacks stopped moving. The old ox and Lin Feng destroyed the attacks which had stopped in the sky.

Time became normal again. Zi Zhu said, “Time, freeze!”

The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine's alliance had started moving again, but now they stopped again. Lin Feng looked at a peerless Saint aggressively, like an angry god.

That figure turned into a beam of light, the Ruler's Godly Imprints made space tremble and surrounded that cultivator.

“That's...” When the crowd saw Lin Feng's attack, they were astonished, he looked like an almighty god. Everybody was shaking violently, they didn't dare get too close to him.

“Thunder Shrine Leader, attack him with your hammer!” said the Fire Shrine Leader. The Thunder Shrine Leader was surrounded by celestial lightning, a terrifying lightning strength thundered around him.

“Empty Space Shrine Leader, let's join hands!” said the Ice and Snow Shrine Leader. They both flew towards a peerless Saint of the Divine Wrath Shrine.

“Empty space, freeze!”

“Great Celestial Seal!” shouted the two cultivators.

Then they stopped, the Empty Space Shrine's Leader disappeared and reappeared in front of someone. He threw his fist at him, and

the space broke around him. A cultivator also released an ice and frost attack. The Ice and Frost Shrine's Leader had also used his terrifying ultimate weapon and killed a strong cultivator. When the leaders of two Shrines joined hands, their power was explosive.

“Earth Shrine Leader, fight against the Thunder Shrine Leader. Celestial Sound Shrine Leader, fight against the Fire Shrine Leader; Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon, fight against the Demon Shrine Leader. Zi Zhu and brother Ox, follow me,” said Lin Feng, moving towards the Ice and Frost Shrine and the Empty Space Shrine Leaders.

Zi Zhu and the old ox followed him. They were both incredible warriors. With Lin Feng, they could probably destroy their enemies easily!

At that moment, whistles from extreme speed could be heard. In the distance, a group of gigantic rocs appeared. The leader of the group was the roc king.

“We knew you'd come!” World lights flashed in the sky. A group of godly dragons appeared, King Dragon leading them.

“King Roc, you thought you were using them and in the end they used you, how ridiculous!” said King Dragon mockingly. The roc king's eyes looked sharp at the humiliation. He was the fastest creature in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, nobody dared make fun of him. Who would dare fight against him alone?!

Chapter 2491: Acknowledge Allegiance

People on the ground saw the members of the Roc Clan and the Dragon Clan fighting, the two great Animal Clans were also participating in this battle. The fate of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was at stake!

Lin Feng, Zi Zhu, and the old ox continued flying towards the Empty Space Shrine Leader and the Ice and Frost Shrine Leader. Those five cultivators already held the lives countless powerful cultivators in their hands. They were dangerous!

The Empty Space Shrine and the Ice and Snow Shrine Leaders watched their three enemies. They couldn't help but withdraw in fear.

“Curse!” said Lin Feng. Cursing strength appeared in front of him, and he also created a few clones. His cursing strength turned into a river, corroding the enemies' luck and life. Combining cursing strength with water made it flow with even more power. Everybody around felt sick.

“Empty Space Shrine Leader, don't you have two ultimate weapons?! Take them out!” said the Ice and Snow Shrine Leader.

“The Celestial Sealing Map is broken. I can't fix it, and I didn't manage to modify the other one, so I can't use it properly,” said the Empty Space Shrine Leader, annoyed. Time strength appeared around them as the old ox attacked.

“Zi Zhu!” called Lin Feng. Zi Zhu understood, and time froze. Lin Feng and the old ox attacked at the same time.

“Great Celestial Seal!” shouted the Ice and Snow Shrine Leader coldly. His ultimate weapon floated out in front of him.

“Break!” shouted Lin Feng, releasing his Ruler's Godly Imprints, which seemed like they could break anything. The Great Celestial Seal undulated and crackled under Lin Feng's overlapping attacks.

At the same time, he continued moving forward, looking like an ancient god. Who could compete with him?

The Empty Space Shrine Leader was frightened, and released empty space strength to surround himself. He was trying to penetrate into another space.

“Time, standstill!” said Lin Feng. Everything stopped moving around him. Lin Feng charged at the Empty Space Shrine Leader. He landed in front of the man and released his Ruler’s Godly Imprints again.

The Empty Space Shrine Leader’s face turned deathly pale. Time became normal again, and he immediately released empty space, trying to isolate himself from the outside world.

The Ruler’s Godly Imprints smashed into the space around Lin Feng with brutal explosions, space trembled and the sky seemed about to collapse.

The empty space was shattered. The Empty Space Shrine Leader looked terrified, he couldn’t escape.

“Time Condensation!” Zi Zhu attacked the Empty Space Shrine Leader as well, which slowed the latter down. At the same time, the old ox and Lin Feng accelerated as Lin Feng released fast strength. At this moment, Lin Feng was much, much faster than the Empty Space Shrine Leader.

“Destroy!” Lin Feng continued attacking the Empty Space Shrine Leader with imprints. The Empty Space Shrine Leader tried to isolate himself in another space again. However, his empty space strength broke apart instantly. He was at a dead end, and had nowhere to escape to. The peerless god’s strength surrounded him, his body exploded into a billion pieces, and he vanished.

He was dead!

The hearts of those watching pounded violently in astonishment. Lin Feng’s strength had become extreme. Nobody could fight

against him alone anymore. With the help of Zi Zhu and the old ox, it was even more incredible, the trio looked like killing gods. Nobody could stop them!

“What should we do?!” the Thunder Shrine Leader cried out while attacking, the Earth Shrine Leader blocking him.

Another Shrine Leader had died. How tragic!

He turned around and saw the Fire Shrine Leader and the Demon Shrine Leader. They didn’t want to fight anymore, they knew they could die anytime. Their enemies were too strong.

What he saw made him speechless. The strong cultivators who had charged forth under a hail of attacks were all members of the Empty Space Shrine and the Thunder Shrine. The three other Shrines were trying to escape. They didn’t fight!

“Back!” shouted the Thunder Shrine Leader furiously. He realized that apart from him, only two peerless Saints were left among the strong cultivators of the Thunder Shrine!

“Haha! How awesome!” shouted the Earth Shrine Leader happily. They could finally compete with their enemies!

“Back? It’s a battle to the death! The leader of the Continent of the Nine Clouds will be determined at the end of this battle!” said the Fire Shrine Leader coldly.

The Thunder Shrine Leader was furious and shouted, “Qiong Yang, what is that supposed to mean?”

“After this battle, we’ll know who the new leader of the Continent of the Nine Clouds is!” stated the Fire Shrine Leader coldly.

Those watching were appalled; he was clearly in a position of weakness and he dared act that arrogantly!?

“During the battle in the ancient past, a god died. Now it’s different; a god is going to rise! A Forbidden Person is rising, but

just who is going to become a god?!” shouted the Fire Shrine Leader.

His voice reverberated far, far away. The Fire Shrine Leader was extraordinarily old, a very ancient Shrine leader, just like the Fortune Shrine Leader. They were both incredibly strong. But Lin Feng, a Forbidden Person, was rising at the speed of light. Why was the Fire Shrine Leader still so confident and arrogant?!

At that moment, the crowd’s attention turned to the Ice and Snow Shrine Leader, who had arrived next to him.

“Are you ready?” asked the Fire Shrine Leader.

“I’ve been practicing the godly skills for such a long time, all for today, right? I will do my best to stand at the very top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” said the Ice and Snow Shrine calmly.

“We’ve been patient for so many years! Since we weren’t talented enough to become gods, we have to rely on our own strength to make things change in this world! From now on, you and I will become the gods of this world!” shouted the Fire Shrine Leader. His hand streaked across the sky, and his flames started burning. Manifold flames dazzled and sparkled around him, a magnificent sight. His Qi was as hot as the sun.

He was fire itself!

The Ice and Snow Shrine Leader did the same thing, his hand streaked across the sky. His body turned into ice, becoming almost invisible. His body was extremely cold, cold enough to freeze time and space!

Patterns appeared between them and condensed. They turned into eight dazzling trigrams: yin and yang!

“Yin, Yang!” the crowd shook violently. The existence of the ten thousand things of creation was closely related to yin and yang. They were the source of all things!

The earth and sky, the sun and the moon, coldness and heat, men and women, everything had a dual nature because of yin and yang. The Fire Shrine Leader had studied yang strength while the Ice and Snow Shrine Leader had studied yin strength, and now they were fusing their strengths together!

“Hurry up and stop them!” shouted the old ox. His facial expression had changed drastically.

Lin Feng was stupefied and shouted furiously, “Time, stop!”

Lin Feng bombarded that area with a choral attack. The Eight Trigrams pattern flashed and defied his power. He could only grimace.

“It’s useless. Everything exists because of yin and yang. Cultivators have to fuse two sorts of original strengths together to become peerless Saints, probably due to the nature of life, to yin and yang! Life and death, fire and water, everything is yin and yang! We’ve both been practicing yin and yang strengths for countless years. We knew we couldn’t become gods on our own, but we also knew that ancient gods had left yin and yang godly skills and techniques, so we decided to study yin and yang strengths together! Thanks to you, the Forbidden Person, we finally managed to master the technique! Now we can modify yin and yang strength, and from now on, we’ll be the new gods of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!” the Fire Shrine and Ice and Snow Shrine Leaders said in eerie unison.

They sounded exactly the same, they had turned into one person. It was astonishing to see. Just for more strength, they had decided to learn a technique which defied the laws of the world. Those two Shrines’ leaders didn’t care about anything anymore, they were willing to do anything to become stronger!

“You two are good actors. You didn’t want other people to understand your plans. I see, who would have thought that you were insane!” said the Earth Shrine Leader, pulling a long face.

The two Shrine Leaders glanced at each other and smiled. “We chose to walk the path of cultivation, and the most important thing for a cultivator is to become the strongest one in the world! The Forbidden Body appeared in the world, which means that a god is missing! If he dies, I’ll become a god!”

The two Shrine Leaders were fusing together. An incredible strength surrounded them and began to expand. Yin and Yang were fusing together in their new body, a perfect fusion.

The Fire Shrine and the Ice and Snow Shrine cultivators were totally dumbfounded. They had no idea such a thing would happen.

A strange light appeared in the sky, a river of yin and yang strengths appeared. Qi transformed and penetrated into their bodies, and they joined together.

The fusion of the two cultivators opened his eyes. There was a new body, a new Qi. That new cultivator didn’t look as aggressive as the Shrine Leaders. He looked every bit as incredible as Lin Feng, like a king and a god.

“From now on, I’m a supreme cultivator, I’m Icefire! I’m the supreme cultivator of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!” said the man, smiling proudly.

“I’ll spare the lives of those who obey my orders,” said Icefire regally. He wanted everybody to acknowledge allegiance to him. He would forget and not bear recriminations against those who submitted, no matter whether they were their enemies in the past or not.

Everybody remained silent. Icefire smiled. People still didn’t seem to understand, it seemed?

Icefire looked at someone and flashed away.

“Die!” Icefire pointed at the peerless Saint, and suddenly yin and yang Qi turned into an incredible dragon. The man’s face turned

deathly pale. The yin and yang dragon absorbed him, and he immediately perished.

A peerless Saint had just died in the blink of an eye!

As the cultivator disappeared, Icefire glanced around with his godly awareness. He looked like a conquering hero, wanting the whole world to serve him as his subjects.

“Greetings, supreme cultivator!” cried out the members of the Fire Shrine and the Ice and Snow Shrine as they submitted. Their leaders had fused together, so they could accept him as a new leader without qualms.

“Greetings, supreme cultivator!” After that, the members of the Empty Space Shrine acknowledged allegiance to him.

“Greetings, supreme cultivator!” The Thunder Shrine cultivators also bowed. Icefire turned his eyes on the Thunder Shrine Leader, whose face stiffened. The yin and yang Qi made him lower his head, and he said, “Greetings, supreme cultivator Icefire!”

Chapter 2492: Listen to My Orders

“Haha, good!” laughed Icefire, glancing at the crowd and cackling gleefully. He said to the crowd, “From now on, everybody must obey me! I am the new king of the Continent of the Nine Clouds! Only one system will exist now in the Continent of the Nine Clouds!”

How ambitious! He wants one system in the Continent of the Nine Clouds! He wants all the Shrines to submit and become his subjects! He wants to be the only ruler of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!, thought the Thunder Shrine Leader. The two leaders had made great efforts for such a long time, all for this moment.

The members of the Fire Shrine alliance didn’t dare go against the will of Icefire. Now, he wanted to make the members of the Fortune Shrine alliance submit too!

Icefire slowly turned to Lin Feng and the others, and said coldly. “Apart from Lin Feng and the members of the Fortune Shrine, you others can submit and I won’t kill you.”

He was definitely going to kill Lin Feng, who had a Forbidden Body, as a god couldn’t let Lin Feng live. The Fire Shrine leader was one of the oldest Shrines’ leaders, he had heard about the battle of the ancient past, and before the god of the Fortune Shrine had died, he had left a prophecy. If someone with a Forbidden Body appeared someday, they’d have the potential to become a god, so no Shrine would let him live. However, what if the Forbidden Person died? Then who would become the god?

“Lin Feng, yin and yang are the source of the five elements. The power of yin and yang Qi is almighty. He’s already stronger than a peerless Saint! We must think of a solution to escape,” the old ox said to Lin Feng telepathically.

Lin Feng’s heart twitched but he said calmly. “If anyone wants to surrender and pay allegiance to him, I won’t blame them.”

“Bullshit! That thing is not even a human anymore. I would never surrender and pay allegiance to him! I prefer battling to death!” said the Earth Shrine Leader coldly.

Icefire smiled sinisterly and said. “Wait for your destruction then.”

“Icefire,” spoke up Zi Zhu suddenly. Icefire glanced at him. “The world is not as simple as you think. Do you think you have no enemies anymore just because you understand yin and yang Qi? Do you think you can do anything?” said Zi Zhu calmly.

Icefire glared at him and replied, “I’d love to see who can compete with me!”

“If I lose this battle, no matter what you guys do, I won’t blame you. And if you don’t want to serve him as his subject, then leave while I’m fighting,” said Lin Feng. He rose up in the air and retreated as fast as he could, disappearing and reappearing far away in the horizon.

“Where are you going?” asked Icefire, smiling coldly. He wanted to kill Lin Feng, how could he let him escape?

The crowd quickly realized Lin Feng was trying to buy time to protect the others!

“Let’s go!” shouted Zi Zhu. They left. Nobody dared stop them. After all, if Icefire wasn’t there, Lin Feng’s team would have been stronger!

Lin Feng and Icefire suddenly appeared high up in the sky. Lin Feng said coldly. “Time, standstill!”

Time stopped, and he threw himself at Icefire. However, his enemy’s yin and yang Qi surged, modifying space around him. All sorts of strengths were inside his energies!

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. An incredible amount of cursing Qi turned into a river and flowed out. At the same time, his god Qi turned into dazzling Ruler’s Godly Imprints, descending

from the sky and oppressing everything.

Icefire smiled coldly. His Qi was also a noble king Qi. He acknowledged that the forbidden strength was incredible. No wonder peerless Saints couldn't withstand a single attack. The Forbidden Person was truly incredibly strong. However, he had practiced yin and yang Qi, and he was stronger than peerless Saints as well. His yin and yang Qi attack collided with Lin Feng's Ruler's Godly Imprints.

The yin and yang Qi exploded, turning into two threads of energies moving left and right. They morphed into dragon heads containing millions of different kinds of strengths. The Ruler's Godly Imprints gradually broke apart, and the yin and yang Qi continued moving forwards.

"Slow!" said Lin Feng. He retreated quickly, grimacing.

"You've become so strong, that's quite rare. However, you will die today, it's your destiny!" declared Icefire arrogantly. Ice energy froze the space around them, he used the Great Celestial Seal and fused it together with yin and yang Qi.

Icefire flickered, he moved as fast as lightning and charged at Lin Feng. A strange kind of strength emerged around his body. After that, Icefire had the impression he was being taken to another world, a misty world.

"Eh?" Icefire didn't understand. "Splendid. The Forbidden Body has a world! I really want to absorb you and turn my body into a Forbidden Body!"

Icefire had practiced for so many years, both leaders had practiced that set of skills for countless centuries. They had gone through so many hardships. Lin Feng had been talented since birth. He was jealous, and he wanted to kill Lin Feng!

"Die!" An incredible amount of cursing strength turned into an earth-shattering ocean, roaring as it hurtled towards Icefire. Lin

Feng was even stronger in his own world!

“Yin and yang Qi are the most original source of energies in the world, even in your world!” shouted Icefire furiously. He gazed at the incoming ocean, and ice and fire dragons emerged from his body. At the same time, he continued moving toward Lin Feng and threw his fist at him.

Lin Feng released Ruler’s Godly Imprints to collide with him. However, Icefire suddenly turned around and threw his fist out behind him. There was a tremendous rumble, and the whole world around them shook, on the verge of collapse. Many of the people living there sensed something abnormal was happening.

“Lin Feng, your illusion technique is powerful, but with my current strength, you can’t do much against me! I understand now because when our fists collided a moment before, your real body turned into an empty space illusion, you probably fused illusion and empty space original strengths together to create that attack. When people are fighting against you, they don’t notice it because they’re never prepared well enough against such a fusion of attacks,” said Icefire. One of his eyes was filled with yang energy and the other one with yin energy. They could absorb all sorts of strength.

“You’re strong here, but today, I will destroy your world!” shouted Icefire, spitting out the strength of the earth and sky. An incredible amount of energies struck the fabric of the world with soul-quaking thunder.

Lin Feng was furious, releasing time strength to move faster. At the same time, he also released time strength to slow down his enemy. His God’s Sword appeared in his left hand as he moved as fast as lightning.

He looked like a fearless god, not caring about anything anymore, this battle was too important. His body started to burn with power.

Lin Feng released a peerless strength, the true power of a Forbidden Person. Icefire's yin and yang Qi swirled into a celestial curtain which could destroy anything. Both cultivators' attacks collided, and at that moment, Lin Feng disappeared.

The whole world shook violently. Many people raised their heads and looked at the sky, not understanding what was going on. Were gods fighting?

A hole appeared in the sky, and Lin Feng coughed up blood. Each time the world shook, his body shuddered. He was injured. However, he continued fighting this crazy battle.

Icefire could see Lin Feng's images everywhere in the sky. He was shocked, as his own robe had blood stains on it now. His heart shook, realizing Lin Feng had gone berserk, and was terrifyingly strong.

Lin Feng released cursing strength to corrode away Icefire's life. Icefire wasn't badly injured yet, but Lin Feng was going insane, so he had to use his full strength. He had to create the best yin and yang attack he could to protect himself. That time strength was still influencing his speed, otherwise, Lin Feng wouldn't have been able to pose a threat to him!

On top of that, in this world, Lin Feng's strength was multiplied!

"Die, die, die!" shouted a voice. The whole world shuddered. People in the palace of Xue Yue were nervous as they looked at the sky. There was only one possibility: Lin Feng, the god of the world, was fighting against someone, and his enemy was extremely strong!

Thunder crashed, and Qi descended from the sky. The ground was shaking nonstop, and many buildings came crashing down.

Finally, some people heard someone shout, "Piss off!", and the world began to calm down.

In the outside world, Icefire had been driven out of Lin Feng's world, and Lin Feng had disappeared. He grunted angrily, his face pale. He looked at his chest, where there was a huge wound with blood dripping down, death and cursing strength infecting it. It was incredible, the strength of the Forbidden Body was still corroding him!

He pulled a long face and looked around coldly. "Lin Feng, you're insane. Your injury is worse than mine! We'll see how long you can hold on! My yin and yang Qi is corroding your world and your body. You'll die sooner or later!

"Obey me, surrender and pay allegiance to me! Everybody, search the Continent of the Nine Clouds and look for Lin Feng's traces!" shouted Icefire angrily. The members of the Fire Shrine were shaking. Icefire hadn't managed to kill Lin Feng, and he had managed to escape. How strong! However, Icefire had still defeated him, and forced Lin Feng to flee!

Chapter 2493: The New Situation of the Continent of the Nine Clouds

Icefire had appeared in the world, defeated Lin Feng, and all the Shrines had acknowledged allegiance to him. It shook the entire continent.

Lin Feng and his allies had lost the decisive battle, Icefire had won. The Fire Shrine and Ice and Snow Shrine Leaders had fused together after studying yin and yang.

The very next day, Icefire proclaimed himself king of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Even the Supreme Animal World was afraid.

The Roc Clan and the Dragon Clan had also participated in the decisive battle. If Lin Feng hadn't fought against Icefire, many people wouldn't have been able to escape, and would have died.

However, Icefire still terrified most people in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The news that the Fortune Shrine had disappeared spread everywhere in the continent. They were now in hiding. Everybody understood that they had no choice. With the insane supreme cultivator Icefire in the world, people couldn't do anything, since the Fortune Shrine wasn't willing to submit.

On the fifth day, the Earth Shrine and the Celestial Sound Shrine Leaders went to the Fire Shrine to acknowledge allegiance to Icefire.

On the sixth day, the news that Icefire had taken back control of the Fire Shrine spread in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He wanted to make the Fire Shrine the strongest Shrine in the world.

On the seventh day, the influential groups of the Continent of the Nine Clouds chased the World Clan's members and captured a peerless Saint, joining hands and killing him. However, everybody knew that Icefire wanted to kill Lin Feng above all else, and he

gave everybody the order to capture people who were related to Lin Feng to force him out. He was ready to do anything, regardless of the price.

At the same time, people were fighting everywhere in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Shrines had ceased to exist except in name, but their members continued fighting. The influential groups also started fighting to conquer territories and become stronger.

Icefire didn't care about such minor events, he just wanted to be the strongest cultivator in the world. Nobody dared attack his people. People didn't know about the battles in the ancient past, but they knew about the battle which had propelled Icefire to the rank of strongest cultivator in the Continent of the Nine Clouds: the King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

Icefire was wildly ambitious. He also wanted the Buddha Shrine, the Demon Shrine, and the Life Shrine to submit and pay allegiance to him. They couldn't go against his will. He created the Supreme Shrine and built a Supreme Shrine palace. He organized a ceremony on a flight of stairs with a thousand steps. He stood at the very top and looked down at the crowd and the Shrine Leaders among them.

"I am not the King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. That's the destiny of the continent! I will become a real god!" shouted Icefire grandly. He was in a good mood.

People shouted back, "Congratulations, supreme cultivator Icefire!"

"No need to be polite," said Icefire, waving his hands and smiling. He frowned suddenly and shouted furiously, "Why isn't the Demon Shrine Leader here?"

People frowned. The Demon Shrine Leader wasn't there?

Icefire was at the apex of his power, nobody could resist him!

Someone slowly flew up in the air. He was wearing a demon robe. He looked at Icefire and said slowly, “Today, the Demon Shrine Leader officially paid respects to his master! At the same time, he invites everybody to come and congratulate him! Everybody is here, so everybody can go! Supreme Cultivator Icefire, you can also go if you wish!”

“Insolent!” shouted someone furiously. However, that person’s expression didn’t change.

Icefire frowned. “I think the Demon Shrine Leader’s behavior is strange. Whom could he acknowledge allegiance to, apart from me? I’m curious to see who can still compete with me in the Continent of the Nine Clouds!”

“Bring those people here first,” said Icefire coldly. Two people were brought over. Those people were from the Divine Wrath Shrine, one of them was Zi Zhu.

“Today, I’ll kill you first, and then I’ll go to the Demon Shrine personally,” said Icefire glancing at Zi Zhu.

Zi Zhu turned to Icefire, looking fearless. He said icily, “Will you dare kill me? Do you know who my teacher is?”

“Eh?” When the crowd heard Zi Zhu, their faces changed, looking amused. Zi Zhu was a member of the Divine Wrath Shrine, formerly part of the Three Great Alliances, and used to be the leader of the Black Bamboo Alliance. He had a teacher? How strong was his teacher?

“Who?” asked Icefire, unimpressed.

“Master Icefire, you really think you’re the king of the Continent of the Nine Clouds? You’re really funny,” said Zi Zhu, equally unmoved. “These years, all the Shrines ruled over the Continent of the Nine Clouds, but have you all forgotten about Sealed Imprint Mountain in the Lost Country?”

“Feng Mo the supreme cultivator!” the crowd murmured. Sealed

Imprint Mountain had incredibly strong cultivators in the ancient past Few people knew how strong that guy really was.

“I’m Feng Mo’s disciple, Zi Zhu! If we needed a king of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, my teacher would have come out already, you are far from being able to compete with him! The only thing is that he didn’t really care!

“Now, however, it is imminent! My teacher made me come out because a god may have to be chosen. He might come out too. You keep chasing Lin Feng, you want to kill the Forbidden Body, but did you know Teacher Feng Mo supports Lin Feng? He helped him become stronger! When he becomes strong enough, there will be the real decisive battle between them! You think you’re qualified to compete with my teacher?” Zi Zhu challenged him calmly.

The crowd shivered. How strong was Feng Mo?

“I practiced the yin and yang godly transformation skill, how could your teacher compete with me?” Icefire rebuked him proudly.

“My teacher can seal gods and demons! He controls the strength of the ten thousand things of creation. Nobody knows how many bodies my teacher has in the world! Do you really think all the strongest cultivators in the Continent of the Nine Clouds were the peerless cultivators who participated? If I hadn’t come out, who would have known about me?” Zi Zhu huffed. “Today, if I die, my teacher will destroy the Supreme Shrine!”

Icefire remained silent for a few seconds before answering. “I won’t kill you, then. Since your teacher intends to show up in the world again, I’ll wait for him. Send him back!”

Zi Zhu stayed alive, astonishing everyone. Nobody had thought that so many incredible things would happen. Lin Feng had risen, Icefire had appeared, the Demon Shrine Leader had a new teacher, Feng Mo was going to come to the Continent of the Nine Clouds... the Forbidden Body had really attracted some incredible things.

Icefire had become a conqueror too early. Nothing was decided!

Icefire gazed into the distance. His eyes glittered, and he said detachedly, "I'm going to the Demon Shrine!"

He flew away and disappeared, faster than the crowd could see. The crowd didn't leave with him, but they all still wondered... what was going to happen in the Demon Shrine?

The crowd waited for a long time. After several days, a lone figure descended from the sky: Icefire. He looked grim and detached as he smiled coldly. "Seems like I won't be lonely on the path to becoming a god!"

He rolled up his sleeves and promptly left again.

Everyone understood that the Demon Shrine Leader's teacher was someone who could compete with Icefire.

After seven days, the Demon Shrine organized a banquet and invited everybody. People didn't dare offend him, so they off they went. They all felt pressured, especially the Shrine Leaders. Despite their positions, they now were under pressure and felt powerless. They could just manage to get by swallowing insults and humiliations. All this was one of the reasons why they didn't want the Forbidden Person to live!

The Forbidden Person hadn't become powerful enough yet, but Icefire and the Demon Shrine Leader were already competing!

One month later, Feng Mo from the Sealed Imprint Mountain of the Lost Country landed in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He went straight to the Supreme Shrine and took Zi Zhu away. The Continent of the Nine Clouds was shaken once again. Now there were three potential kings in the Continent of

the Nine Clouds!

At the same time, everybody was looking for Lin Feng, especially Icefire. He had to kill Lin Feng, the Forbidden Person!

The Demon Shrine was also looking for Lin Feng.

Feng Mo also sent people to look for Lin Feng!

However, Lin Feng had completely disappeared...

——

There were two people standing at the top of a mountain. One of them asked, “Haven’t you found him yet?”

“I can’t find him, he’s completely disappeared.”

“Can you contact him using the jade talisman?”

“It’s useless, no reply.”

“His friends are optimistic.” the one who had just spoken continued moving.

Icefire was at the top of a flight of stairs as he asked coldly. “Haven’t you found him or his traces?”

“Supreme Cultivator, there is nothing. Lin Feng is good at disguising himself. He can easily pretend he’s someone else.”

“Take your time. When we fought, I corroded his body with yin and yang Qi, he probably can’t recover easily. However, I won’t feel assured until he dies,” replied Icefire calmly. The man bowed and withdrew, walking backward.

——

After a short time, the Life Shrine, which didn’t get involved in worldly affairs, was destroyed because they had refused to submit. Their Leader had been killed. Actually, many people felt extremely sad at this happening, to the extent that some people cried over their destruction.

——

Time passed. Another century flowed by. At that moment, in a wild area of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, a figure was suddenly surrounded by reincarnation strength and absorbed quickly.

A handsome man appeared. It was Hou Qing Lin, now a peerless Saint. People kept chasing him, one of which had just died. Icefire was pursuing him and all the former members of the Fortune Shrine.

“Eh?” At that moment, Hou Qing Lin looked surprised. He took out a jade talisman and his eyes twinkled. He flew up in the air.

Chapter 2494: Conspiracy

Lin Feng was still in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, living in Fortune City in an ordinary thatched hut.

He was in his own world right now. The sky was broken, and Qi kept spilling into the Star World, because Lin Feng's body was there.

"A hundred years have passed and I haven't recovered yet," Lin Feng sighed. A century ago, Icefire had broken his world and badly injured him. No matter what strength Lin Feng used, he couldn't fix it. It wasn't an external injury, because his world was a part of his body, like his vital organs. It was also why he almost never fought in his small world.

That battle had damaged his world. Lin Feng had managed to injure Icefire too, but it was not an even exchange. Now Lin Feng was badly injured, probably no stronger than an ordinary peerless Saint. All those years, he had first become strong in his own world and then in the outside world. His strength came from there, it came from inside him!

Lin Feng and the old ox were seated facing each other in the pavilion in the sky. The old ox and the few bestial Saints of the Star World were the only ones who had come to see him in his world.

"Brother Ox, I've been trying to recover for a hundred years but I can't, is this my destiny?" asked Lin Feng calmly. Even though he was badly injured, he still remained calm.

"It's a good opportunity for you. You're lucky, it was destroyed and now you can build it again and improve it," the old ox smiled. "But yin and yang Qi is truly powerful. You have a world inside of you, the sky is dark, the soil is yellow, you understand the strength of the five elements, you understand space strength, time strength... if you understood yin and yang strength, your world

would be perfect.”

“Yin and yang is the source of all strengths... Icefire understands yin and yang strength, so is he a real god? A cultivator of the Shen layer?”

“Even though I don’t know what the Shen Layer is, I’m sure he isn’t.”

“Brother Ox, back in the days, you insinuated that the Shen layer and immortality were connected, did you mean it?”

“Back then, my Master told me that. Maybe it just referred to the act of transferring one’s knowledge to an heir. I’m not sure,” the old ox smiled. “You’re dispirited now. Great changes have occurred in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. You should practice cultivation and keep calm. Just isolate yourself from the world. Many people are looking for you in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

“Alright,” Lin Feng nodded. He looked at his broken world and murmured, “My path has always been different from the path of other people. Maybe making strengths fuse together to create techniques is not the right path for me. I understand time strength, the five elements, space strength, and I can create anything, just like a real god. I think I should study yin and yang. That way, I could fix my world and improve it. It would become a real world because it would have all the components necessary to create a normal world.”

“You can think that way, but if you hadn’t fused different sorts of strengths together, how could you have fought against peerless Saints?” the old ox cajoled him.

Lin Feng nodded back. It seems like I still need to understand one sort of strength, then I’ll use the power of destiny and then I’ll be able to make things change, thought Lin Feng, raising his head and looking at the sky. His eyes were sharp. Even if he was going through hardships, he remained motivated!

“Father!” Zhe Tian spoke up at that moment.

“How’s the situation in the Continent of the Nine Clouds?” asked Lin Feng.

“The three Kings still are at peace with one another, the other influential groups are all oppressed all the time. Regarding your friends, our enemies are still looking for them, but you told them to go to other worlds, so it’s almost impossible to find them,” replied Zhe Tian calmly. Lin Feng nodded at him.

“Someone is here!” said the old ox at that moment. Lin Feng left his world and opened his eyes in the outside world. A handsome man was standing there, but because he was wearing a mask, one couldn’t see his face.

“Brother!” Lin Feng greeted him with a smile.

Hou Qing Lin smiled back. “Lin Feng, I never thought you’d spend all your time in Fortune City. How brave!”

“The most dangerous places are often the safest ones too,” Lin Feng grinned. His smile stiffened as a terrifying Qi filled the air. Many people appeared. Hou Qing Lin’s face also paled.

How is this possible? Hou Qing Lin was a peerless Saint, if anyone had followed him, he would have noticed?

“Lin Feng, go,” said Hou Qing Lin, stepping in front of Lin Feng.

“Brother, Icefire will show up soon. We need to leave,” said Lin Feng.

“How could we escape from them? Lin Feng, I’m your fellow disciple, listen to me, leave now,” said Hou Qing Lin turning his head back.

“I’ll fight against them, you take Lin Feng away,” the old ox said after appearing.

Hou Qing Lin was surprised. Lin Feng nodded. “Brother Ox is strong enough.”

“Alright,” agreed Hou Qing Lin. His figure flickered, and Lin Feng, Zhe Tian, and Hou Qing Lin left. They heard the old ox shout, “Time!”

Time became slower, and those who were chasing Lin Feng stopped moving.

Hou Qing Lin and Zhe Tian took Lin Feng away. He said to Lin Feng. “I am sure nobody chased me. How come they suddenly appeared?”

“They anticipated,” said Lin Feng.

Hou Qing Lin was stunned and asked, “You knew? So why didn’t you do anything?”

“I wanted to see if I was right or not, and I was right,” explained Lin Feng. Hou Qing Lin was surprised at the reply.

Some strong cultivators nearby released a powerful Qi. “I’ll go!,” said Zhe Tian, reacting instantly. An ultimate weapon, the Sky Destroying Sword, appeared in his hand.

“Time, freeze!” said Zhe Tian. Time stopped. Hou Qing Lin was shocked.

“This little boy Zhe Tian also understands the same strength as his dad? How strong!” He watched the Sky Destroying Sword descend from the sky and cut apart a peerless Saint.

“You’re lucky, too. Your teacher was great, you are talented, you understand many kinds of strengths. How could you not become an extraordinary cultivator?” Lin Feng grinned at him. “No need to worry about my son’s life. He’s got a life-saving technique.”

“Very well,” Hou Qing Lin sighed.

——

An old man was seated cross-legged in the ruins of the Fortune Shrine. The old man’s clothes were ragged, but he looked clean. His eyes were closed, he looked calm and peaceful.

A figure slowly appeared next to him.

“Leader, you’re back!” exclaimed the person who had just appeared. The old man who was seated was the Fortune Shrine Leader.

“My teacher predicted that one disaster would happen to me, and surprisingly, he said that the disaster would be you. I felt puzzled, I didn’t understand why you couldn’t become a peerless Saint until you stirred up trouble when Lin Feng appeared. Now I understand,” replied the Fortune Shrine Leader calmly.

“Leader, you think a lot. I don’t understand why you came back.”

“Since my destiny was to face a disaster, why would I hide? You dedicated your life to the Forbidden Body, you took risks to make him grow. Why?”

“In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, all living things have the same purpose, don’t you think?” answered that person.

“But you could have taken his life under control, why did you keep waiting?”

“There were things I hadn’t anticipated,” that person sighed. “Alright, today I will use the strength you taught me to make you disappear. You should die content.”

A terrifying strength surrounded the Fortune Shrine Leader, it was disaster celestial destiny strength! A few white lights flashed and the Fortune Shrine Leader’s body crackled.

“Eh?” The man frowned, and his face stiffened. “Why don’t you resist?”

The Fortune Shrine Leader opened his eyes and smiled peacefully. “I’m doomed. I want to die and become a martial god.”

His body exploded into light, and he vanished. His killer’s face stiffened.

Lin Feng suddenly stopped. He took out a talisman, which was now broken. He felt aggrieved. Back then, he had actually attacked the Shrine leader!

“Brother, you go on ahead,” Lin Feng said to Hou Qing Lin.

Hou Qing Lin’s face stiffened. “Lin Feng, don’t underestimate me,” Hou Qing Lin smiled. How could he leave?

“Alright, brother. Go to my world to practice cultivation. I need to see someone,” Lin Feng finally agreed. Qi surrounded Hou Qing Lin, and he disappeared, reappearing in Lin Feng’s world.

Someone came shortly thereafter to Lin Feng, It was Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon.

“Follow me,” he told Lin Feng calmly.

“Where are we going?” asked Lin Feng.

“The Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. We’re going to wake the ancient demon king, who can defy the laws of the world and cause rivers of blood to flow in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

“What if I’m not going?” said Lin Feng.

“You are me. I am you. We are the same person. If I go, you’re going too,” said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon firmly. Lin Feng smiled. He didn’t contradict the man.

“Give me one hour and I’ll come with you,” replied Lin Feng indifferently.

“Very well,” Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon nodded.

Chapter 2495: Demon King

Lin Feng found a place to sit down cross-legged and go to his own world.

He opened his hands and looked at the broken jade talisman. He felt so sad. He had actually attacked the Fortune Shrine Leader once. Instead of being angry, the Fortune Shrine Leader had given something to him: his jade talisman! He had said to Lin Feng. “If I die, it means that the one who’s always been deceiving you was the one who killed me. After my death, don’t forget to refine the Scepter of Destiny!”

Back then, Lin Feng had kind of stopped having doubts about the Fortune Shrine Leader. However, the one person he had decided to trust was the Diviner. Therefore, this time, he had decided to have Hou Qing Lin come, purely to see if the Diviner would cheat him or not.

He had also done that to see whether Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon was really his image or not. If he was, he would know everything about him, and apparently, he did. Lin Feng had already obtained some answers.

The Scepter of Destiny appeared in Lin Feng’s hands, and he scanned it with his powerful godly awareness. Something was broken inside. Lin Feng established a connection to the Scepter of Destiny and started refining it. After he managed to control it, some fluttering sounds spread in the air, and picture appeared in front of him.

It was a Shrine, towering aloft. Within the Shrine were two people: an old man, and a young man.

The old man’s Qi was weak. His figure was transparent, as if he was about to disappear. The young man was crying.

“My son, it’s my disaster technique, don’t be sad. This time,

during the battle against the Demon King, both sides suffered losses. I have one foot in the grave after I sealed the Demon King. He won't recover for a countless number of years."

"But I still have some ominous premonitions. I will check the secrets of the gods, it's the best time," whispered the weak old man. He could disappear at any time.

"Teacher, the members of the Fortune Shrine all believe in divination, and they all have premonitions. If you use the celestial premonition technique, your soul will disperse!" protested the young man. He wanted to prevent the old man from doing so, but a curtain of light stopped him.

The old man said, "I'm doomed. I can still use the premonition technique once. It doesn't matter."

He closed his eyes and used the strength of the gods to peer into the future. Celestial strength condensed and turned into words.

"Celestial Dao Destiny Technique!" Lin Feng observed with a shiver. Was this a coincidence?

Celestial Dao words floated around the old man. Lin Feng was stared at them.

The Sky Palace, what's the date tonight?

Mountain of Flowers and Fruit, a cave with a waterfall at its mouth!

Secret world, cultivation strength.

When the Forbidden Person appears, a god will appear.

Nobody knows what awaits them, but who can't recognize a monarch?

Lin Feng's heart was pounding violently. Those were the words Lin Feng had read in the Jade Emperor's palace, the exact same words!

Lin Feng couldn't calm down. How incredible! Celestial Dao

Destiny Technique... Was it really the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique? Was it a prophecy?

“Teacher, I don’t understand what those words mean,” the young man said softly, looking at the words floating around.

“Never mind. I didn’t think that I wouldn’t understand them myself. However, remember them. No matter what they mean, they have something to do with the Forbidden Person. Maybe in the future, a Forbidden Person will appear. Remember this, you might meet the Forbidden Person someday. Remember...” sighed the old man, as he became even more transparent.

“Teacher!” cried out the young man, his eyes red.

“This Scepter is now yours. It contains destiny strength. You can use it to protect yourself, it has the strength of a half-god. The mysteries of Heaven must not be revealed. If they are revealed, you will die. You’re the only one who knows, and you must protect the Forbidden Person. The Forbidden Person is the dusk of all gods. This time, the Forbidden Person might become a god, and I will go to a god’s grave, I have the impression that I have to go there for a reason.”

The old man turned into light, and vanished. The young man was alone, staring blankly at the empty space.

“Teacher, I promise that if I face a disaster, I will sacrifice myself for the Forbidden Body!” whispered the young man. When Lin Feng heard that, he felt himself tearing up.

The young man was the Fortune Shrine Leader! He had done what he had promised. The Scepter of Destiny contained a half-god’s attack, but he had never used it, even to fight against the other Shrines. He had given it to Lin Feng!

However, Lin Feng had had doubts about the Fortune Shrine Leader, and had even attacked him. Lin Feng remembered how devastated and sad the Fortune Shrine Leader looked. He hadn’t

even said anything. He had proved, with his life, that nobody else would learn the secrets of Heaven.

“Leader, you should know that some people already know the secrets of Heaven though...,” Lin Feng sighed. Who was Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon? How could he know the secrets of Heaven?

“Demon King!” said Lin Feng. A hundred years before, it was said that the Demon Shrine Leader had a new teacher. Icefire had gone there, and had come back home with his tail between his legs. There was a mysterious being in the Demon Shrine. They had become one of the three influential groups of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

But Lin Feng still didn’t understand. Even if the Demon King had reincarnated and understood the secrets of Heaven, why could he find him so easily? Why had Lin Feng met Yan Di? What did “Limitless Sky Palace, what’s the date tonight?” mean? Why had he obtained the Jade Emperor’s palace and read those words inside? Did the Demon King have the same powers as the Fortune Shrine Leader? Did he also have premonitions?

Destiny strength is enigmatic and unfathomable, groused Lin Feng. He gradually refined the Scepter of Destiny, easy to do since it had no master anymore. Very quickly, Lin Feng took control over it. A mysterious and special strength emerged. Lin Feng felt even sadder, and held the Scepter of Destiny firmly.

The Demon King, I need to go and see him, thought Lin Feng, and he left his own world.

—

“Are you done?” Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon asked.

“Yes, let’s go,” he replied. The two of them rose up in the air.

——

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon didn’t take Lin Feng to the

Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. He took him to the Demon Shrine.

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon took Lin Feng into the depths of the Demon Shrine. There were many demons there, standing guard. They eventually arrived in front of a Demon King's palace.

The Demon King was in the main hall, looking like an ancient king.

"Before I wake up, I want to ask some questions, may I?"

"Go ahead," said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon.

"Who is Mara-Deva?" asked Lin Feng, staring at Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon. His eyes looked sharp.

"He's me," Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon answered.

Lin Feng didn't really understand, but continued. "Why didn't you immediately absorb me? Why did you waste so much time?" asked Lin Feng.

"The Demon King was sound asleep, and he hoped the Forbidden Person would take the initiative to wake him up. That would have been perfect. The Forbidden Demon King would have awoken. That would have been the best."

"Therefore, you pretended to be me, then you stirred up chaos in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, then you tried to put me in dead ends the whole time, and then you showed up and you hoped I'd take the initiative to wake the Demon King up," Lin Feng conjectured.

"Unfortunately, you're progressing too quickly. It was unexpected. We had to cause lots of troubles. The Demon King didn't even have a proper absorbing skill until Chu Chun Qiu showed up," Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon replied emotionlessly.

Chu Chun Qiu appeared in the hall. Chu Chun Qiu's Qi was incredible; he was a peerless Saint long ago, and he had absorbed many strong cultivators' power already.

“Chu Chun Qiu is King Chu’s descendant. Back then, King Chu was a tiny little insect, but at least he created a Sky Absorbing technique that wasn’t bad. The Demon King used him and his knowledge to create a Sky Absorbing technique,” said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon calmly. “Alright, you can die content now. If you take the initiative to wake him up, we won’t kill your family members. If the Demon King has to use force, I guarantee you that after you die, all your family members and friends will die.”

“One last thing. Didn’t a Forbidden Body appear last time? If there wasn’t one, why did the Destiny Wheel rotate? And how did you know all my movements?” said Lin Feng.

“You will know all those things when you wake up as the Demon King,” replied Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon calmly. Lin Feng nodded. He turned to look at the Demon King on the throne.

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon turned into light and disappeared into the throne. His voice spoke to the two of them. “Chu Chun Qiu, the Demon King granted you a demon imprint, it must return to the Demon King now. Lin Feng, come and wake the Demon King up. Your friends and family members will always be safe.”

Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu glanced at each other. Chu Chun Qiu looked expressionless, his eyes filled with demon strength.

“Are you happy?” Lin Feng didn’t talk, and he didn’t use telepathy either. He just stared at Chu Chun Qiu and tried to communicate using his eyes.

“No.” They managed to communicate with their eyes.

The two cultivators walked up to the Demon King and stopped in front of him.

The Demon King suddenly stretched out his hands and put them on their bodies. Suddenly, they both had the impression they were puppets under his control.

“Lin Feng, you still want to resist?! You’ll become one with the

Demon King!” said a voice which reverberated in Lin Feng’s mind. Its purpose was to make Lin Feng give up, to absorb him into the Demon King’s will.

The turn of events greatly pleased Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon. Gradually, their wills were fusing together, and the same was happening to Chu Chun Qiu. He was also being absorbed!

“Can the Demon King resist the attack of a half-god?” asked Lin Feng. A terrifying amount of demon Qi filled the air. At the same time, Lin Feng suddenly took out the Scepter of Destiny. Millions of destiny beam of lights appeared and attacked the Demon King’s body.

He tried to continue fusing together with Lin Feng, a mighty destructive strength emerged, but was destroyed by the destiny strength!

“Argh!” the Demon King shouted furiously. Lin Feng had the impression his body was going to explode.

“Absorb!” shouted Chu Chun Qiu furiously. An incredible absorbing strength surged out and swept everything away into itself. The Demon King’s will was being absorbed!

“Chu Chun Qiu, you dare betray the Demon King!”

“That’s part of my nature, I stand alone!” retorted Chu Chun Qiu, releasing a terrifying Qi which absorbed everything in his way.

“You created such a terrifying Sky Absorbing technique for yourself!?” The Demon King couldn’t be attacked by surprise by Chu Chun Qiu, but he had just been attacked by Lin Feng, and then Chu Chun Qiu had attacked him while he was in a position of weakness! It was an opportunity for Chu Chun Qiu to exploit!

Chapter 2496: Millions of Changes

“Piss off!” The Demon King’s will was being absorbed, he kept shouting furiously. The whole palace exploded and collapsed. The members of the Demon Shrine saw that and fled in terror.

Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng came out of the explosion. Lin Feng was still holding the Scepter of Destiny, the Demon King was still seated on his throne. Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon appeared, an indistinct spirit. Qi dashed to the skies. He was using the strength of the Demon King!

“Die!” People heard the loud shout. The soundwave rolled out, and eighteen demons appeared, their Qi was flaring with menace. At the same time, Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon waved his hand, Qi emerged and surged towards Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu.

“Argh!” shouted Chu Chun Qiu furiously. He raised his head to the sky, taking a deep breath. He looked free from inhibitions and crazily happy.

“What a powerful strength! I wouldn’t have thought the Demon King could grant me such incredible power! No wonder you’re so strong, even though you’re just an image!” shouted Chu Chun Qiu, staring at the Demon King. Abruptly, he started running, not towards the Demon King but towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng suddenly felt a dangerous absorbing strength draining his vitality and will. Chu Chun Qiu wanted to absorb him!

“Time, standstill!” said Lin Feng coldly. Time stopped, but Chu Chun Qiu was too determined, it was difficult to do anything against him. It was his nature to go against the laws of the world, it was how he had become a Saint long ago. If he continued growing, he would just become another Demon King!

Saintly Emperor Xi’s Qi was shaking. Lin Feng’s half-god attack and Chu Chun Qiu’s Sky Absorbing attack had weakened him, and even if he borrowed the strength of the Demon King, he was badly

injured. If he hadn't been inside the Demon King's body, he would have died.

Lin Feng turned into a beam of light, dashing to the skies. He was gone as fast as lightning.

When time became normal again, Lin Feng was already extremely far away. Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon was stunned. He hadn't known Lin Feng could do that. It was unexpected!

"The Imperial Court will be mine sooner or later!" declared Chu Chun Qiu coldly. He also flew up and left quickly. The demons wanted to chase him, but Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon gestured with his hand, and the demons vanished.

"Cough cough!" He had come out of the Demon King's body and was injured now, he kept coughing up blood.

"Lin Feng, Chu Chun Qiu, you all want to die!" swore Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon, gazing into the distance. A demon cloud churned all around him.

——

After that, Lin Feng went into hiding again. He had completely disappeared from the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He knew many people were looking for him.

Lin Feng wasn't the only one who disappeared. All the people who were related to Lin Feng disappeared. The three influential groups were looking for him, his friends, and family members. However, they had all disappeared. Even Lin Feng's close friends in the lower world had disappeared. The Continent of the Nine Clouds was so big, it was easy to hide and live incognito.

——

Lin Feng was walking in the mountains as if the outside world had nothing to do with him.

A hundred years had passed since he had left the Demon Shrine.

He knew that he had to have a perfect inner world to fight again, or things would be too complicated.

Iceref was in a palace in the Supreme Shrine, with many Saints around him. Icerer was giving a lecture to many strong cultivators, including the Shrines' Leaders. A terrifying amount of Qi began to whistle as it intruded on them

The ground shook violently as someone appeared. Everyone was shocked when they saw him.

"Lin Feng!" Icerer smiled sinisterly. "Since you're here, I will kill you!"

Icerer flew up and released yin and yang Qi towards Lin Feng. The terrifying yin and yang Qi contained all sorts of strengths. However, Lin Feng just shook his hands and opened his mouth. He absorbed the yin and yang Qi with a loud cry. Space seemed to freeze, even as he flew away rapidly.

"You think you can escape?!" snarled Icerer, streaking after him. Yin and yang Qi converged in the sky. Lin Feng's face stiffened as he absorbed the yin and yang Qi again. But he looked helpless as his body exploded.

"it wasn't his real body?" Icerer was startled. It was one of Lin Feng's clones, and he had such incredible fighting abilities already?!

"Icerer, from now on, every three days, I will fight against you. Don't go too far from the Supreme Shrine!" said a loud voice which made the earth and sky tremble.

Icerer pulled a long face. There was nobody around... where did that voice come from, and where was Lin Feng's real body?

—

At that moment, Lin Feng's real body was really far away. He was seated cross-legged and was also in his own world. He spat out some Qi calmly... yin and yang Qi! It floated around him.

“Lin Feng, your spell is matchless. You can steal yin and yang Qi from so far away and use it for your real body...” said the old ox. He was amazed.

“That’s the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique, a real illusion space. If the three supreme cultivators and a few terrifying old monsters who are hiding weren’t there, I could destroy the whole continent using just a clone,” replied Lin Feng calmly. The yin and yang Qi rose up and surprisingly, it could fix the sky!

“It’s too slow. You need to understand yin and yang Qi to truly fix the sky,” said the old ox slowly. Lin Feng nodded. Indeed, he still had to do that!

—

After that, every three days, Lin Feng attacked Icefire.

Icefire was extremely annoyed. He decided to ignore him, but Lin Feng promptly killed one of his peerless Saints. So each time, he had to fight against Lin Feng!

Time passed, and Icefire sensed something. If he continued like this, he wouldn’t be able to continue practicing cultivation peacefully. He would also lose his will to improve!

Many people who were looking for Lin Feng and his family members and friends stopped doing so. They didn’t dare offend Lin Feng anymore. Lin Feng’s clones were already so strong. Each time he challenged Icefire, he showed how strong he was, he could kill anyone else easily. How strong would his body be if he personally showed up?

—

Time passed, and another hundred years went by. Many people were still looking for Lin Feng secretly. The Supreme Animal World was in a chaotic situation, too. Icefire helped the Roc Clan fight against the Dragon Clan, so the Dragon Clan’s members had no choice but to leave the Dragon Valley. Many groups suffered

losses.

At the same time, a new leader appeared in the Hell Shrine, they now called him “Death”. It was a genius who had appeared in the Continent of the Nine Clouds many, many years before: Mo Zheng! He had created some incredible skills and techniques. Now he wanted to show how strong he was in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, as well! Many people were amazed. So many people had already become stronger than the former Shrine Leaders, like Icefire and the others. Many people started calling them half-gods.

Many battles continued happening in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. However, many other people disappeared. It was said that they had been absorbed by the one who had betrayed the Fortune Shrine, Chu Chun Qiu!

People were scared. Many people missed the good old times when the Continent of the Nine Clouds was peaceful, when there were the nine Shrines, when there was still a balance of power. Those were peaceful and fair times. Everything had changed now.

Everybody was waiting, hoping someone would manage to create one system and the Continent of the Nine Clouds would calm down again.

——

More time passed. Chu Chun Qiu went to the Buddha Shrine, he wanted to absorb their cultivators’ Wills to become a supreme cultivator. However, all the Buddhist cultivators were strong. Kong Ming, who used to be a disciple of the Fortune Shrine, even showed up. He was half-demon, half-Buddha, and he defeated Chu Chun Qiu.

Kong Ming became extremely famous because of that battle. The very next day, it was said that Kong Ming became the new Buddha Shrine Leader. The previous one had decided to retire!

The leaders of the Shrines were slowly changing. New

generations were taking over.

People sighed. Kong Ming had become a great cultivator. It was said that in his previous life, he was an ancient Buddha and then because of a woman, he had turned into a half-demon, half-Buddha. He had then created techniques to reincarnate, and had studied Buddhism again, then demon cultivation. He had managed to do something similar to what the Three Lives had done. It was said that the Buddha Shrine Leader had retired after Kong Ming understood all that, and Kong Ming had become the new Leader.

Chapter 2497: Final Battles (Part One)

The situation of the Continent of the Nine Clouds became more and more interesting.

Feng Mo, Icefire, and the Demon Shrine were the three overlords, the three ruling groups. Chu Chun Qiu, Kong Ming, Mo Zheng, and some other geniuses were dazzling constantly. Only Lin Feng had disappeared.

Icefire was waiting for Lin Feng's clone to come. As expected, his figure appeared in the sky. But this time, Lin Feng didn't attack. He said to Icefire. "Icefire, I will come here with my real body in three months, and I will kill you."

And then the clone left. Icefire was stunned. Then he smiled icily and swore, "In three months, the Forbidden Body will disappear from the world!"

Yin and yang Qi suddenly rose up in the air. Lights flashed in the sky, and many people raised their heads at the unexpected phenomenon.

"A turning point, due to the will of Heaven!" Icefire frowned. Would a god appear three months from now?

"Ahhh!" shouted Icefire. He couldn't wait! Was he finally he going to become a god?!

——

The news that godly lights had appeared in the sky quickly spread throughout the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Supreme Animal World, and many other places. Many people began to gather at the Supreme Shrine. In three months, the Forbidden Body would fight against Icefire. Would a god finally appear?

The Shrine Leaders were all excited, they could all become gods! That had always been their goal. However, they were oppressed these days, so how could they seize this chance?

The Continent of the Nine Clouds was seething with excitement. The Supreme Animal World's kings stopped fighting among themselves, and also came to the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Even if they couldn't become gods, they at least wanted to see who would become one!

Time passed. Only seven days were left before the battle.

A gigantic and lofty mountain peak descended from the sky and landed next to the Supreme Shrine. The celestial Qi was thick and rich there, and a figure was standing at the top, like a proud hero. Zi Zhu and his other disciples were standing behind him. His identity had already been revealed: Feng Mo!

Another four days passed, only three days were left before the battle. Another mountain peak appeared and descended from the sky, this time a demon mountain. At the top was an imperial palace. The peerless Demon King was sleeping in there, and nobody dared disturb him.

Finally, the last day arrived, and the Supreme Animal World's Leaders all showed up. Kong Ming and Mo Zheng also showed up.

Icefire was standing at the top of a flight of stairs, many peerless Saints gathered around him. It was an incredible sight, almost supernatural.

At the feet of those lofty mountains and buildings, many people were watching from the ground. They knew that they couldn't participate, but they were still extremely excited. Nobody wanted to miss the birth of a god!

A group of strong cultivators appeared in the distance. Their

leader was wearing clean white clothes. He looked handsome, warm, and kind, and extremely noble, all at the same time.

“The Forbidden Body, Lin Feng!”

“He’s here! Is it his real body this time?”

Everybody looked at Lin Feng. Nobody knew how strong he was, nobody could see it.

Lin Feng didn’t look at Feng Mo, and he didn’t look at the demon court, either. He only had eyes for Icefire.

“So many peerless Saints! Lin Feng must have been protecting them! There’s Hou Qing Lin too, Lin Feng’s fellow disciple. Who’s the one in black? He looks so cold! And the young man there? He’s holding the Dazzling Gold Shrine’s Sky Destroying Sword!” When the crowd saw all this, they shivered.

Lin Feng quickly arrived at the foot of the flight of stairs. It was extremely vast, there on the main platform. He looked over at the crowd and swore grimly, “Today, those who try to stop me will die!”

“I attacked you using yin and yang back then, you probably haven’t recovered yet,” probed Icefire aloofly.

“Even if I haven’t completely recovered, it doesn’t matter. I’ll kill you today!” replied Lin Feng, releasing an incredible Qi as he started walking forwards.

“Die!” said Icefire coldly. The crowd was shocked and scared of Lin Feng. However, they were even more scared of Icefire!

A strong wind started blowing, and the air began to whistle. Many people arrived, they were all Lin Fengs!

Feng Mo’s eyes twinkled knowingly. Lin Feng had created lots of clones!

“Time, standstill!” said Lin Feng. Time stopped, and Hou Qing Lin and the others who held peerless Saint’s Weapons came closer

at the same time. The crowd frowned. Lin Feng could make time stop for certain people only; that meant Icefire wouldn't be able to fight!

Lin Feng didn't even glance at anyone else, he just walked towards Icefire.

Yin and yang Qi surrounded Lin Feng, moving as fast as lightning. The yin and yang Qi turned into a hurricane and oppressed Lin Feng.

"Time." Lin Feng accelerated, and so did all his clones. They all released time strength at the same time. His clones all attacked at the same time, their combined attack was magnificent. The hurricane of yin and yang energies shattered instantly!

"Not bad!" Icefire smiled coldly. Yin and yang Qi blotted out the sky. The sky became dark, and the yin and yang energies turned into millstones. The crowd on the ground felt they were going to die.

"Seal!" said one of the clones. The yin and yang hurricane started freezing, but the yin and yang energies broke through.

Lin Feng's real body flew up. He looked like a god as he released his Ruler's Godly Imprints. The yin and yang attack crackled against them.

"Empty Space Fissures!" said one of the clones.

"Celestial Earth Canyons!" said another, attacking the yin and yang energy. Thunder rumbled, and the yin and yang attack finally broke apart.

Icefire smiled coldly and said, "Since that's your real body, I'll destroy it first!"

A vortex of supreme yin and yang energies appeared and broke all kinds of strengths around, swirling into a long dragon and racing towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng faced Icefire fearlessly. The earth and sky kept shaking unceasingly, as if the world had been on the verge of collapse. There were some explosions in the world about them, and the Shrine beneath them exploded and collapsed under the strain.

“Yin and yang are the whole world, die!” An overwhelming amount of yin and yang Qi whelmed towards Lin Feng.

A vortex containing absorbing strength appeared all around Lin Feng. Lin Feng smiled broadly. “Thank you very much!”

Lin Feng was bombarded, while a deadly Ruler’s Godly Imprints attack appeared from a different location. Icefire suddenly turned around and threw out his fist. Yin and yang strength could destroy the ten thousand things of creation!

“Real body illusion!” the crowd hissed. They were trembling at the sight. Lin Feng could create illusions of his real body, how incredible!

“Even when you’re sure it’s the real one, it’s not! Lin Feng’s comprehension is incredible, nobody has better comprehensive abilities,” admitted Kong Ming softly. Nobody could tell which one was really Lin Feng’s body anymore!

Another body absorbed yin and yang Qi, before he broke apart. His real body continued changing. The crowd realized that Lin Feng was absorbing the yin and yang Qi on purpose!

Icefire also realized that, but he had no choice, he had to continue fighting. He had to kill Lin Feng!

One of Lin Feng’s best bodies exploded with a boom. Icefire was astonished as he glanced around, but there was nothing, he couldn’t see Lin Feng’s real body. There were just clones all around.

“Lin Feng!” shouted Icefire, the earth and sky shaking at his anger. Yin and yang Qi floated around him wildly.

Icefire was astonished when he saw a hand in the distance. It was

coming towards him, and there was a figure in a distance illusory world which appeared indistinctly.

“His real body. His real body hadn’t arrived yet! It was an illusion the whole time!”

The crowd saw yin and yang Qi rolling around him, rotating quickly. Lin Feng had fought against Icefire a lot to study yin and yang Qi. How crazy!

“How much longer do you need?” asked a voice from the sky.

Lin Feng replied, “I’m almost done. Just a little bit longer.”

“Die!” shouted Icefire furiously. His yin and yang Qi turned into a hurricane, raging and sweeping out to drive everything before it.

The illusion trembled, corroded by the yin and yang Qi. There was finally a rumble and explosions as the space collapsed, and Lin Feng appeared. The yin and yang Qi turned into a vortex and howled towards him, distorting the space.

At that moment, someone came out of the Demon Shrine imperial court. Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon charged at Lin Feng. He had done all he could in the past to make Lin Feng wake the Demon King up, spending so much time trying to fuse Lin Feng together with the demon king. Lin Feng had said he’d come back when he was stronger, but he had never returned. He knew Lin Feng never would, so he had tried to force Lin Feng to do it, but he had failed again. Now, he couldn’t afford to fail anymore!

Chu Chun Qiu appeared and charged at Lin Feng as well. However, he heard a Buddhist chant, and Kong Ming appeared in front of him. He released his Buddha’s halo, and many Sakyamuni appeared.

At the same time, Mo Zheng also moved, flashing over in front of Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon.

“The Demon Emperor is finally going to fight today?” murmured Mo Zheng the Demoniac Punisher. His tone of speech was exactly

the same as Lin Feng's, which astonished Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon.

The two of them released a terrifying demon strength. Waves of energies surged around them with apocalyptic force!

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon threw out his fist, containing a dreadful amount of demon Qi. At the same time, Mo Zheng also attacked, ancient imprints streaking across the sky. Lin Feng's ancient imprints were Ruler's Godly Imprints, Mo Zheng's ancient imprints were Destructive Demon Imprints.

The two attacks collided. Death strength turned into a hurricane, and everything exploded all around them.

Chapter 2498: Final Battles (Part Two)

Lin Feng's world had long recovered. Yin and yang Qi surged out in all directions.

His whole world was trembling. A figure of his appeared in his world. His world was already perfected.

"From now on, time in my world will pass at the same pace as time in the outside world." Lin Feng released an immortal strength, filling everywhere in his own world.

Boom boom boom! A terrifying strength made the earth and sky shake. Lin Feng's figure smiled. The earth and sky in his world aligned perfectly with the outside world. He could control all living things, the ten thousand things of creation, he was its god!

In the outside world, yin and yang Qi tore and roved, Lin Feng's heart twitched as he disappeared. Icefire's attack crashed onto Lin Feng's body. A dozen beams of light appeared and ripped through Icefire's yin and yang Qi. Icefire looked as if he hadn't felt anything. He just wanted Lin Feng to fight!

In the distance, Feng Mo looked totally composed as he looked on. He didn't need to get involved. Lin Feng was either going to die or not. No matter what, Lin Feng wasn't going to become a god. Of course, Icefire wasn't going to become a god, either!

Icefire had the impression that his yin and yang Qi was crashing into an extremely hard stone. Lin Feng didn't move. His god's lights flashed and floated around him. After that, Lin Feng opened his eyes, lights emerging from them.

Icefire's heart skipped a beat.

"It's over," said Lin Feng calmly. He released his Ruler's Godly Imprints once, they descended from the sky. They really looked like a god's imprints now. Icefire shouted desperately as his body

gradually vanished beneath them.

“I don’t want to die!” howled Icefire, but it made no difference as his body disappeared.

—

Lin Feng glanced around. Nobody dared say anything. However, the fighting had to continue.

Lin Feng looked over at the roc king in the distance. The roc king cried out in surprise, before turning to flee at his top speed.

“Where are you going?” shouted Lin Feng coldly. A gigantic hand moved towards the roc king and grabbed him. Lin Feng had changed, his perceptions had changed, he was even stronger than when he had fought against Icefire a moment before. He was actually closer to becoming a god, a spiritual being!

“God, break!” Lin Feng was holding the roc king in his hand, and closed it. The roc king suffered atrociously as he was crushed. Lin Feng, the Forbidden Person, was terrifying!

——

Feng Mo watched from the top of the mountain. The sun was shining upon him. He smiled when he saw that the Forbidden Body was finally strong enough.

“Stop the battles now,” Feng Mo stated, uncaring, yet dignified and majestic. All the fighting stopped rather quickly.

A new person descended from the sky. It was the Godly Weapon Master.

“Hahaha, finally! Someone is going to become a god! I can’t wait to see who!” exclaimed the Godly Weapon Master with a smile. “Everybody, stop the fighting. Let’s have some really good ones now!”

Chu Chun Qiu and Kong Ming, Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and Mo Zheng, the old ox and Zhe Tian who were fighting against

peerless cultivators... everyone stopped.

“I’d like to ask something first,” Lin Feng said calmly. He looked at Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon and said. “Demon Emperor, I don’t want to call you Demon King, I prefer calling you Demon Emperor. You chased me for a while, you cheated me for a long time. That was all a conspiracy. However, I still don’t understand who made you do that, and why you were able to follow me?”

“You know the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique, right?” the Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon inquired.

“I know it. If I didn’t know the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique, I wouldn’t have been able to absorb the yin and yang Qi of Icefire. I wouldn’t have been able to know that my teacher was with you, either,” said Lin Feng calmly.

Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon looked at Lin Feng and said. “Since you also practiced it, you know how powerful it is. Apart from you and the Fortune Shrine Leader, only three people practiced the Celestial Dao Destiny Technique.”

“My teacher must be here,” said Lin Feng. A figure descended from the sky and landed in the imperial court of the Demon Shrine... the Diviner!

“You followed the Shrine Leader for so many years, the Shrine Leader also studied the Destiny Technique. Surprisingly, he couldn’t see through your real intentions. You must have mastered the Technique better than anyone else in the world... who organized all that?” asked Lin Feng.

“Do you know who he is?” asked Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon calmly.

Lin Feng looked nervous and replied, “The Ancient Demon King!”

“Back in the days, during the godly battles, the Demon King was sleeping soundly. However, many years after, he gradually

recovered and turned into Mara-Deva to come back to life and join the Fortune Shrine. He studied the Destiny Technique and mastered it. Then he used it to have visions and predict the future. He spied on the Fortune Shrine, and it was easy for him to learn the prophecies.

“He went back into the Demon King’s sleeping body and created a special kind of strength to create me. It also allowed me to follow the trail of the Forbidden Person. You know what happened after that.

“The Destiny Wheel was even deceived, it really believed what had happened. The Demon King created a godly strength even the Fortune Shrine didn’t understand. It was all a plot. To a certain extent, I am really an image of you. Initially, I wanted you to come to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell and fuse together with the Demon King. After that, the Demon King and the Forbidden Body would have made one, and the Demon King would have become a god, that was a hundred percent certainty. But it was a failure, so the only solution was to absorb you and destroy you.”

“It seems like the Shrines were right. There was no Forbidden Body a thousand years ago. No wonder they couldn’t find any. No wonder t you spent so many years for your conspiracy. If I had willingly fused together with the Demon King, he would have become a god and nobody would have been able to ruin his plan!” murmured Lin Feng. He suddenly understood everything.

“But why did you pretend so well?” Lin Feng asked the Diviner.

“I was born for that purpose,” replied the Diviner calmly. Lin Feng nodded. Indeed. It was his sole purpose in life!

“Today, a god is going to appear. I will resuscitate!” stated the Diviner. He turned into a star and returned to the Demon King’s body. He was a thread of consciousness of the Demon King, so he could make him come back to life temporarily.

“Chu Chun Qiu, back then in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell,

you should have died. I granted you demon strength. I transmitted you the strength of the Demon King, and you betrayed me! Let's fuse together now!" Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon said to Chu Chun Qiu calmly.

The Demon King slowly stood up on his throne. He looked like a demon from the ancient past.

Chu Chun Qiu looked at Lin Feng, and then at Feng Mo. He couldn't do anything against them.

At least, I could become a god if I fused together with him!, he thought. He merged into the Demon King's body, and demon strength rose in billowing waves of power as he did.

"Come back!" An incredible strength arose from Feng Mo's body. Many figures flickered, speeding through the air before they also merged into Feng Mo's body. There were a great number of them...

"My demon and Buddhist cultivations are both at the highest level. How could I not become a god today?" said Feng Mo.

Kong Ming's body started trembling. "How is this possible?" said Kong Ming in his magnificent Brahma's voice.

"No need to struggle. I have many bodies. You just practiced for two lives and you achieved supreme enlightenment. When you succeeded, you became my godly embryo!" Feng Mo said calmly. Kong Ming was drawn helplessly into his body. Buddhist mantras spread in the air around, and everybody shivered.

Kong Ming, who had replaced the Buddha Shrine Leader, was one of Feng Mo's bodies, his godly embryo!

"Let's fight!" said Feng Mo. The ground shook violently. The earth and sky seemed ready to collapse.

The old ox shouted quickly, "Let's go!" as he left hastily. These three people were already too terrifying.

Lin Feng didn't have time to be stunned because of Kong Ming.

Feng Mo's voice made him shake; it contained sealing strength, and Buddhist strength, shaking his very soul. It was terrifying. This battle would be a supreme battle!

Lin Feng and Mo Zheng's bodies fused together, an incredible Qi rose around him, and a throne appeared in the sky. Lin Feng immediately sat down on it.

The Demon King was there, his hair fluttering in the wind. All three people were terrifying.

Two gigantic feet appeared in the sky, driving down towards Feng Mo and Lin Feng. Feng Mo grunted coldly. Time stopped; he also had the ability to make time stop! He had lived for many years, and controlled all sorts of strengths. He had studied so much precisely for this battle, he wanted to become a god!

Lin Feng released Ruler's Godly Imprints, and the gigantic foot was smashed. His Ruler's Godly Imprints were now even more powerful!

Lights appeared in the sky, a divine radiance. A god could appear at any time! One of these three people was going to become a god!!!

Chapter 2499: Final Battles – Proclamation of a God

“Lin Feng, be good to your teacher,” said the Diviner, smiling at Lin Feng gently. It was clearly the Demon King pretending to be the Diviner.

What a terrifying cultivator!, thought Lin Feng. Demon strength penetrated into his mind.

“Lin Feng!” A figure appeared in his mind.

Lin Feng was astonished. “General!” Liu Cang Lan had appeared in front of him!

“Lin Feng!” Someone else appeared in front of Lin Feng, this time it was Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

“Teacher Yan Yu!” Lin Feng saw many people appear in front of him: Protector Kong, Protector Bei, so many familiar faces....

“Lin Feng.” The Fortune Shrine Leader also appeared. Lin Feng felt so sad.

“Illusion, it’s an illusion.” Lin Feng tried to control himself. Suddenly, someone shouted, and all the figures turned into demons and attacked him.

“Piss off!” shouted Lin Feng grimly. However, a terrifying strength bombarded his soul and will.

How strong! He felt a bit scared. In the outside world, absorbing strength suddenly surrounded him, and Lin Feng’s face stiffened.

The world, yin and yang, the five elements. I am a god!, thought Lin Feng. He tried to keep true to himself. He didn’t let the illusion influence him. He looked at the terrifying absorbing strength churning about him. He released Ruler’s Godly Imprints and Destructive Demon Imprints, and they merged together. Thunder clashed, and the ground quaked.

“Die!” shouted Feng Mo furiously. The ground was on the verge of collapse. Lin Feng raised his head and saw energies flowing, brimming with destruction. All sorts of Celestial Dao energies descended from the sky. Feng Mo had been practicing cultivation for such a long time, and had lived so many lives. His attacks had reached the peak of perfection. At that moment, he didn’t look friendly at all, he was intent on killing Lin Feng!

Feng Mo was proud, a truly peerless cultivator. He didn’t look friendly, like when Lin Feng was weak. He had waited for this moment, the battle to become a god!

“Time!” shouted Lin Feng.

“Time!” shouted Feng Mo at the same moment. Their time strengths collided.

Lin Feng flew forwards, releasing an aggressive Qi. He howled furiously and suddenly disappeared.

“Seal!” shouted Feng Mo coldly. His sealing attack could seal Heaven and Earth. However, Lin Feng was holding his God’s Sword. Feng Mo had helped him make it.

“You’re using the sword I made for you to destroy my seals!?” Feng Mo smiled coldly.

A mighty god’s strength penetrated into the sword, and it turned into an assassin’s sword, breaking the seal. Lin Feng appeared in front of Feng Mo and shouted furiously. Millions of demons penetrated into Feng Mo’s body, also containing cursing strength. Mo Zheng had studied all those strengths for him.

Feng Mo’s body was attacked harshly. However, Feng Mo released Buddhist lights, which purified away the demon strength.

Lin Feng released godly and destructive imprints, throwing his fist at his opponent. The crowd saw a river of chaotic energies behind his fist. It was as if they could destroy everything as they accelerated, getting ready to erupt.

Feng Mo stared at Lin Feng. No wonder that was called the Forbidden Body, being so strong should have been forbidden! How imbalanced!

“Absolute Ancient Destruction!” shouted Feng Mo coldly. He had studied time strength, he could use many ancient attacks. His entire body turned into a gigantic mountain, his blood boiling and turning into rivers, his eyes turning into stars.

He threw his fist out at Lin Feng. He really looked like a spiritual being at that moment.

BOOM!

Gigantic craters appeared around Feng Mo. Some people were struck by the fallout energies and exploded, all of them dying instantly.

The Demon King had turned into Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon again. He was the Demon King, an ancient and heroic demon.

“I am the king of this world!” said Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon coldly. He attacked, his energies shooting toward Lin Feng and Feng Mo.

“I am the god it is my destiny!” shouted the Diviner, releasing destiny strength towards Lin Feng and Feng Mo. The destiny strength was deadly, and almost impossible to block!

“Nothing is going to change, I am destined to become a god, a Ruler!” rebuked Lin Feng. He turned around and looked at the Diviner, releasing time strength and moving even faster. He threw out his fist, and both attacks collided.

But more strength was moving towards the Diviner. He was going crazy as he defended.

“Even if you’re a Demon King, I can defy the laws of the world!” Chu Chun Qiu’s face suddenly appeared. He was struggling to break free from the control of the Demon King!

“Die!” said Lin Feng, releasing nigh-indestructible godly imprints. Thunderous impacts followed, and the Demon King’s body was smashed away, shaking him. The Demon King groaned with pain.

The Diviner’s face appeared again. “Chu Chun Qiu, you want to die with me?” He hadn’t thought Chu Chun Qiu’s will would be so terrifying, still defying the laws of the world. Even if the Demon King had absorbed him, Chu Chun Qiu could still struggle!

“I don’t want to follow the laws of nature! If I have to, then I don’t mind dying!” Chu Chun Qiu’s face reappeared. Qi surged up around him.

Lin Feng turned his attention to Feng Mo and said, “Continue fighting!”

“Chu Chun Qiu, piss off!” shouted Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon, his face reappearing as he took control of the body again.

However, Lin Feng and Feng Mo ignored him and continued fighting.

“Lin Feng, you became incredibly strong. However, I won’t lose! It is the last step for me! Today, I will become a god!” Feng Mo said solemnly. His body swelled in size, and he turned into a giant. He shook his hands and godly marks appeared all around him, before shooting towards Lin Feng. Suddenly, Feng Mo’s demon strength was constricting Lin Feng!

“Die!” said Feng Mo. He was using his full strength now, releasing even more energies. Back in the days, he had seen gods battle. Now, a spot was free, he couldn’t miss this opportunity!

Lin Feng was still standing there in the sky, looking like a peerless demon god, dignified and majestic. He had a Forbidden Body, he was a god in his own world, who could be better than him to become a god?

He condensed his strength and shouted furiously. Soundwave

strength made the space tremble. He also released god and destructive strengths, which turned into Ruler's and Demon imprints containing all sorts of strengths. He destroyed Feng Mo's attack and both of them collided, shaking the space around them.

Lin Feng was thrown back, yet still looked aggressive and brutal.

Feng Mo watched Lin Feng coldly. He didn't believe that Lin Feng could defeat someone like him, who had practiced cultivation for so long.

"Transformation of the Three Lives into the Ten Thousand Things of Creation!" shouted Feng Mo coldly. All his clones appeared, astonishing everyone.

"That's Dharmadeva the supreme cultivator!"

"He's the supreme cultivator of Nature!"

"..."

Many people who were extremely old were shocked to their cores when they saw some figures. All those people were the Three Lives Emperor, they were all Feng Mo?! How many of his clones had become peerless Saints!!?

Lin Feng took a deep breath. He suddenly moved like the wind and turned into an illusion. Many people appeared around him, all of them Lin Feng's clones. All of them merged into his body.

The crowd was astonished again. Just how many clones had Lin Feng created in the last few hundreds of years?!

"Last attack! If I fail, it means I am not qualified to become a god," said Feng Mo solemnly.

Lin Feng nodded. "If I fail, I, the Forbidden Person, am not qualified to be called a god or a ruler," replied Lin Feng calmly. He was focused, his thoughts were pure. He was true to himself.

Feng Mo's clones all started forwards. The air began to scream as their strengths began to rise.

“Die!” shouted Feng Mo furiously. His clones all moved at the speed of light, using time strength to accelerate. It was an explosive and intense attack beyond what anyone there had ever seen.

In response, Lin Feng suddenly closed his eyes, condensing world strength in his body.

The attacks rained down on him ceaselessly. Lin Feng had the impression he was carrying the whole world on his shoulders, as if his body were slowly being crushed. piece by piece. However, he was standing there and condensing forbidden ruler’s strength.

“Die!” shouted Feng Mo, aiming at Lin Feng’s head. Lin Feng just looked on. It was as if everything had stopped around him.

“Nothing is going to change, I am destined to become the god, the Ruler!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. His forbidden ruler’s strength cut out in all directions. Space and time ripped and tore. The clones exploded one after another.

Lin Feng charged at Feng Mo and threw his fist at him. Thunder exploded, and Feng Mo was smashed away...

—

Lin Feng coughed a few times, blood coming up.

Feng Mo and his clones had turned into one again. He raised his head, knowing he had lost. He wouldn’t become a god?

“Never mind. From now, I will have a natural and unrestrained life,” said Feng Mo smiled as he gave up.

At that moment, magnificent lights suddenly descended from the sky and illuminated him. Feng Mo was astonished as he was suddenly surrounded by divine lights. He stretched out his hand, as if he could control the space.

“Shen Layer!” Feng Mo burst out into laughter, he looked up at the sky and smiled. “I see, I was too obsessive!...”

“Feng Mo has become a God!” The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng had defeated Feng Mo, but Feng Mo had become a god!

At that moment, the Demon King was roused, and released a new and terrifying strength.

“Who stole my control!” demanded an ancient voice. Chu Chun Qiu, the Diviner, and Saintly Emperor Xi’s faces disappeared.

“Finally, I resuscitated!” The Diviner and Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon’s faces appeared, smiling. They had made a mistake due to a strange combination of circumstances, yet in the end, the Demon King had come back to life!

His face changed several times before stopping. His face was Mara-Deva, the Diviner’s face, not Chu Chun Qiu, and not Saintly Emperor Xi the Demon. However, their traits were still visible.

“I’m a god!” said the Demon King, looking at the sky. Divine lights also surrounded his body. He looked at Lin Feng and said, “Lin Feng, I never thought that I would become a god even if I didn’t fuse with you. The prophecy was true: when the Forbidden Body appears, gods appear! Unfortunately, you didn’t become one!

“Actually, I would love to recruit you as a disciple, but you must die,” the Demon King said to Lin Feng calmly.

Lin Feng pulled a long face. Suddenly, he felt hopeless. Was this really the end? Why?!

“Alright, it’s over now,” said Mara-Deva, landing in front of Lin Feng. He threw his hand out at Lin Feng. Lin Feng used as much strength as he could to protect himself, but it didn’t work, his opponent’s hand still went through. He was so weak in front of a god...

“You...” Feng Mo was stupefied. The Demon King looked at him and said. “You just became a god, you want to fight against me?”

Feng Mo was speechless. He realized that gods were not almighty.

“Dad!”

“Lin Feng!”

On the ground, the old ox, Zhe Tian, Hou Qing Lin, they were all shouting, what was happening? How was this possible?

“Piss off!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He released a terrifying strength and closed his eyes. He was actually hopeless.

—

The world in his body trembled and started breaking apart. Was he so weak?

“Lin Feng!” Lin Feng inspected his world with his godly awareness. He saw people who were panic-stricken, devastated, afraid; he saw his parents, he saw those close ones who were just emperors. They could all sense that Lin Feng was going to die.

“Lin Feng!” Meng Qing was crying. She was desperate. She tried to smile and said. “If you die, I’ll die with you.”

“Me too!” said You You, raising her head.

Lin Feng saw many people he loved: Qiu Yue Xin, Duan Xin Ye, they were all there, and Mister Huo, Mister Chi, they all looked desperate.

“I understand,” said a voice in the sky suddenly. Meng Qing and the others were stunned. Lin Feng appeared in the sky. He smiled and said, “No wonder my world is so weak. Something is missing. A real world is a world with feelings.”

Emotions were also part of the sources of life, an integral part of life. People weren’t people if they didn’t have feelings. And there were no feelings in his world.

His world trembled and changed. He had thought it was perfect before, and now it truly was.

The shaking faded away slowly...

—

In the outside world, the Demon King looked at Lin Feng in shock. “You’re going to die and you’re smiling! Lin Feng, if you reincarnate, I hope you’ll become my disciple in your next life. I owe you for this one!”

However, Lin Feng smiled and said, “I don’t care about becoming a god. I’m already a ruler, it’s the same as a god, or a spiritual being. They’re all the same.”

Lin Feng threw his hand out at the Demon King’s arm and cut it off instantly. Blood gushed out.

The Demon King was astonished. How was this possible?

Feng Mo was stupefied too. He looked at Lin Feng meaningfully and said, “The Forbidden Body appeared, it is the dusk of gods! The legends were true.”

Lin Feng looked at the Demon King indifferently. “Go now, forever.”

Then, he punched the Demon King.

His fist contained all sorts of strengths. The Demon King’s body exploded... and vanished. The new god couldn’t withstand a single attack!

Everything seemed to stop at that moment.

“Lin Feng, congratulations!” After a long time, Feng Mo smiled and congratulated Lin Feng. He was happy for him.

“You should call him Master,” said a voice coming from the sky. More people appeared. Lin Feng recognized one of them.

“Mister Time!” Lin Feng smiled.

Feng Mo nodded and said. “I will remember that. I should call him Master.”

“Brother Feng Mo, just call me Brother Lin Feng,” Lin Feng

smiled. Strength was all that mattered in the cultivation world, not age. Feng Mo didn't need to call him master, they were like brothers now because they had a similar level.

“Hahaha, finally, two new friends! Lin Feng, I forgot to tell you, I also have a Forbidden Body!” said Mister Time.

Lin Feng was astounded. “Mister Time, are you the leader of the Time Shrine?”

“Kind of. But the Time Shrine is too powerful, it doesn't need to exist in this world. It's doing just fine in Ganges Time. Lin Feng, this is the God of Light, and this is the Cursing God. They were bored, so I called them up to tag along. Feng Mo can be the Demon-Sealer God, and what would you like to be called?” said Mister Time smiling.

“We can't have the same name, so I don't know. Ruler God?”

“What about Peerless?” Mister Time smiled. Everybody chuckled.

“It's just a name, it doesn't matter,” agreed Lin Feng. He didn't really care that much.

“That's true! Lin Feng, I'm off, don't scare people. Zhe Tian, Qiong Sheng, are you coming with me?”

“We're not coming, teacher,” said Zhe Tian, shaking his head and smiling.

“Alright, alright. Little Ye, come with me. Feng Mo became a god, when are you going to become one?” asked Mister Time, glancing at the Godly Weapon Master.

He looked so young, especially as he scratched his head and smiled fatuously. The inhabitants of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were astonished. But the Godly Weapon Master did look extremely young...

“Brother Feng Mo, release Kong Ming,” Lin Feng asked calmly.

“Very well,” Feng Mo agreed. He released Kong Ming, who looked back at him calmly.

“You’ve been practicing cultivation alone for an entire life. Lin Feng wanted me to release you, go back to the Buddha Shrine.”

“Very well,” Kong Ming replied. Then he nodded at Lin Feng to thank him, and left without hurry.

“Lin Feng, my daughter is still in the Sealed Imprint Mountain, when will you bring her out?” Feng Mo asked him.

Lin Feng smiled, looking embarrassed. “Brother Feng Mo, I have things to do. I’m off.”

...

...

Chapter 2500: The End

The Continent of the Nine Clouds returned to calm in but one night.

The Supreme Shrine was dismantled. The Empty Space Shrine didn't exist anymore, and would never return. The Demon Shrine was dismantled. The Supreme Animal World's Roc Clan didn't dare come back.

The Life Shrine returned to life. The Divine Wrath Shrine prospered.

Where the Fortune Shrine used to be, a new Fortune Shrine returned, and a passage to Lin Feng's world was created. They were both the Fortune Shrine. People from inside could go there as they wished, but people from outside needed authorization.

—

At the top of a mountain in the Fortune Shrine, there was a Destiny Gate. There were many people there, all of them incredible cultivators – peerless Saints! Those people were from the Earth Shrine, the Celestial Sound Shrine, the former Empty Space Shrine, the Fire Shrine, and the Ice and Snow Shrine. They all came to apologize, trembling with fear and trepidation.

Someone from the Fortune Shrine came out to them. “Everybody can go back. The Ruler said so. The Celestial Sound Shrine and the Earth Shrine were forced to submit and pledge allegiance to Icefire back then. He didn't take it to heart. Focus on expanding your Shrines.”

“Thank you very much!” said the two leaders. They looked hugely relieved. Yet even though that person said Lin Feng forgave them, they didn't feel safe, because Lin Feng hadn't said anything to them directly.

“The others, you can leave. The Ruler has no time to talk to you,”

said that person, waving them. The others left, but they didn't feel safe at all. Lin Feng might still intend to settle accounts at some point. One thing was sure, they wouldn't offend the Fortune Shrine again!

Another day, a group of people came to the Fortune Shrine gate and waited outside. The leader of the group was an old woman. She had brought along many people. She said politely to the guards. "Guards, we would like to see Zhe Tian and inform you of something."

"What's your name?" said the two guards indifferently. People came every day, they didn't let anyone go in easily.

"We're from the Snow Clan. I'm also from Zhe Tian and his mother's family," the old woman continued.

"Oh, back in the days, you dared despise the Ruler. Go now. Master Zhe Tian has no time to see you," said one of them, waving her off. Nobody knew what Lin Feng was doing these days. The Snow Clan's members were really funny trying this, and rather ridiculous.

"My friend, a beautiful woman with a king-type body was born in the Snow Clan. She's very talented, and we want to introduce her to Zhe Tian," the old woman smiled. She waved her skinny arm, and a woman appeared behind her.

"Her name is An Ran. Can you help us or not?" asked the old woman, begging the guards. The two guards glanced at one another. That woman looked good indeed, but would Master Zhe Tian like her?

"I'll help you introduce her to Master Zhe Tian. You go back, though," said one of the guards.

"Alright, alright," the old woman assented quickly. She said goodbye to An Ran quickly and left. They didn't feel good, but they

hoped Zhe Tian had forgiven them. There was at least a little bit of hope.

Lin Feng wasn't in his own world, he had appeared in the Holy City. He was looking at Tiantai, restored there and towering aloft. It continued to recruit disciples. They all smiled. Tiantai was prosperous once again, and nobody dared attack Tiantai thanks to him.

In front of Tiantai's gate, Yun Qing Yan and Huang Fu Long were talking to people who were queuing to inquire about Tiantai's recruitment process, all wanting to join Tiantai. "Don't worry, one by one, but only the most talented ones can join Tiantai. Hehe!"

"Master Huang Fu Long, do you know where Lin Feng the Ruler is?" asked someone at that moment.

"Of course. Do you know who I am? I am Lin Feng's fellow disciple. We traveled together. Back in the days, we were in Tian Chi. I even won against him," said Huang Fu Long, laughing loudly. Lin Feng was speechless.

"That guy is shameless," said Ruo Xie, standing next to Lin Feng.

"Lin Feng, when will you go to Champion University?" Ancestor Shi Tian asked politely.

"I won't go back to Champion University. Take this, accept it as a sign of gratitude. There are a few weapons, skills, and techniques inside," said Lin Feng, giving a ring to Ancestor Shi Tian.

Ancestor Shi Tian was surprised. The other ancestors looked at him in admiration. Ancestor Shi Tian would choose some first, of course!

"Teachers, are you really not going to my world?" Lin Feng asked Mu Chen and Emperor Yu.

"Nah. Back in the days, we dreamt of going to the Holy City to

create Tiantai there. Now we're here, it's good. When Tiantai becomes strong enough, I'll travel the great world, and I'll also come to your world," Mu Chen smiled. He never thought his disciple would ever become a god. He couldn't even imagine it now!

"Alright, I'll spend a few more days with you, then," said Lin Feng smiled. Tiantai was already at the top of the Holy City. Many disciples from the Continent of the Nine Clouds would come to study here!

—

Sword Mountain...

Emperor Wu Tian Jian was seated cross-legged, but suddenly opened his eyes, they looked sharp as swords.

"Who are you?" challenged Emperor Wu Tian Jian sharply.

"Master Wu Tian, I trust you have been doing well since we last met," said Lin Feng, descending from the sky.

Emperor Wu Tian Jian smiled and said, "Lin Feng, you came back!"

"You're doing good, I see," Lin Feng answered. "And now you're a Saint, I feel relieved!"

"Haha, you're far ahead, though. I can't even see your cultivation level anymore. Come and have a seat," Emperor Wu Tian Jian smiled. Lin Feng sat down next to Wu Tian.

"Back then, I was under pressure. Many extremely strong influential groups came here. I also had problems with the Everlasting Great Emperor's Palace, so I had no choice but to become stronger," Wu Tian smiled.

"Everlasting Great Emperor's Palace." Lin Feng was surprised, but then he smiled slyly and asked, "But you solved the issue?"

"Yes, I solved the issue," said Wu Tian smiled back grimly. "Tell

me, what is your current cultivation level?”

“Mine?” Lin Feng grinned. “Let’s go out and take a walk.”

A strong wind started blowing, and Wu Tian had the impression he had fainted. They suddenly appeared in the sky above a city. There was a competition going on below.

“Gold Fire Tower, Gold Fire City, a weapon fabrication competition.” Wu Tian felt dizzy. He looked at Lin Feng, he had the impression he was dreaming.

“You, you...” Wu Tian didn’t understand, what was the cultivation level that could move so far, so fast?

“Master, you’re a Saint. It will be difficult for you to progress now. Come to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds when you have time.”

“Where should I go to find you?” asked Wu Tian.

“Fortune City, just ask people where you can find Lin Feng,” Lin Feng grinned. Wu Tian nodded. Lin Feng was at the very least a Saint...

“Look, Saint Emperor Duan Mu, and Mu Lin Xue. They came back for the competition.”

Lin Feng saw familiar faces: Mu Lin Xue, Duan Mu, Qing Ying.

“Mu Lin Xue got married to a genius. Her husband is now a Celestial Emperor. He courted her for five hundred years, and she finally agreed to get married to him. I’ve heard Duan Mu say she was waiting for someone, but she waited for a very long time,” said Wu Tian.

Lin Feng just smiled.

At that moment, Duan Mu sensed someone watching him. He raised his head and saw Lin Feng’s face. His heart skipped a beat.

“They saw us, let’s go down.” Wu Tian and Lin Feng descended from the sky.

At the same time, Duan Mu rose up in the air and bowed before Lin Feng respectfully. “Duan Mu greets the Ruler.”

“Ruler?” Wu Tian was astonished. Just what was Lin Feng’s cultivation level?

“Master Duan Mu, don’t be so polite,” Lin Feng smiled.

“Ruler, don’t call me Master!” said Duan Mu. He had cold sweats. Lin Feng was now a god!

“Alright, alright, Brother Duan Mu,” said Lin Feng, feeling a little helpless.

At that moment, Mu Lin Xue flew up to face Lin Feng. She had tears in her eyes. She looked at Lin Feng, who had made a weapon together with her in the past. He was so cruel though, leaving her behind.

“You bastard, bastard!” Mu Lin Xue said to Lin Feng.

“Lin Xue, don’t be insolent!” said Duan Mu.

Lin Feng smiled wryly and said. “Brother Duan Mu, it’s alright.”

Then he smiled at Mu Lin Xue and told her, “You’re safe and sound, I am relieved.”

Mu Lin Xue just stared at him. Lin Feng knew he couldn’t stay for too long and said, “Brother Duan Mu, if you have time, come to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds to see me. Lin Xue, I wish you the best.”

Wu Tian and Lin Feng disappeared. Mu Lin Xue burst into tears. Her husband arrived next to her and sighed. He knew she had always loved Lin Feng, and would never forget him.

——

Lin Feng went to Yao Ye Island. He inspected the area with his godly awareness and saw Hu Yue and Shen Yu. Lin Feng noticed that Hu Yue and Shen Yu were together now.

When he saw that, he was extremely happy. He dropped a ring, which fell from the sky and landed in front of Shen Yu and Hu Yue, startling both of them. Hu Yue took it and called out, “Whose ring is this?”

After there was no answer, she put her godly awareness inside and shivered. She flew up and shouted furiously. “Lin Feng, you little brat! Show yourself!”

“Master Shen Yu, Sister Hu Yue, if you have time, come to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Mister Xiao is there, too!” Lin Feng’s voice called back to them, but he didn’t appear.

Hu Yue and Shen Yu gazed into the distance. Shen Yu finally smiled and said, “That little boy surprisingly didn’t come down.”

“I’ll settle accounts with him!” said Hu Yue.

——

By then, Lin Feng was already in Qing Di Mountain. Back then, the nine great celestial castles were there. These days, that territory belonged to Tiantai.

Now, Tiantai was prosperous. Lin Feng inspected the area with his godly awareness. Very quickly, he was startled to see some people he knew.

“Surprisingly, she came to Tiantai.” Lin Feng’s heart twitched.

Huo Shi Yun. She had left Dragon Mountain, trying to find him. She had found Tian Chi, then she had left Tian Chi because she had heard about Tiantai.

A thousand years had passed, and she still missed him. She had beautiful long hair. She looked out of the window and whispered, “I’ve heard that there was a Tiantai there, too. I wonder if he’s there?”

When she thought about that, she smiled, but she cried at the

same time. She had been waiting for a thousand years, been lonely for a thousand years. She had practiced cultivation really hard for a thousand years. She hadn't allowed herself to look old, she wanted to stay beautiful for him. But she didn't know where he was.

She heard someone sigh. She suddenly turned around and there he was. She was astonished, and she burst into tears.

"A thousand years, you're so silly." Lin Feng walked up to her and took her in his arms. Huo Shi Yun shivered. She had never felt so happy in her life. How painful, a thousand years of pain! At that moment, she finally felt happy, and she couldn't stop crying uncontrollably.

In the sky, Lin Feng was there too, also smiling. Then, he slowly flew away.

—

In an ancient tribe in the desert, Mu Yun was still there, still beautiful. She was an emperor, and people considered her as a holy woman. They all loved her, as she was their doctor. Many men had courted her. However, she had chosen to stay alone. Nothing had changed, and she had never left the tribe.

Mu Yun finished healing people and she sat down next to a tree. She looked nostalgic.

At that moment, someone brought a chair over to her and sat down next to Mu Yun. She turned her head and looked at him.

She didn't want to stay away from him, ever again.

Mu Yun had been in the tribe for a thousand years, she had never left even for one day. On that day, she finally left with a young man. Nobody blamed her. They just hoped she'd have a happy life.

—

Lin Feng arrived in the small world. Jiange ruled over Ba Huang.

However, the Celestial Place of the Alchemists had an incredibly strong celestial alchemist. Even Jiange didn't dare offend her, as she was extremely strong. Some people said she was a great emperor. Some people said she had become even stronger.

Lin Feng arrived in Tianjing, where Tiantai used to be. He stayed there for a long time and remembered.

Then he went to Tian Chi, and saw his teachers: the snow Zun cultivator, the fire Zun cultivator, Jian Feng Zi who was with Tian Chi Xue, they were all very happy.

Lin Feng also went to Dragon Mountain. He went to You You's family and took them with him.

Lin Feng went to the former site of Xue Yue, then to the Duan Ren Border and Duan Ren City.

Lin Feng went to the Yun Hai Sect, remembering Protector Kong and Protector Bei, and Nan Gong Ling.

And he went to see Yangzhou City.

In Jiu You, he went to a snowy land. There was a small hut there. Outside of the small hut, there was a beautiful woman, lying there calmly, looking up at the sky. She had given up her dream of becoming the Ice and Snow Goddess, and her life as a celestial being. She had come to that snowy land and had lived there alone for a thousand years.

On that day, a young man walked on the snow, footprints appearing behind him. He arrived in front of the hut and laid down on the snow next to her. They both looked calm.

The beautiful woman turned her head slowly and looked at the young man. Tears appeared in her eyes, fell onto the snow, and made it melt.

Some people came to Fortune City. One of them was holding a gourd, wanting to see Lin Feng.

Some people also came with him, a young man and woman who had a ten-year-old daughter.

“Who are you? What do you want to do here?” asked the guards.

“I am Lin Feng’s brother. Tell him to come out,” said the young man, taking a swig.

“You really want to die!” said the guard, suddenly releasing a powerful Qi. The guard was a low-level Saint!

The young man was annoyed and moved back. “I am really Lin Feng’s friend. Tell him that Yun Fei Yang is here!”

The girl looked at him and said, “You’re lying, my father is Lin Feng’s brother! Lin Feng is my uncle!”

“Eh...” the young man’s eyes twinkled. It had been difficult to find Lin Feng, they really wanted to see him!

“I’ve seen many people like you. Go now,” said the guard coldly.

“I need to inform my brother myself, then,” said Lin Wu Shang, smiling wryly. He took out a jade talisman, but the guard ignored him.

——

In the Xue Yue palace, a banquet was going on. Everybody was having a party, everybody was chatting and laughing.

There were many people there. Lin Feng, Lin Hai, Yue Meng He, Lin Wu Shang, Yin Yue, Meng He, Tang You You, Liu Fei, Duan Xin Ye, Qiu Yue Xin, Mu Chen, Emperor Yu, Hou Qing Lin, Ruo Xie, Tian Chi, Jun Mo Xi, Lang Ye, Yun Fei Yang, Huang Fu Long, Xiao Wu Tian, Xiao Wu Tian, many people were all together. They were all having fun!

Lin Feng talked about the past, about Protector Kong. He remembered Yan Yu Ping Sheng, he remembered the Fortune

Shrine Leader. He was wondering whether he would be able to go back in time someday...

To be continued...

Editor's Final Note: Thank you all for reading this translation of Peerless Martial God. We'll be back to you soon with the next arc of the story! I've only been the editor for about 600 chapters, but it's been quite a ride watching this character rise over time. It's been a lot of work turning what could be a very repetitious novel into something more fun to read, but I hope you've enjoyed the story and will come back for the next one!

RED, bowing and closing the door.

Table of Contents

[Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 2401: Incomprehensible Test](#)

[Chapter 2402: Understanding](#)

[Chapter 2403: New Era in the Continent of the Nine Clouds](#)

[Chapter 2404: Celestial Dao Destiny Technique](#)

[Chapter 2405: Treasure House](#)

[Chapter 2406: Holy City](#)

[Chapter 2407: Destruction](#)

[Chapter 2408: Lin Feng Is Back](#)

[Chapter 2409: Ling](#)

[Chapter 2410: Lang Yan and Shi Xuan](#)

[Chapter 2411: You Want To Die](#)

[Chapter 2412: Saint](#)

[Chapter 2413: Troubles lie Ahead](#)

[Chapter 2414: Bestial Saints' Help](#)

[Chapter 2415: Saint's Arrival](#)

[Chapter 2416: Killing](#)

[Chapter 2417: Saint Lin Feng](#)

[Chapter 2418: I Won't See Anyone!](#)

[Chapter 2419: Lecture](#)

[Chapter 2420: Flying to the Top!](#)

[Chapter 2421: Situation](#)

[Chapter 2422: Buddhist Mountain's Leader](#)

[Chapter 2423: True Self](#)

[Chapter 2424: Shrines' Changes](#)

[Chapter 2425: Original Strength Entity](#)

[Chapter 2426: People in White Clothes](#)

[Chapter 2427: Gift for a New Disciple](#)

[Chapter 2428: Familiar Sealing Strength](#)

[Chapter 2429: Saint Feng Mo](#)

[Chapter 2430: Lost Country](#)

[Chapter 2431: Waiting](#)

[Chapter 2432: Rolling Up His Sleeves and Leaving](#)

[Chapter 2433: Treasure Hall](#)
[Chapter 2434: Together](#)
[Chapter 2435: Reincarnation Priest](#)
[Chapter 2436: Support Needed in Da Yu City](#)
[Chapter 2437: Counterattack](#)
[Chapter 2438: Illusion Finger](#)
[Chapter 2439: Destroying a Stationary Point](#)
[Chapter 2440: Trap!](#)
[Chapter 2441: Encircling A Furious Warrior](#)
[Chapter 2442: Killing](#)
[Chapter 2443: Celestial Sealing Map](#)
[Chapter 2444: A Deal with the Peerless Bestial Saint](#)
[Chapter 2445: People's Plans and Actions](#)
[Chapter 2446: Difference Between Cultivators Who Are High-Level Saints](#)
[Chapter 2447: Peerlessly Terrifying Old Ox](#)
[Chapter 2448: Chaotic Battles](#)
[Chapter 2449: Discovered](#)
[Chapter 2450: Ox](#)
[Chapter 2451: Killing A High-Level Saint!](#)
[Chapter 2452: Change](#)
[Chapter 2453: God's Heir](#)
[Chapter 2454: Shrines' Agreement](#)
[Chapter 2455: Plan](#)
[Chapter 2456: Pressure](#)
[Chapter 2457: Godly Phoenix Clan](#)
[Chapter 2458: Fighting Against a Godly Beast](#)
[Chapter 2459: Two Forbidden Territories](#)
[Chapter 2460: Unforeseen](#)
[Chapter 2461: Time Difference](#)
[Chapter 2462: Cheated](#)
[Chapter 2463: Understanding Time](#)
[Chapter 2464: Back to the Shrine](#)
[Chapter 2465: Grand Meeting](#)
[Chapter 2466: Buddhist Mountain's Leader](#)
[Chapter 2467: Doomed?](#)
[Chapter 2468: Life At Stake](#)
[Chapter 2469: A Perfect Attack](#)
[Chapter 2470: One Destructive Attack](#)
[Chapter 2471: Mission](#)

[Chapter 2472: Sealed Imprint Mountain](#)
[Chapter 2473: Three Lives?](#)
[Chapter 2474: Determination and Counteroffensive](#)
[Chapter 2375: New Structures](#)
[Chapter 2476:](#)
[Chapter 2477:](#)
[Chapter 2478:](#)
[Chapter 2479:](#)
[Chapter 2480:](#)
[Chapter 2481:](#)
[Chapter 2482:](#)
[Chapter 2483:](#)
[Chapter 2484:](#)
[Chapter 2485:](#)
[Chapter 2486: Gloomy Atmosphere](#)
[Chapter 2487: Meeting](#)
[Chapter 2488: Ruler's Godly Imprint](#)
[Chapter 2489: Champions Battling](#)
[Chapter 2490: Decisive Battle](#)
[Chapter 2491: Acknowledge Allegiance](#)
[Chapter 2492: Listen to My Orders](#)
[Chapter 2493: The New Situation of the Continent of the Nine Clouds](#)
[Chapter 2494: Conspiracy](#)
[Chapter 2495: Demon King](#)
[Chapter 2496: Millions of Changes](#)
[Chapter 2497: Final Battles \(Part One\)](#)
[Chapter 2498: Final Battles \(Part Two\)](#)
[Chapter 2499: Final Battles – Proclamation of a God](#)
[Chapter 2500: The End](#)